



몽연 현대 판타지 소설

# 라이프 미션

LIFE MISSION

BOOK 01

*Mong Yeon*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Life Mission

(라이프 미션)

by

Mong Yeon

(몽연)

# Synopsis

---

A game that has become reality.

What started out as a virtual reality game, after being suspended out of the blue, has turned into a reality.

The perks are amazing and real – where points can be used to buy precious metals and cures for terminal illnesses.

But so are the consequences.

Death in this new reality game...is just as real.

Our MC was one of the best players of the virtual reality game.

But will he be able to become the best in this new version?

Who will die and who will survive?

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by LightNovelBarista @ [MY:TL](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Volume 1

# Chapter 1

---

Wiing.

A cold wind swept through a city in ruins. Even the simple wind was dreary and caused a hair-raising atmosphere. Desolation.

He could not detect a breath of life. Most likely it was just that he could not tell if there really was no life, or if they were hiding somewhere. Whatever it was, it was not visible to the naked eye.

This was a dangerous place.

No.

Dangerous did not cut it.

Why?

It was home to the Level 9 Mutant Shapiollin faction that ruled the whole of North America. In other words, it could be called the nest of the Evil Queen.

Crumble.

Hard stone crumbled like crackers as he crushed them in his hands.

He was young. He looked as though he would be in his early to mid twenties at the most. He was known for his dark red armor and the long sword he wore at his waist.

Kiki!

An eerie laugh rang out. Were they making themselves known now because a person appeared? Or did his human flesh stir their hunger so much they let it slip?

Then another hair-raising sound rang throughout the silent city and mutants that were difficult to look at appeared.

Each of them were beyond Level 5, and there were some Level 6s among them.

They were all strong.

However, they were still nothing more than the Queen's servants.

“Whew! It'd be upsetting if I didn't get at least this much of a welcoming party. I wandered for years looking for the Shapiollin. But you guys wouldn't know that, would you?”

Cha Jun Sung talked to the mutants, but there was no response.

Conversation was usually possible for these mutants starting from Level 7. There were some exceptions though.

It depended on what it evolved from first. What was certain was that those who could speak were definitely more powerful.

“I was bored to pieces. Really.”

He had finally arrived here at this final battle stage after fighting against all types of monsters and tremor-inducing suffering.

Kiha!

The mutants who had obviously not been listening to a single word approached Cha Jun Sung.

Though they did not possess language, they had a high level of cunning and signs of caution were clear. But they did not hesitate. They seemed to be trusting their numerical advantage.

“There’s no time to deal with the little ones. It’s hard to deal with even one of the Shapiollin. I’ll hurry and take you guys to your graves.”

Snap!

Cha Jun Sung snapped his fingers. At that moment, his equipment, Overload, spurred a massive shootout.



Kwang kwang kwang kwang!

Countless skyscrapers collapsed from Overload's attack.

Explosions ensued all around. It amplified the destructiveness by compressing the gunpowder. There was even the illusion that the space had become contorted from all the attacks.

Keuk!!

However, since their numbers were many and most were of high enough levels that there were a lot who escaped the indiscriminate firing.

This had been anticipated.

[Code input. Goal annihilation.] [Program execution. 1522 objects! Metal cyborg closing in! Distance between enemy under 0.2%, damage probability 99.8%! Body unite!]

As the mode was phoned in, Overload stopped the shooting. He tossed his firearms and pulled out his secondary arms.

The driving force of the booster surged Overload's gas. Cha Jun Sung sped up in the blink of an eye and collided with the mutants.

The secondary arms cut the mutant's bones and flesh. Easy.

Cha Jun Sung casually strolled past the battlefield. None of the mutants that tried to stop him were able to get past Overload and collapsed.

After walking for a while, he stopped at a place that had once been packed with expensive buildings, but was now the center of rubble lost in the aftermath of destruction.

At the peak, there was a naked woman looking down at Cha Jun Sung atop a giant creature.

She detected he was coming and had been waiting for him in a quiet place.

The Evil Queen.

Evil Queen Shapiollin.

She was one of the 6 disasters, infected by the A virus, called the human despair, and was in the final stage of evolution. She was Cha Jun Sung's objective.

“Evil Queen Shapiollin.”

“Well. You're more handsome than I thought you'd be. I was going to kill you, but I guess I'll have to keep you alive.”

Lap.

The Shapiollin's disgusting tongue licked every corner of his body. There was an imbalance in a snake-like tongue coming from a beautiful woman.

She had an appetite for human men, so if she found a man that was okay, she would not kill him and keep him to play with.

“Your intentions are different from mine.”

“What are your intentions?”

“To kill the wrinkly old mutant in front of me.”

In human years the Shapiollin was almost 200 years old. Even if she was beautiful, calling her an old woman was appropriate.

“Is that so? Then I guess I'll have to change mine. I won't kill you, but I'll put you in so much pain you'll beg for death.”

Kwajijijik.

The Shapiollin's body inflated like a balloon and a horrible aura was ejected. She was breaking out of her human image and going back to her main body.

Each of the six disasters had their own title. This title was created from one part character and another part physical appearance. She

was called the Evil Queen because of her depraved nature and the appearance of a queen that she took on.

“So this is the Queen.”

## Chapter 2

---

She looked like a bizarre but regal and refined woman wearing a billowy navy blue dress. The tentacles configuring her dress looked like sharp swords.

The Shapiollin's shape changed at will. Of the six disasters, she was considered to have the greatest cutting force and to be the best at avoiding attacks.

“Are you the one who killed three of my children?”

“I am.”

The Shapiollin opened its mouth in its true state. Her voice now clanged as if metal was scratching on metal. It was an unpleasant voice that could easily cut a man's confidence.

“I did it as practice before facing the real one. They were strong. But not strong enough.”

While Cha Jun Sung was on his journey to the Shapiollin, he had killed three mutants at Level 8 born from her womb. He had done so measure up his own level as a comparison. To see if he would be able to handle the Level 9 mutant, if you will.

“Do you know how much I prayed to the skull so that I may birth those children?”

“You talk too much. It’s fine to have a lot of children, but we don’t need more mutants. Starting next year, I’m going to fix North America.”

Woowoong!

Cha Jun Sung’s armor made the sound of a loud engine. The machinery flowing at units of nanometers were responding to their owner’s call.

This product of early science was what made it possible for the weak human body to fight against powerful mutants.

Though there were varying shooting capabilities, a human would die under the pressure of the shot unless he had gone through some body modifications.

After 10 body modifications, Cha Jun Sung had created a body that was hundreds of times beyond the average person’s. On top of that, since he had the best battle shooting ability, he was appropriately called a biological weapon with the ability to destroy a country.

-[Battle core 60% deployed!]

-[Over booster! 150 meters to the target. 0.7 seconds before impact.]

Bam!

A great force came down on the earth. Cracks like spiderwebs formed in the concrete. It had not been able to put up against the violent force.

The Shapiollin moved as it used the tentacles of her dress to escape hundreds of shards. She has amazing vision and was able to avoid the onslaught.

Tatatatat!

Cha Jun Sung also avoided the shower with ease. Tentacles swept as he passed. Buildings were cut to strips.

Kwakwakwakwa!

As spaces to hide were reduced, he stepped on the side of a skyscraper and sprinted.

He had deceived the laws of gravity, but he was not able to approach her. She was spinning in the same spot.

“Ha! Look at you! You won’t be able to kill me, much less injure me like that.”

“You don’t need to egg me on, I’m going to try it anyway.”

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung who had only been escaping the tentacles took on the offensive and cut one approaching him.

The quick trajectory of his sword ripped the Shapiollin's tentacle. It only looked like he had done it once, but he had made dozens of motions.

Papat!

He advanced as he avoided and blocked the others. Once he brandished his sword, there was nothing to stop him.

‘Since its stamina is its weak spot, I need to wound her so she allocates her strength to recovering. She'll slowly dry out and die.’

Compared to other disasters, the Shapiollin were weak in stamina.

She was most likely a level 9 mutant. Her attacks only confirmed his suspicions.

Zapzapzapzap!

It was intense. The two collided at extreme speeds. The only difference was that Cha Jun Sung focused on defense while the Shapiollin focused on the offense.



“Seems I’m almost there.”

“Where?”

Pat!

Cha Jun Sung got through the intense standoff and approached the Shapiollin.

He leapt into the air. Though he could not fly, he was able to use the battle shoot to move freely in the air.

“I shall rip you apart.”

-[Battle core 80% deployed.]

-[Cut it off.]

Cha Jun Sung brought down the swords he had been holding with both hands. The heavy wind pressure and a stem of light created the illusion that the world had split.

The Shapiollin opened her red eyes widely. It was dangerous. If she were to be hit with that, she would be split in half. It hurt her pride, but she had to avoid it.

Tuang!

The tentacle that had been compressed like a spring pushed her off in the direction she wanted.

Sukuk!

Kwung!

A thin gold thread was drawn in the air. The Shapiollin avoided it, but the Level 7 mutant protecting her received it full on.

Fitting its large size, an enormous amount of its blood and guts covered the surrounding buildings. Long ago, hundreds of people had to unite against the strength of a mutant of that caliber, but it was now possible for a strong modified human to overtake it alone.

“I admit that could have hurt me a bit, but all I have to do is avoid getting hit.”

“I’ve banked everything on catching you. I can swing this hundreds of times. It’s only a matter of time, Queen.”

If he lost, all of his suffering thus far would have been in vain. It would be okay if he lost his arms and legs if he could just end the Shapiollin’s life.

Shiik.

Cha Jun Sung bared his teeth and showed his resolution. His hands shook as he repeated a series of the attack he had just demonstrated.

It was a skill that could only be used after reaching more than 80% of the battle core.

“Why do you think I chose you of the six disasters?”

“What does that mean?”

“Your character fits mine well.”

-[Battle core 100% deployed.]

-[Duplication of the over booster gives you a retention time of 7 hours.]

As the battle core reached full operation, hot steam came out of the body.

At the same time, there was an energy that could upset the heavens and earth. Though it could only be maintained for 7 hours, it would be enough. It needed to be enough. He needed to finish it in here.

Pang!

Cha Jun Sung dug into the Shapiollin's chest. The power of the fully deployed over booster broke the sound barrier.

It was possible to maintain this tremendous speed during the allotted time without trouble.

“The nerve of an insignificant insect!”

“You were also one of those insignificant insects before you became infected with the disease.”

She felt threatened. The slackened Shapiollin dropped her poker face.

“Let's end this.”

It had been a long journey. He had put everything down for this battle. He had prayed and prayed. He prayed that if there is a god, it would hold his hand.

# Chapter 3

---

There were 10 one-hour videos. Each of them were extravagant and ostentatious enough to be comparable to blockbuster movies. They could not take their eyes off of them.

The lifers were watching a life mission between the Evil Queen and Overload's battle, and it was almost enough to strip the gamers of their souls. The last video was especially amazing.

Overload lost both of his eyes and his left arm, but he did not care and killed the fleeing Evil Queen.

-[Is this for real?]

-[Wow..... I spent the whole night watching the videos, and I didn't even go to school the next day.]

-[It's surprising that he even found the Evil Queen. But to think he was able to catch her? A Level 9 mutant?]

-[That's Overload alright! He is on a different level from the guys who fire their arms from a distance!]

-[I threw up raiding the Level 6 mutants. I guess I have to go kill myself.]

-[He diced her with just a combat weapon. How do you do

something like that?]

-[To the person above, watch Overload's videos from 10 years ago in order. You'll know if you watch. Your world will change.]

-[What do you mean his world will change? This person seems to be mistaken – your universe will change.]

Scroll.

His mouse rolled through the comments on the video. He went through hundreds of pages with 100 comments each.

“Good.”

Cha Jun Sung looked through his blog. It had been one week since he uploaded the video.

The fervor did not fade and, with time, there were even more visitors. It was evidence that word was of his raid with the Evil Queen was spreading.

It would have been unfortunate if he did not receive this kind of response. He had invested a lot in this raid. Thinking about the balance, she was not an opponent that could be won with pure skill.

When he caught a Level 8 mutant, he had raised two and a half

times the investment. He was not sure how much he would raise this time, but he was expecting it to be more than ever before.

“I guess the mission was a success. It’s needless to say there’s no greater glory to commemorate a retirement.”

He had played Life Mission for 10 years. He had played games since he was young, and his start was the same as everyone else’s – but his mastery was obvious soon after.

One day he wondered what it would be like if he filmed his games and posted the videos up. As a joke, he created his own blog and uploaded each and every one of them.

Mutant strategy, promotion, creation. There had not been very many visitors at first but after 3 years, he had become a power blogger.

That was the start of a new world. When he became a power blogger, several advertising partners came in. He did not make a profit off of Life Mission, but it was still a good amount of money.

Cha Jun Sung was Overload, one of the 36 rankers in Life Mission, enjoyed by millions of people. The synergy he demonstrated was impressive.

There were currently about 100 advertisements on his banner, with an income of around \$100,000 every month. At this rate, it was comparable to a small business.

Look.

There were usually 400,000 visitors in one day. Sometimes it even went up to 600,000 on a good day. But day before yesterday, the site had accumulated 1.2 million views. In many ways, it was a happy event.

“I’ll have to hurry and wrap it up so I can finally go travel. I can’t play games my whole life.”

Life Mission was fun. It was almost as addictive as drugs.

Even after playing for 10 years, the possibilities were endless. But he did not want to leave his body to a capsule to play in his room until he grew old and died.

“Let’s see. The parts I have to sell are the legend patch, 15 sets of switching equipment, metal cyborgs, and 5 mansions. Ah! This is one I’d like to keep.”

Even without connecting to the game, it is possible to see the selling situation through searches.

Most of the items he had registered on the auction had been sold. This was bound to happen because he had posted items of the highest quality for cheaper than the market price.



“Hades..... My everything.”

-[+18 ultimate Hades blade.]

5 years ago, he had taken \$500,000 worth of materials and \$300,000 for reinforcement to create this treasure.

Elites have a lower rating than legends so they do not have as many options, but the basic skill for bladers is by far agility.

It was not +18 for no reason. It is still an unbroken record.

There is a famous rumor amongst lifers that a member of Middle East royalty was inspired by his enhanced video and had given a lot of money.

“Is there someone who would be willing to buy this?”

Using it in an occupation other than blader was like a pig wearing a pearl necklace. There are only a few lifers who can handle blader perfectly.

“I’ll just keep it if it doesn’t sell. Honestly, it is a waste to give to someone else.”

Other items could be bought with money, but not Hades.

It seemed foolish when he was quitting, but didn't he need to keep one symbol to later prove that he used to have a great reputation as an Overloader?

“Bye.”

Tatak!

Cha Jun Sung posted a notice on his blog that he was no longer playing Life Mission.

There were comments on comments. The comments were a motley of people congratulating him on leaving, some saying that everything he had done until now is a waste to throw away, and some begging him for items.

Pushuk!

As the computer powered off, the overheated open cooled off.

“I guess I would have been working at part-time jobs until I reached this age if it hadn't been for Life Mission?”

He laid on his bed and looked at the ceiling. The game and his life were at a standstill.

He could not believe that he had put everything down. He felt like come tomorrow, or even immediately, he might access the

game to fight mutants.

Ping.

A text message must have come through, because his phone rang. Cha Jun Sung did not get up and reached his hand out to grab his phone. Friends? Advertiser? Could be spam.

-[The virtual version of Life Mission has been stopped from May 7, 2020. Thank you for your interest and we will meet you in the reality version.]

“That’s a new kind of spam.”

Cha Jun Sung gave his best wishes to the spamming company and deleted the message.

Seuk.

While he was playing around on his phone, he instinctively went on the Life Mission homepage. He rubbed his eyes as though he had seen something that did not make sense.

“What is this saying? Is it a joke? This wasn’t spam? Is my phone broken?”

The same text from the message was on the homepage. On top of that, the whole site must have been paralyzed because he could not

do anything beyond the text.

Wiing.

Cha Jun Sung powered up the computer again. If he wanted to check it, he needed to look on the computer and not his phone.

He plopped down.

His legs were weakening. It was the same on the computer. All top 10 real-time searches on the portal site were about Life Mission's suspended service.

“Why now?”

Cha Jun Sung and the lifers had known that this was going to happen at some point.

Life Mission was strange. First, this incredible system was open to people for free. Even the maintenance costs were funded by the company.

Its industrial utility value must have been overwhelming, but it had stayed the same for 10 years.

“Was that contract about this?”

To create a Life Mission account, he had needed to sign a contract.

It said that the company would not be responsible even if the service was suspended. He had thought that this meant that they just needed to deal with it since the company was taking on everything else.

Sigh.

He sighed automatically. The number of equipment he had not taken care of yet was not small.

The elation he had felt at succeeding in the raid fell flat. At this, it was hard to break even. It was even more frustrating that he couldn't complain.

“There are going to be people who commit suicide.....”

It was not a joke. It was common for people to put all of their salaries into this.

In the most extreme cases, there was a person who sold his house to buy an item. Cha Jun Sung experienced minimal damage because he had coincidentally left, but those people were ruined.

Jing!

-[Apologies for the inconvenience. The virtual version has been suspended. We ask that you use the reality version that will be running soon.]

He opened the capsule to check, but it was for nothing. The homepage and virtual path were blocked. Now, he had to fold everything even if he did not want to.

“But what’s the reality version?”

If it is an update, there was no reason to suspend the service. He could not figure out what the company was thinking.

Could they be playing some kind of joke?

Ping.

The bell rang again. Cha Jun Sung instinctively read the text message. It was from the company. The message was as ridiculous as the one before.

-[Would you like to activate the reality version of Life Mission?]

-[Yes/No]

# Chapter 4

---

“Does the text message send to the capsule and start the update?”

Cha Jun Sung was complaining that it is a hassle, but he had already pressed YES. He would stop playing, but he needed to take care of the leftover items.

-[Date and time: May 9, 2020 8pm. Present location: Seoul, Cheomdang-dong, home. Location: 255. 213. Confirming Cha Jun Sung. Running the summons.]

Flash.

“Uh.....?”

Then he felt something weird. His vision faded to white and he disappeared from his home. The only evidence that he had been there was the warm temperature.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung rubbed his eyes. His focus blurred as he was exposed to a bright light without any protection. His vision returned after blinking a few times.

-[Reserved lifer selection complete. Standard is Life Mission account holders.]

-[Cha Jun Sung.]

-[The only person who completed a Level-S mission in the 10 years of the virtual version of Life Mission by killing a Level 9 Evil Queen mutant, Shapiollin.]

It was the kind of voice that digs into the brain. Maybe because it was monotonous and did not have emotion. It sounded like the lower level cyborgs he had seen every day.

He could clearly remember downloading the reality version of Life Mission on his phone. The problem was that he was in a strange place when he opened his eyes.

“Who’s talking? Where am I?”

-[This is the briefing room where you will hear the explanation to perform the mission. It will be the place where you find out the values of the equipment you need to purchase.]

“Did I connect to Life Mission? They said it was suspended.”

Cha Jun Sung was deeper in thought of being connected to the game than he was suspicious.

-[If you are referring to the connection to the virtual version in the capsule, it has been suspended. Reserved lifer Mr. Cha Jun



Sung has connected to the reality version.]

Could it be that he had not been able to identify the situation fully? Cha Jun Sung heard the response to his question, but he could not understand what the unknown voice was saying.

Cha Jun Sung stood aloof for 10 minutes and smirked as he spoke,

“Log out.”

He had not gone to sleep but unless this was a dream, he had connected to the game. If not that, he could not explain this situation. All he had to go was get out.

-[This is a firm reality. You cannot leave until you complete the mission.]

“Are you joking? You’re saying this is reality? I’m going to go crazy. Have I played the game for too long? I heard that people went crazy from playing Life Mission, but I didn’t think it would happen to me.”

Cha Jun Sung called himself crazy as he hit his head. He felt something on his wrist and lowered his arm to take a look at it.

“It is a watch smartphone? I don’t wear watches, but what is this?”

-[Through this PDA, you and I are able to communicate whenever we need to even if we are not in the briefing room.]

-[Once you complete the tutorial mission, this will make it easy to access the store that will open. There are only restrictions on some systems.]

Cha Jun Sung looked around him half in desperation. He could not know where he was. But as time passed, his head cooled.

“It looks like a mechanic store from the outside, but its placement is at the level of an all store.”

There were items that beginners could use along with a body modification room and an item modification room. To put it simply, everything necessary was here.

“Hm. You said this is a briefing room? What do I have to do to get out?”

-[As long as you’ve entered as a reserved lifer, you must complete the mission.]

“Please explain in a way that I can understand.”

Cha Jun Sung was conversing with the voice. He could not believe it, but he had decided to accept the reality. There was

nothing he could do if he wanted to get out.

-[The overall frame is similar to the virtual version. But it is a firm reality.]

-[If you die here, you are actually dying in real life. Starting with the tutorial of the mission that will progress, I, Odin will be your supporter as well as your helper.]

Odin gave a step-by-step explanation in detail. He did not tell him everything. He was programmed from the beginning to provide just the basics.

“Ha ha!”

Cha Jun Sung laughed blankly as he listened to the explanation. The part of the explanation he liked least was that he would actually die if he died in the game. Honestly, he was still dubious.

It was operated by beings in space. If it was not a dream, it was a game. It had to be. He did not know why he could not wake up or leave, but he figured he would find out something soon enough if he just went along with it.

“Let’s start immediately.”

-[Searching for tutorials appropriate for reserved lifer Cha Jun Sung.]

Woong!

-[Tutorial mission: Closed areas] [Goal: Escape]

-[Scenario: Escaping from a building with A virus infectants]  
[Reward: 100 points]

Cha Jun Sung frowned. They aren't telling him to escape without any equipment, are they?

-[Look to your left and there are accoutrements. If you listen to what I say and use it, you will not lose your life.]

Cha Jun Sung found the bag and looked inside. All that was inside was bedding, food, medicine, spray, tape, and a dagger. He wished there was a gun.

-[Are you ready?]

“Sure.”

-[Approved. You will be sent to the tutorial mission closed area.  
Mission start.]

Hwak!

The field of view reversed. A different atmosphere from the briefing room. When he became used to the view change, a drab building welcomed him.

# Chapter 5

---

It was a dismal space. Everything was blocked with musty cement, and all he could see was a worn out desk, window, and a door leading outside.

No matter how much a game was like reality, there were some significant differences when compared. The representative difference was the experience. Experiencing it with the body.

“My body?”

-[It is your body, not the character you used in the virtual version.]

Discomfort from the heat and a fishy smell came through his nose.

There was also an ominous feeling that would not be explained. There were no elements of convenience to a gamer. He was being awakened to the reality more and more.

Kikik!

Seuseuk.

There was the sound of life outside the building. They must be mutants.

It must have been because he had 10 years of experience in Life Mission, but he stuck his back against the wall and moved towards the window. He wanted to examine the situation outside.

“There are more than a few buildings. Just looking out, there must be hundreds.”

-[They are all for the reserved lifer. This entire region is at difficulty level C, so the building you are starting at is just the tip of the iceberg.]

Cha Jun Sung listened to Odin’s explanation as he geared his hearing to the movement outside. He intended to move slowly since there was not an allotted time.

Click!

-[Level 1 mutant Kawod is approaching. Take out your odorless spray and use it on your body. You need to complete this in 1 minute.]

“Keuk!”

Cha Jun Sung looked through his bag and took the spray out.

He had flipped everything while trying to take it out quickly. It was an item he had used thousands of times in the virtual version.

His brain was not functioning when he thought of it as real.

Chiik.

A transparent powder floated in the air. There was no odor. Just like its name, it was odorless.

-[There is a large vent on the right. Go up and hide.]

The vent was installed 3m above the ground. It was a height that could not be reached without tall height or muscular strength.

Cha Jun Sung looked at the desk and shook his head. It was a place of complete silence. The desk was too heavy to lift. If he dragged it, there would be too much noise.

Pat!

He put force into both feet and kicked off from the ground. His 184cm height and body formed through exercise went through the air.

“Hup!”

It felt like he was doing a pull-up. He had thrown his bag to the floor. There was no need to hang on to it if it would not help him live, and it was too heavy for him to put up.



Once he was inside, it was not hard to crawl around because the ventilator was torn.

Kiik.

Right when Cha Jun Sung hid himself, the worn door opened and a Level 1 Kawod entered the room sniffing around just as Odin had anticipated.

‘It’s the same!’

A smashed and deformed face, the size of an 8 or 9 year old elementary school student. The only weapons that could be of danger were its sharp teeth and nails.

A coward. It is exactly the same as the Kawod he had seen in the virtual version.

Weak alone and weak as a crowd, they were at the bottom of the mutant food chain. An adult man could take it on with his bare hands even if he was wounded.

-[There are 21 Kawods in this building. I recommend that you avoid them since you are not armed to take them all on.]

The only weapon Cha Jun Sung has was a dagger. If it were a few, he could have done something, but he would become a piece of meat if 21 came at him.

Sniff sniff!

The Kawod bent over and went around the room. Cha Jun Sung's heart beat to the sound of its sniffing. It was a fear-inducing game of hide-and-seek.

The Kawod that had been sniffing around everywhere put his nose to Cha Jun Sung's bag. It seemed there was a remaining odor because he had not sprayed it.

Seuruk.

An unexpected situation, the Kawod laid down next to the bag. Does it like the smell?

Since the building was their home, it was their business where they lay. But why, of all places, next to his bag? Cha Jun Sung almost threw a fit.

“Hey there. Do I have to take that bag?”

Cha Jun Sung slightly opened his mouth. Odin understood what he was saying.

-[Necessities for Level E missions are sold for 100 points in the store.]

-[Points are as precious as your life in the real version, so you are expected to recover all of your items unless it is absolutely impossible.]

“What are you telling me to do with one dagger? I’m just an ordinary human.”

-[Is an Overload who killed the Evil Queen afraid of a Kawod?]

“Are you joking with me right now? That’s a game and this is reality.”

-[The virtual version is a training facility created to prepare you for the real version. Nothing is different. Act as you did there.]

The instructions to follow were obvious. Kill the Kawod and recover the accoutrements. Choice? None. He needed to do it. If he wanted to go home, he needed to kill it.

Cha Jun Sung thought about it while lying down in the vent and made up his mind.

“Fine. I’ll do it.”

Surprisingly, his vision became clearer as he abandoned the negative thoughts. He thought of the best way to kill the Kawod.

“I have to take a look at the ventilator first.”

Cha Jun Sung crawled through the vent. He would recover the bag later. He needed to see how long the vent was and how he would be able to get down.

Tak.

Though it was uncomfortable, he took the dagger by his teeth. It would become a problem if he put it in a pocket and it scratched something, or he lost it. The vent was fairly long.

It did not connect to every room. There were places scattered throughout where he could escape.

Odin gave him the information on each room he discovered as well as the room the Kawod was sleeping in. He was doing his job as a supporter properly.

Cha Jun Sung went around for hours. It took a long time because movement was difficult, but he had been able to familiarize himself with everything he could see through the ventilator.

There was a kitchen about 9 to 10m from the stairs that went downstairs. There were doors in the front and back, so he could use them during an emergency escape.

There was the danger of being surrounded from either side, but if the Kawod were the same as the game, they were too cowardly to scatter and would move in a group if they sensed danger.

Tak.

Cha Jun Sung ended his short journey and returned to his original location. The Kawod was passed out sleeping. He did not attack right away, but thought of a plan.

‘If I show up, I’m sure he’ll get scared and run away, making them all charge in.’

If that happened, he would have the time it took for the Kawod to run away and come back with the group.

He could move the bag to the vent in that time. It was difficult to move everything at once, so he could do it separately one by one. The key was the amount of time he would get.

Should he just kill it without anyone knowing? It would be okay if the smell of blood did not spread, but he would be in trouble if something went wrong.

Shak.

Cha Jun Sung brandished the dagger. He had not imagined killing a living being in real life. Even if that being was a mutant.

‘Kawods like dark places because of its sensitivity to sunlight.’

On the other side of his invisibility was accelerated hearing and sense of smell. Since he used the spray, all he had to be careful of was making sound.

He lowered himself as close to the ground as much as possible. Even if he fell to the ground carefully, he could not help but make a sound. He needed to avert the attention before his location was detected.

Cha Jun Sung hung by the strength of his arms. The Kawod had not yet caught on but as soon as it did, it would either run to him or run away.

Taekang!

Kya?

There was a fricative as the sheath fell. The Kawod awoke startled and looked to where the sound had come from. At that moment, Cha Jun Sung ran.

Pat!

As soon as he hit the floor, he slashed the Kawod's throat mercilessly.

As its thin childlike throat was slit, blood gushed out as though from a fountain. The Kawod tried to yell, but the sound did not come out of his throat filled with blood.

Its vitality was weak. It would die even if he did not attack more.

Puk!

Cha Jun Sung kicked the Kawod's face with all of his strength. He created an even more unseemly sight as the slit neck opened up further.

“Damn, damn!”

# Chapter 6

---

The sensation of slitting the throat remained on his hands. He took his accoutrements apart and threw each of the items into the vents.

The emptied bag became lighter. Cha Jun Sung wore the pack and went back up into the vent. It was narrow, but he could move his body.

Chiik.

He sprayed the odorless spray on the vent and bag. He wanted to block the entry, but the cover had been so crushed that this was impossible.

-[You have acquired 10 points.]

-[Information on the Level 1 mutant Kawod has been added to the PDA.]

The Kawod whose neck had been sliced was dead with its tongue hanging out. Cha Jun Sung ignored Odin's notice and began moving. He could check it once his safety was secured.

Kikik.

After Cha Jun Sung disappeared, a few more came in. They must



have come in because of the smell of blood. They looked around the dead Kawod and opened their mouths.

Kwajik.

Bones came out as the skin was ripped off. One had its face in the stomach and swallowed the intestines. Cha Jun Sung would have thrown up if he had witnessed the scene.

It could not be helped. Kawods are at the bottom of the food chain.

Hunting?

It was difficult to even get placed in a class. It would be genocide even if dozens of Level 2 mutants came charging. Since they could not starve, cannibalism became the obvious route.

Kyakyakyakya!

Soon, other Kawods also gathered. Just as the helper had said, there were 21.

Since 1 was dead, there were 20 left. Cha Jun Sung heard their laughter from a distance and solidified his commitment to escape.

Ack!

At the ear-splitting screech, Cha Jun Sung dug deeper into a corner of the kitchen.

This was already the third time he was hearing that sound. It seems 4 lifers including himself were running tutorials. But 3 people had already died.

“You said you’re Odin? Is a tutorial easy or hard?”

-[Should I calculate the variables?]

“Other than that.”

-[With an average mind and body, the difficulty is normal.]

“If you calculate it?”

-[The difficulty of the game is set, but we do not know what can happen at any time. If a change occurs, we cannot guarantee even a tutorial.]

It seems they had packed lifers into a space that was appropriate to hold the tutorials.

And it also sounded like anything can come out at any time to raise the difficulty since it was not a game. In some ways, it was an irresponsible response.

“I did exercise a bit, but is it worse than average? Why am I so tired?”

-[It is because you excessively protect your body. Your body exceeds the average by a lot, but it is a situation where your mind does not sustain it.]

“Forget it.”

Cha Jun Sung gave up on talking. Protecting? Anyone would try to protect himself. It is his own fault if he gets involved without thinking and dies.

The screaming people are the ones who could not differentiate between reality and virtual reality.

“It’s safe here.”

The kitchen doors were made of sturdy iron. The Kawod could not break it down with their strength.

-[You cannot do anything in your isolated state.]

“I know. It’s a bother to talk about every little thing, so just give me a route out.”

He needed a place to be comfortable. An exposed area was dangerous. His plan was to move according to a strategy after fully

understanding the tutorial.

“It’s easy as long as the Kawods don’t cause a problem.”

-[There are 4 Kawods in this area. It is the same downstairs.]

Just getting down the stairs meant escape. He did not even expect a machine gun. Even if he just had a pistol, he could use it with the dagger.

“I’ll have to kill them.”

He did not want to be prey. He would become the predator. It would be good to avoid them, but if there are 100 of them, he would meet all 100 in this type of environment. It would be better to reduce their numbers and expand the space he could move in. He was not even that averse to it after killing one.

“The nearest one?”

-[One in each of the two rooms between the hallway and front. Two in the room you started in.]

Cognate predators slept in one place. The hallway was open and a small room was past the hall. The room he started in was optimal.

“You said that as long as I don’t die, you can put me back to my normal state even if my arms or legs get cut off?”

-[It is possible.]

“Confirmed.”

Cha Jun Sung took out the tape from his bag and wound it around his arms and legs tightly. He needed to do this at the least to avoid mortal wounds since he does not have armor.

Hu!

He breathed in deeply before acting out his plan. It would be a lie if he said that he was not nervous. This was his way of trying to stay alive. That was all.

Puk.

The dagger dug deep into the Kawod's heart. A humanoid mutant's body structure is similar to that of a person. The location of the heart was the same. Instantly killed!

“It's tiring.....”

## ***14 of them?***

Ah! With the first one he killed, it was 15. He spent the whole day on just the 3rd floor. As long as there were no Kawods, going down

would be easy.

He could leave after killing as many as he could. When he asked Odin if he could jump out of the window instead of going down the stairs, he had said that I could try it if I wanted to die.

If he were unlucky, he would be overcome with mutants or he could even meet stronger mutants. He aptly gave up on a path other than the stairs at that.

“It’s the last medicine.”

The medicine in his pack had healing effects. Homeostasis began as soon as he put it on, and a scab formed. He did not have any mortal wounds, but he had suffered quite a few minor injuries.

Especially his arms and legs. This was the result of pushing forward with a trust in this point treatment and tape. Even this much had been possible because he had the medicine.

Kak!

“It’s been awhile since we heard that. It’s the fourth.”

It was the first scream he had heard in a day. It seemed the other lifers were doing fairly well. If not, wouldn’t he have heard a series of screams like he did yesterday?

Eujuk eujuk.

“How could they be rock heads in the game and in real life?”

-[It was definite that Kawods were stupid. Level 1 meant that they have been infected by the A virus, but have only aggregated inferior cells because they have failed to adapt.]

Level 2 was still at a low level.

It needed to reach Level 3 to show some success in adaptation.

“That’s a frank assessment. At any rate, I just have 6 to catch?”

-[Yes, that’s right.]

After fighting with two, he felt that he could take on a third. However, he decided to be careful because his stamina had weakened and he had a lot of minor injuries.

“Let’s start again.....”

“Assholes! Where is this! Send me home. You assholes!”

As Cha Jun Sung was about to go up the vent, he stopped at the ranting he heard nearby. By his tone, he must have been summoned while drunk.

“Reality version? Damn! I blew everything! My life savings were wasted!”

Cha Jun Sung was not a writer, but he drew out the man’s behavior in his head.

He had heard the news that the game was suspended and drank as he downloaded the application for the reality version. He had been sent here after being summoned to the briefing room.

Since he was drunk out of his mind, everything the helper said was nonsense and the quiet closed area was perfect for his tantrum.

“That man’s on a roof. The Kawods can’t get up there because the door is locked?”

-[It is open. There is another reason why the Kawod are not going up there.]

“Huh?”

-[You must remain calm. You need to take deep breaths and maintain your composure.]

He was bewildered. The man was the one in danger, but why was he being told to stay calm?



Kung!

A fear-inducing roar. Cha Jun Sung's legs weakened at the roar and he plopped down. The man did not have a very different reaction.

“This, this sound..... Could the boss of this closed area be that guy?”

# Chapter 7

---

-[He is approaching at the man's noise. I recommend you flee.]

“His specialty is the same as it is in virtual reality?”

-[It is the same.]

“Then it's okay. I can hold my breath.”

-[We will generate a special mission with your permission.]

-[Level D mission: Predation of Cyclops] [Goal: Attainment]

-[Scenario: The owner of the closed area appeared at a reserved lifer's drunken tirade. Avoid the Cyclops' detection and check the predation] [Reward: 5000 points]

Cyclops.

It was a name given to him because he looked like the one-eyed giant in Greek mythology. The difference was in the dozens of eyes on its face.

He boasted a steel-like strength with muscles covering his 9-10 meter long body. His strength was as intense as his size, so he could even mollify a truck.

Among mutants with uncanny abilities, he was called an original strength. He was among the top in Level 5.

Boom!

As the ground and building shook, powder flew. Cha Jun Sung held his breath and looked toward the next building. He could see a large figure.

The Cyclops detects life it sees through its breathing. It is dangerous if one moves wildly, but it thinks that someone is inanimate if he holds his breath and is careful in his movement.

The Cyclops' method is to differentiate between what is harmful and what is not.

“Cyclops? Hah! You’re so mad I killed you that you appear in my dream?”

The man spoke gibberish. Any skilled lifer needed to deal with the Cyclops as a required course. It was popular because there were a lot of by-products.

Burup!

Gulp!

One of the Cyclops' eye focused on Cha Jun Sung's exact location. It looked away because he did not move and held his breath.

“Come at me asshole! I'll give you a blast with a +13 Titan!”

Though the man was speaking nonsense because he is drunk, Cha Jun Sung could tell that he was a skilled lifer in the game.

The weapon he mentioned was a laser with a tremendous power. It had the weight and volume that only someone in an elite level could lift.

One could handle it by going through body modification and using the battle shoot, but it cost hundreds of thousands of dollars. It was not an exaggeration that he invested his life savings for it.

Boom.

The Cyclops just rolled its eyes around and did not act. Was it confused because the man did not show fear at it?

Kung!

Its thick arm lifted into the air. He stood still with patience. It observed the man out of curiosity, but that was momentary.

Kwang!

One blow. A part of the building crushed under the Cyclops' blow.

“Huh?”

The man flailed his arms. He stumbled as the roof collapsed under the force. It would have been the same even if he had not been drunk on alcohol.

Pat.

The Cyclops snatched at the falling man. It was not careful and its power to rip him apart showed, destroying the bones in his body.

The man's broken bones must have dug into his organs, because blood sputtered from his mouth. His eyes rolled back in pain and began to convulse.

“Cr, crazy.....”

Cha Jun Sung stepped away from the window for a moment to take a breath and watched the following scene. His body shook as though his own bones were being broken.

Eujuk.

Kyak!

The man's arm was being chewed. The next were his legs, head, and body.

It was obvious that it intended on giving him pain as it ate him. He killed his personality and was careful with his meals like a gourmet enjoying delicacies.

Smack smack.

It had taken seconds for the man to disappear. The Cyclops smacked its lips as though it wanted more. He was so large that the man had not made a difference.

"I have to hurry up and get out of here."

The Cyclops was right in front of him. He thought he was going to have a heart attack if he stayed any longer.

-[It has not ended. It will be considered a failed mission if you run away.]

"What? But he killed the man?"

-[That reserved lifer's death is not the predation I talked about.]

"That that....."

Cha Jun Sung was silent. Suddenly, he recalled the eye he had seen through the window.

He had determined its specialty to avoid its sight, but it knew his exact location. Other reserved lifers were doing tutorials here.

Pang!

The Cyclops struck at the building next to the one he had just knocked down.

Ack!

Reserved lifers emerged. They had been discovered. The Cyclops repeated the same action a few times. At some point, its hand was full.

Brack.

It squeezed its grip. Blood came pouring down like rain. The Cyclops put it to his mouth and quenched its thirst. It chewed and ate the bloodless bodies.

‘Hell.’

3 people yesterday.

6 people today.

9 people have died in total.

10 people including Cha Jun Sung. With a rough estimate, the chance of survival was 10%. Even if there are hundreds of thousands of lifers, the number would be reduced quickly at this rate.

“I can go now, right?”

-[The last obstacle remains. It is a request. Stay until the end.]

Cha Jun Sung was going to ask what nonsense that was, but covered his mouth with his hand. The Cyclops' dozens of eyes were facing him.

Drip!

His cold sweat dripped to the floor. Why is it staying and not leaving? Had he been discovered? If so, he had the same fate as the lifers who died first.

‘Oof! Go away! I said go away!’

After waiting for 1 minute, he became dizzy and his chest felt stifled.



The Cyclops did not waver. He knew why Odin was telling him not to move on. This was a test. He lived if he got past it, and would die if he could not.

‘Staying longer is too dangerous.....’

He got past 2 minutes. At this rate, he would suffocate to death before the Cyclops killed him.

-[A little longer.]

Odin may not know because he was a machine, but there was nothing as painful as not breathing. 2 minutes for someone with weak lungs would have been enough to make them faint at the least.

“Puha!”

-[Congratulations. You have cleared the Level D mission, Cyclops’ Predation.]

-[You have earned 5000 points.]

-[You have met the conditions to open the store. You can use up to Level D and it will open once you clear the tutorial mission.]

He had been lucky.

As Cha Jun Sung was letting out his breath, the Cyclops turned its attention away. He would have become a piece of meat to squeeze blood out of if he had let his breath out 1 second earlier.

-[Oh no.]

“Now what?”

# Chapter 8

---

-[A Kawod picked up your scent. You sweat so much in fear of the Cyclops that you got rid of the odorless spray's effect.]

“You should have told me earlier!”

Cha Jun Sung yelled as he ran to the vent. He had gone up and down it so much that he got up to it with much more ease.

-[It is too late.]

Kiik!

2 Kawods entered the room. Cha Jun Sung stopped his useless movement and grabbed his dagger. He could not show his back to the enemy.

-[The rest of the Kawods are observing the Cyclops from the 1st floor. This is your chance.]

Tatat!

Cha Jun Sung acted like he was attacking and closed the door to the room. The Kawods who were suddenly trapped scrambled around before giving up and lunging at him.

Puk.

His long leg hit the stomach of a Kawod running at him.

It was light and flew to hit the wall. Cha Jun Sung threatened the others with the dagger and went to the one against the wall and stepped on him.

Kwak!

“Keuk!”

There was a sharp pain in his shoulder. The one in good condition had taken advantage. He could hear his skin ripping under its sharp teeth.

“Assholes!”

He was angry. Because of the pain? Because he had been bitten by something half his size? More than that, he was angry with the entire situation he was stuck in.

Puk.

He stabbed the Kawod’s head with the dagger he had clenched in his fist.

It relaxed its grip as its brain had been penetrated, and it fell to the ground. He took out the dagger and stabbed the one that he

was stepping on.

“4 Kawods.”

A vehemence came from Cha Jun Sung’s eyes. There were only a few left.

This hell was over if he could just kill those left over. He did not go back into the vent. He intended to just kill them as he saw them.

\*\*\*

Kaek!

The last Kawod fell over. He could finally head back.

-[Congratulations. You have cleared the closed area tutorial mission.]

-[You have earned 100 points.]

-[The store is open. Will you go to the briefing room?]

“Yes.”

When he nodded his head, his vision faded to white just like when he had come to the closed area, and the briefing room

appeared. The principle seemed to be similar to dimensional movement.

-[Will you treat your injuries? You will be cured to your normal state with 50 points.]

“Yeah.”

His clothes had been ripped to rags and he was caked in blood all over his body.

If he went back like this, he would have to live in the hospital.

-[Your treatment will start once you lay in the capsule to the left.]

Cha Jun Sung followed Odin’s instructions. It felt cool. His injuries were healed with 50 points. His clothes remained the same.

-[Congratulations.]

“Congratulations?”

He was bewildered. If Odin was a person, he would have beat him up.

-[If you take advantage of the 5260 points you have, excluding the

50 you used, you will be able to raise your chance of survival to the highest for the next mission.]

“Ha ha! It’s so funny my stomach hurts. If I come back here, I’m not a person.”

Why would he come back here? He had a leisurely life where he lived in a good house with a good car and good food. This was the last time he was coming here.

-[You will return.]

“You’re sure?”

-[I am sure.]

“And your evidence for that?”

-[The virtual title Overload can become reality.]

Cha Jun Sung blinked at the unexpected response. Odin continued speaking.

-[I will tell you one thing. Body modification is possible in the Level D store.]

-[You can purchase the battle shoot in Level C and the ultimate

Hades blade that you prized will be in Level A.]

His head was spinning. Cha Jun Sung is on the smart side. He was interpreting what that meant. He spoke again to check,

“You’re saying that what I did in Life Mission is possible in real life?”

-[Yes.]

“Goodness.”

Science.

Nothing was impossible through science in Life Mission.

As long as he had the money, he could make anything. A fearsome weapon was an accessory and cyborgs that resembled people rolled around like rocks.

If that were to happen on the Earth? It would disrupt law and order.

-[An age where one cannot live without power will soon come to the Earth. You may not want to come at your own will, but something else will push you to return.]



“It’s because of you guys. You can just leave it alone whether it’s reality or virtual.”

-[Are you sure that is so?]

He could not say anymore. Going further than this was going beyond what Odin was permitted. He knew Odin would not reveal any more.

But there was one thing he was clear on. There would be a time when everyone including Cha Jun Sung would understand this whole situation that did not make sense at the moment.

“Ah! I don’t know! Just send me back for now. I need to clear my mind.”

-[There is a basic manual in your pack. Read it when you have time.]

Pat.

The light flashed. It made his eyes sting, but he could go through this countless times if he could just go home.

-[Lifer Cha Jun Sung.]

-[Tutorial at Level -E, succeeded Level D special mission.]

Odin briefed Cha Jun Sung's information on his successful mission after he disappeared, and Cha Jun Sung returned back to his real world.

“Hahahaha.....”

Cha Jun Sung laid on his bed and laughed. Because he was happy? Because he was baffled. The pack he had received in the briefing room was sitting right in front of him.

He was 99.9% sure that it was reality. But 0.1% of him still believed it was virtual.

“I almost died.”

He had experienced the fear of death that he thought he would not have felt for the next 50 years.

He was not sure if it was a joke from the gods or if it was a test from the aliens, but he was sure that it had happened and that it was going to continue to happen.

“Let's see what happens.”

They had said that the 1st round lifer selection was creating an account in Life Mission.

That meant that Cha Jun Sung was not going through this alone.

If he waited the situation out, forums on this issue would be created.

The human psychology likes to explore. He did not have to bother with it because those with impatient natures would get involved instead.

# Chapter 9

---

Often, people who have strange dreams. Call them dog dreams. A few cannot shake it off. There is nothing they can do. It is not reality. But it bothers them.

If multiple people have the same dream and acknowledge that they are not dreaming and that it is reality, they would work to figure out what the phenomenon is.

-[I killed 5 Kawods with a hammer.]

-[3 Gremlins.]

-[Everyone. My friend did not come back. I think he died there.]

-[Mine was to steal something weird.]

-[Same with me. I had to steal 2 eggs from Beck and it felt like I was shooting Mission Impossible.]

Tatak.

Cha Jun Sung looked through the conversation in the chat room on his blog.

As he had expected, there were a lot of people who had gone through what he did. It had not yet been reported on the news, but

that was not far off either.

-[I caught 21 Kawods by using cognate predators as bait. My goal was to escape, but there was nothing I could do because they were blocking the exit.]

-[Amazing!]

-[Are you a UFC world champion or something? How can someone catch 21?]

-[Don't lie.]

“I can't believe it either ok.”

Cha Jun Sung had been learning fencing since he was young, and added boxing in order to maintain his health while playing Life Mission. Had that helped?

Reading the text in the chat room, it seemed the average time getting in and out was 3 hours. It could not be but fast because they had only faced 5 to 6 Kawods.

“Some people had an easy time and while some spent an entire day on it. That's pretty shitty.”

The day after his return, he read the manual. If he spent a day inside the mission, a day passed in real life as well. It was an exact

1:1 ratio.

It was important that he could not bring items from reality into the briefing room or mission location. The helper decided what is allowed and what is not.

-[Will you go again?]

Cha Jun Sung thought for a second before texting back.

-[I'm going to go. Why?]

-[Hey fake Overload, you haven't gone into the store yet, right? Try going in.]

Cha Jun Sung looked at the PDA on his wrist. It was a piece of equipment with a lot of functions. There were so many that he could not even list them all.

‘Alright let's open it.’

He did not open the store as people expected him to. He was curious, but had completely forgotten about it with his thoughts on whether or not he would go.

Ping.

He operated the PDA. A clear hologram and a list window flashed.

-[Store: Level D]

-[Equipment] [Food] [Medicine] [Materials] [Reinforcements]  
[Synthesis] [Transformation] [Miscellaneous] [Body Modification]  
[Daily Necessities]

The list became more detailed when he clicked on a menu item. For example, if he went into Equipment, there was Weapon and Armor.

-[Did you open it?]

-[Yes.]

-[There are a lot of things on the menu, but try going into just one. Go into Materials.]

Cha Jun Sung went into Materials. A motley of materials made him dizzy. There was a wide variety of materials. Most of them were strange.

-[Try typing precious metals or gems in the search window. You'll be surprised.]

He tried searching precious metals. Platinum, gold, silver, etc. –

they were sold by weight.

-[Gold 100g: 100 points]

-[Description: Material that goes into item synthesis, reinforcement, and transformation.]

“Was the price of gold \$5,000 for 100g? The reward for the tutorial was 100 points. No, it would be 150 points for 150g since he had killed a bunch of mutants. He had earned \$7,500 in one go. So in the end, it was money?”

\$7,500.

It is too little to change a person's life, but it was more than a month's wages at a good job. It was a world where people sell their souls for money.

High risk, high return. Even if it was a hell where people had to risk their lives, there were plenty of people willing to do it as long as the return was appropriate.

-[If you become strong with the equipment, money comes in. It's an opportunity!]

-[I agree!]

-[If you go through body modification and use the battle shoot,



you're a walking one-man military! An emergence of Life Mission!  
Let's fly our employment worries to Andromeda!]

-[I bought 50g of gold with 50 points. \$2,500 is in my hand!]

As a specific subject became punctuated, the chat room's fervor rose. They acted in a frenzy as though they had earned everything with their inflated dreams.

"That's when you're still alive. As if everything will go their way."

Each mission was a matter of life and death. Cha Jun Sung lived freely, but the others had greed, ambition, and avarice.

-[If you look in the Medicine menu, they sold cancer inhibitors, growth promoters, and blood too!]

This was a bit surprising. This could provoke medical innovation.

Cha Jun Sung left the chat room to properly look through the store. Even if others did not explain it to him, it was easy to look through it as long as he had the PDA.

"Unbelievable. Do points push out money to control all things?"

Money is what has moved everything until now. Now, that would

become points. There was nothing they could not do as long as they had points.

“Do I need to go too.....? If I don’t go, that would mean these people would rise above me. I don’t like that.”

He was not undermining others, but the people who were below him would stand atop his Overload reputation if this continued.

He would rather die than lose. Odin’s warning that he would not be able to live if he did not have power also became stuck in his mind. He was muddled for various reasons.

“I can select between Level D and E missions. By points, Level E has Level 1-2, D has Level 3-4 mutants. From Level 3, their strength and growth expand so I won’t be able to even leave a scratch unless I’m properly armed.”

He could tell by common sense. His pack and basic items were 100 points.

Even with 5260 points, he would not be able to acquire the equipment necessary to complete a Level D mission. He would need much more points.

-[Body Modification]

Cha Jun Sung clicked on the list that would make it possible for him to take on a melee of mutants. In the Level D store, there was

surgery up to number 2.

-[Gains from 1st stage body modification: 100,000 points]

-[Gains from 2nd stage body modification: 200,000 points]

Gain and probability were ensured until the 4th stage in the virtual version.

But the gain and probability fell from the 5th stage, and the character could die if the body modification failed. The character is deleted from the 9th stage.

In a situation where people are evolved into superhumans, it had to be difficult.

Swipe.

Cha Jun Sung looked through the store for a few hours. There were a lot of curious things.

He did not get sick of it. He chose the optimal equipment he could get with his 5260 points. Level D was taken out, his points did not allow for it.

-[Low class impact tights: 1500 points]

-[Plastic armor: 1500 points]

-[Steel katana: 1000 points]

Impact tights fit the body closely and absorbed external shock.

The 1cm thick special textile acted like a sponge. The disadvantage was that it was vulnerable to attacks of focused strength or sharp materials because of its low level.

The plastic armor is light, but high in elasticity and hard. If worn with the impact tights, they covered each other's disadvantages.

The steel katana is a sword. It's power and cutting force were strong, so it was advantageous to have before a fray. It was a symbol of Cha Jun Sung's Overload and a weapon he was very familiar with.

"I'm gaining confidence."

This was the setting he chose costing a total 4000 points. If he were wearing this, he could fight 21 Kawods with his eyes closed.

"I guess I'll need weapons? A pistol is a little weak, but a submachine gun is good."

-[Mp7 red fire: 500 points]

It was a good one. It had a fast burst speed and its penetration was significant.

It had the basic 8 magazines with 271 bullets... 30 rounds per magazine. He intended to leave 1 round loaded.

“I’ll use the remaining 409 points on expendables. Food and medicine are important.”

If he didn’t eat, he would be exhausted even without moving. If he treated his wounds right away, he could prevent major injuries. It was a grave mistake to think that weapons are the only essential items.

“Perfect.”

Cha Jun Sung praised himself as he looked at the item list. He had not wasted even 1 point. He had calculated the weight he could lift and efficiency as well.

“I can handle Level 1 with this equipment for sure, but I can also give Level 2 a try.”

Level 1 could not get through the plastic armor and impact tights. It could if the damage accumulated, but he would not stay still.

Level 2 was dangerous to go up against right now, but the odds for a one-on-one fight were greater than 90% if he used the red fire and dagger before a struggle.

How did he know?

He was going over the route he had gone as a beginner again. He did not even think about Level 3 because there was a high possibility of dying from a single blow.

“Uh..... What the hell am I thinking? What am I doing right now?”

# Chapter 10

---

Cha Jun Sung came back to his senses. He had forgotten while he was busy getting his equipment that these were the actions of someone who was thinking of going back.

“Am I going?”

Thump.

His heart trembled. Because he was scared? It was that, but also..... out of expectation? Excitement? It was like when he had entered Life Mission for the first time 10 years ago.

“It has only been a day since I said I wouldn’t go back, but I guess I won’t last another 3 days.”

He could not deny his instinct. His determination was weakening.

He wanted to go inside the mission and get ahead of everyone else. He was actually ahead of everyone now. But only so long as he didn’t stop here.

“It’s too late to go to sleep now.”

The equipment that appeared as holograms looked at him and seduced him. They were more tempting than a naked woman. It

became a night of worry.

\*\*\*

“I don’t know!”

The equipment Cha Jun Sung had bought in the middle of the night were organized next to him.

The impact tights and plastic armor were okay, but he would be arrested if the red fire and steel katana were found.

“E-class mission list.”

-[Searching E-class missions. There are 35122 missions available.]

There was a variety of missions. They all had different goals and rewards.

The lowest were 300-400 points, but there were some that exceeded 1500. The highest in class E was 3000, but he had no intention on overdoing it from the beginning.

“Since there isn’t a limit on how many I can go in and out of, let’s start from the lowest and make our way up in order.”

He decided on starting at below 400 points. The 3 goals are



annihilation, attainment, and escape. It was simple. Either kill everyone, do something, or run away.

“This looks good.”

-[E-class mission: Dwarves in the darkness] [Goal: Annihilation]

-[Scenario: Kill dwarves that have gotten past the barricades and occupied a supermarket] [Reward: 350 points]

Since it was class E, the scenario was as simple as the tutorial's. There was not a lot of thought put into it. It would become more complicated as he went higher in class.

“There are a few more things I need to buy if I want to complete a proper mission.”

He was short on points, so he could just complete a few E-class missions. He did not want to overdo it.

It was all equipment that he had used when he started playing Life Mission.

“Even if I want to collect more information on the missions, any more than this is too much.”

It had only been 2 days since the reality version started. Everyone was in a state where they had taken the first step. No one was in a

position to teach another. Everyone was in the same situation.

“I’ll advance a step while everyone else is hesitating.”

Though it was a simple step now, soon it would become a distance that could not be shortened.

\*\*\*

Wiing.

“Is it that place?”

3-floor supermarket, Cha Jun Sung examined the sign. The writing was unfamiliar.

It looked like the language of developing countries. From the outside, it looked like a supermarket from one of Korea’s major companies. Judging by its size, it must have been large inside as well.

“If they’re Level 1 mutant dwarves that like the darkness, they must be gremlins.”

They are aggressive. Their darts are toxic.

As they are fairly strong, compared to other weak mutants, they

enjoy hunting more than they act as cognate predators. Level 2 mutants also avoid gremlins who attack in hordes.

“I’ll start with the red fire, and use the sword once I get used to battle.”

This is reality. He did not confuse it with the virtual version and made a clear differentiation.

In the virtual version, he may have been the Overload that killed a Level 9 mutant, but he was just an average person who exercised a bit in reality. He would die if he overreacted just by trusting his equipment.

“Should I wait until the morning?”

It was evening. He did not have equipment for his vision, so everything was dark. Even if he got used to the dark, there was only so much he could do with human vision.

In the morning when it became lighter, he could check the market and its surrounding area.

Nod.

Cha Jun Sung decided to wait it out. There was nothing to lose in waiting.

Kiki!

He heard unpleasant laughter. It was like something was laughing at him.

“Ugh! They’ll be walking around because it’s nighttime, but I haven’t used the odorless spray.”

Gremlins were nocturnal. They would avoid the sun by staying inside the supermarket during the day, but they would come out at night to move around or hunt. He had forgotten.

Bang!

Chiik!

Cha Jun Sung searched through his pack and sprayed himself. He could not fool the ones who had already seen him, but it would be better to spray it even now. There! Let’s greet some customers.

“1 gremlin?”

Seuk.

He could see a gremlin’s head by the building. Cha Jun Sung took his red fire with a silencer. It was around 30m away.

Pew!

Puk!

The gremlin was shot in the head whether by luck or skill and fell over. There was a bursting sound in the air, but it was not enough to cause trouble.

-[You have earned 12 points.]

“A gun really is good.”

It was easy. It died on a shot. He would be able to kill dozens.

Seuseuk.

Cha Jun Sung approached the gremlin. It was carrying a coarse weapon. It was not dangerous. It was a type that can be blocked with his plastic armor.

As he searched the body, he found a dart and tried jabbing his impact tights with it. He had controlled its length so that it would not touch his skin even if it got through the fabric.

“It doesn’t go through.”

It did not go in no matter how much he pushed on it. It might go

in if he pushed against it on a wall, but there was almost no risk of an external attack because that was not likely to happen.

“I’ll still wait.”

Conceit becomes a trap, and the best situation is to go along with his plan. Nothing lost from being cautious.

\*\*\*

Pewpewpewpew!

Changchangchangchang!

Every time he shot the red fire, a window of the supermarket engulfed in darkness shattered. He broke each one he saw mercilessly.

Hwak!

Kyak!

Rays of sunlight flooded in. Shrieks followed. The gremlins scrambled to find a dark place to hid from the light.

That was his chance. It seemed they were more averse to the sunlight than they were to gate crashers. The red fire chased their

unprotected movement like a swarm of bees.

“There are a ton of them.”

He stopped counting after he killed over 100 of them.

He had swept the 1st through 3rd floors, and all that was left was the basement. It did not have windows because it was the basement, but it was okay. He had given 50 points to get a photothermal magazine.

Snap.

Cha Jun Sung switched the magazine. It was his last magazine. He had used them sparingly, but he had used 241 bullets. If he failed in the basement sweep, he would have to go into battle.

Sukuk.

He took the dagger out and slit the throats of gremlins that were still alive. There could be ones that were hiding, but he was going to check that after finishing up with the basement.

Tubuktubuk.

Cha Jun Sung got on the escalator with the dagger in his left hand and the red fire in his right. He did not turn it on. He was just following its path.

He left one escalator and stopped walking. Dozens of pairs of eyes blinked from afar at him.

Cha Jun Sung sneered as he took out a round object from his chest.

The photothermal magazine kept a tremendous light for 5 minutes. If this went off, it would be as though there was daylight in the basement.

Seuk.

Cha Jun Sung wore the glasses attached to his plastic armor. Its tinted feature would protect his eyes from the photothermal magazine.

Bibibibi!

The timer was for 5 seconds. If he did not throw it within that time, it would go off in front of him.

Pwak!

Kyah!

He closed his eyes because of the light that came in past the tinted glasses. The eyes and skin of the gremlins who had been



exposed to the photothermal magazine burned.

It was so painful that they died one after the other.

“If the missions under 400 points are all like this, I can do a bunch.”

It was advantageous the more points he had. But rash behavior always proved to be ineffective.

The equipment he could carry was limited if he did not have 50,000 points to acquire the space compression bag. A lot of items interfered with his movement unnecessarily.

“I won’t get comfortable, but from what I’ve felt..... I’m embarrassed that I was so nervous.”

He knew that it was on behalf of the equipment. Other than the exhaustion, he did not have any injuries. All that he had were a few scratches on the plastic armor.

Pewpew!

Cha Jun Sung used the red fire on a struggling gremlin and picked up the photothermal magazine. He could use it more usefully.

The photothermal magazine he had purchased was not to be

thrown on the ground, but imprinted.

Swish.

Snap.

Cha Jun Sung threw the photothermal to the ceiling. A strong magnet came out of it and it attached itself to a structure. The interior of the basement became bright.

As the range of light widened, the darkness went away. The gremlins naturally fled into areas where the light was weak.

Kiik!

It was pathetic how they were struggling with each other to stay in the shadows.

“So you’re the leader.”

Deep in the darkness hid a gremlin about a half larger than the rest. The leader gremlin looked at Cha Jun Sung with malice.

“Goodnight.”

Pewpew!

# Chapter 11

---

He put his gun down and hit each of the gremlins one by one. He had made a series of mistakes as a beginner the first time in the virtual game.

Unlike then, he was being resourceful with his bullets because he would die if he did not have bullets when he needed them. For real. He had to maintain his reason at every moment.

Kyak!

Such as this very one.

Too bad for the gremlins, Cha Jun Sung was a predator they could not approach easily.

\*\*\*

It had been 1 month since Cha Jun Sung delved into Life Mission in reality.

From the dwarf mission, his level had gone up little by little. Even with the same E-class missions, the difficulty depended on the reward points.

When the reward was under 1000 points, the only differences were in the number of Level 1 mutants and in the area they were

in. It all went smoothly up to here.

Even if they came charging at him in numbers, they were just deadwood in front of the red fire.

The problem began when it reached over 1000 points. This was when the Level 2 mutants appeared. Though they came one by one, they were not to be underestimated.

The Level 2 mutants sent their underlings first and the bullet consumption increased. They had recognized a dangerous object. The intent was obvious, but they could not prevent it.

It was impossible to kill dozens of them at one time. He had purchased a generous amount of bullets because of this, but he used all of them before he could fight with Level 2.

At times, they hid amongst their underlings and waited it out. They did not come at him openly. If they had charged at him without any thought, he would have been faced with a difficult situation.

What was fortunate was that most of the Level 2 battles were one-on-one. When the minions were left over, there were not more than 10 of them.

He stood his ground with his steel katana and sturdy armor.

In contrast to Level 1, each hit was powerful and his plastic armor

was damaged, but his impact tights absorbed most of the shock.

Cha Jun Sung had proved that his equipment worked on Level 2 mutants.

As he accumulated experience, his intuition was revived. Grenades were a definite, but he began to use equipment like the Claymore with ease.

Though it was exhausting, he could not describe the pleasure he felt when he overcame all of the hardships and completed each mission. He felt alive every time.

He had gathered 80,000 points like this. The total was close to 110,000, but he had used it on repairing his equipment or on buying expendables.

When he had completed a 1300 point mission thinking that he would annihilate mutants, he had gained 5000 points. 30% of that would evaporate into thin air.

At the worst, there were times when 70% disappeared. These were when his armor and tights had become so ragged he had to replace them.

Since he reached over 1500 points, his equipment had come back after missions as rags. It was already the second time and it seemed this would become the third.

\*\*\*

Tutututu!

Cha Jun Sung brandished the red fire. He just wanted one to hit.

He tried his best to hit his target, but it was not easy because it moved in a zigzag. Nothing worked, so he was just hoping for luck.

Kwang!

Huk!

Cha Jun Sung went flying a few meters at the hit he took to his chest. His already ragged shoulder patch shattered into debris.

Tutu!

Even while he was falling, he did not let go of the red fire. Roads were tough. He needed to stay alert like this so that the opponent would not undermine him.

Crunk!

Cha Jun Sung used his sword as a cane to stand up. His legs trembled. He took a deep breath and created a greater distance between himself and his approaching enemy.

Level 2 Mad Dog.

It was a crazy dog.

It was as large as a bear. Its tight muscles grotesquely shook between its veins as if it had been skinned.

It was as strong as it is large. But more than anything, it was fast.

“One is hard enough, but 2!”

At first, he thought that there had just been one. But while they fought, another one suddenly came in. He was unprotected, but he had turned his body and avoided being harmed.

Its biting strength was incredible, so his protective plastic patch was smashed.

After that, it was a ruckus. He fought as though he were rabid because he was in a situation where he was fighting one against two. He set off a grenade, brandished his gun, and swung his sword.

He somehow killed 1, but could it be because its companion saw its death? The remaining Mad Dog's actions became careful. He did not approach it without thought.

Pewpew

The Mad Dog followed the movement of his red fire.

The bullets' speed surpassed the speed of sound. With the Level 2 mutants' sight, they may not be able to see the bullets coming, but they could anticipate their direction.

Papat!

The Mad Dog hid behind a wall he had knocked over while jumping to avoid the bullets. The bullets could not penetrate the wall, and bounced off.

Snap!

“Ow!”

He swore automatically. He was out of bullets. He had brought 1000, but he had used half on 2 Mad Dogs. And he had not even been able to kill both.

Seurung!

Cha Jun Sung took his sword. It was a dangerous situation, but he did not feel threatened.



It was his 30th Level E mission. Though he had not suffered any fatal wounds, he had suffered comparable injuries. Even if his arms and legs were cut off, all he had to do was complete the mission.

Keurung!

The Mad Dog crept out when Cha Jun Sung held his sword. It knew. It was fully aware of what was and was not a threat to it.

“Come on! I’ll slice you up!”

Tatat!

Cha Jun Sung provoked the Mad Dog and made the first attack. Instead of swinging the sword, he jabbed with it as in fencing because it was easier to recover.

Shwish shwish!

Kwatuk!

The Mad Dog had gone off to the side to find a time when he could attack, and took the sword with his teeth. He shook it vigorously to get rid of Cha Jun Sung.

“I knew you would bite it.”

He had anticipated that it would try to incapacitate his sword, the only weapon he had after the red fire. He had not let it bite his sword on purpose, but he had waited for this moment.

Swish.

The last grenade fell near the Mad Dog's rear.

“Blow up.”

Kwang!

The Mad Dog could not avoid it and received the grenade's blast in his rear.

Right before it exploded, Cha Jun Sung threw the sword and jumped. It was a short window and the distance was too short to avoid the blast, so he was hit.

Kwajijijik!

Fragments of the grenade penetrated his plastic armor and ripped his impact tights. His protective helmet and glasses shattered as well.

“Ugh..... I won't be able to save even a fourth of this.”

Cha Jun Sung laid down and complained. If he combined this mission's reward with the mutants he had caught, he had gained around 6000 points.

If he thought about the equipment he would dispose of and the expendables, he had not earned as much as he had suffered.

“I can't lower my expectations..... I'll have to start party play soon.”

500 points was enough for manual labor. But under Level 2 was not fun because it was just an average massacre.

Even while he was playing the tutorial, he had directed himself to the safe play. Once he made up his mind however, he could not hold back.

He needed to hurry up and gather points to pay for body modification procedures and Level D equipment. If he did it as a party, he may gain less points than acting alone but there was also less waste.

In addition, his exhaustion would be distributed to different members of the party.

“I'll go back, receive treatment, and prepare for a 3000 point mission.”

There was really no reason for him to go back to the briefing

room unless it was to use the healing capsule. Body modification. Once synthesis becomes possible, he would visit it often.

He returned home once the mission was complete. This was when he needed to start being on guard the most. Mutants were mutants, but the party needed to be composed of people he could fully trust.

Life Mission was a place where one can gain anything but it was also a space free from others and free from conventional rules. He would need to watch his back at every moment.

# Chapter 12

---

While Cha Jun Sung was busy with missions, a site called Lifer World went up. Its base was in English, but it could be translated into any language.

Lifers with a lot of imagination guessed that it was created in America. As time went by, the number of Lifers increased exponentially.

There is no such thing as a secret in this world – especially with the internet where rumors spread fast.

It did not matter whether or not it was created in America. Because no matter what, the reality version of Life Mission was growing its number of “players”.

Cha Jun Sung knew that there would be a siege between countries to identify Lifers within a few months.

The number of Lifers would become the measure of a nation’s power. It was inevitable.

“Let’s be comfortable until then.”

Cha Jun Sung sat at his computer and looked through the Lifers’ notice board. It was a place to exchange information and trade points.

But that did not mean that hundreds of points were traded. Even 1 point could decide someone's life – points were extremely valuable. So most exchanges were done in 1 or 2 point increments, and the maximum was 5.

The market rate of 1 point was the equivalent of \$70 to \$80.

So it was better to just save them and buy weapons; it did not make sense to trade them.

“Class E.”

Hundreds of comments appeared and were erased from the information exchange board each day. 80% of it consisted of class E missions.

-[Writer: Anonymous]

-[Title: Level of Class E Missions]

-[Content: I am leaving this review after failing twice. The tutorial reward is around 150 points? I hope people who believe it is 100 have some sense and buy it. Anyway, if you complete this mission, you can buy a machine gun with 500 points. But for a beginner to complete it alone? In reality, it's impossible to complete with a piece of iron unless you are in the Special Forces or an equivalent field. I met a team that I worked well with in the beginning, and succeeded at 5 and failed 2. Even with 3 people, we had 5 successes and 2 fails. Don't throw your lives away. Create

parties.]

Mission fails meant death or giving up. In Class E, you could give up with 100 points. But as the difficulty increases, so do the amount of points you have to sacrifice to give up.

There were a lot of similar comments. The subject matter was also pretty much the same. They all recommended refraining from solo missions and changing to party missions.

“It is too hard to keep trying to move forward alone – especially when your life is on the line.”

Cha Jun Sung was also in agreement. If he did not have the points he had earned in special missions, he would have been suffering right now.

If he had gone into Level 1 against 100 mutants holding just one dagger, it wouldn't have been a fight. It would have been suicide, plain and simple.

He could expect a safer hunt if he gave up a take-all and joined a group. While slowly going up the ladder, equipment and points would follow. Though slower, it was better than dying.

‘Heh..... There’s a Lifer who was able to break through 1000 points with a party.’

Click.

-[Writer: Anonymous]

-[Title: 1000 Point Boundary]

-[Content: I will say it briefly. Once you get past the boundary, Level 2 mutants appear. We each purchased the equipment that we wanted with the points we gathered over the past month and attacked in the Class-E mission, 'Red Building'. The process went smoothly. But in the middle of the mission, the boss Krollion began to lead the dwarves to bother us. Fortunately, we were able to gather our strength and beat them, but it is definitely different than Level 1. Be careful.]

Krollion was a humanoid mutant standing at 2 meters. It was a problem if caught in its grips because it had 5 to 6 times the muscular strength of a human. But its shortcoming was that it was ignorant.

Woong!

Cha Jun Sung turned on the PDA and looked through the Class E list. They were listed in order of points, and a few at 3000 points stuck out.

It was not just any Class E mission, but one that allowed the player to advance to Class D.

Mission success meant a whole slew of points. But, as with every



pro, there are cons. There was a high chance of Level 2s swarming out. For this type of mission, a party was absolutely necessary.

There weren't many of these missions available – just 5. It seemed they were controlling the numbers. Cha Jun Sung chose the one that he liked best among them.

‘Field of Meat’

Just by looking at the name, he could tell it would reek of blood. The title and scenario seemed much harder than the mission he had completed the day before yesterday, ‘Our Mad Dog’.

‘It doesn't mean I'll attempt a Level D if I get through this, but it can be kind of like a reference level for me.’

One thing he knew though was he needed to avoid meeting a Level 3 before his 2nd body modification was complete. There was an order to everything! He needed to maintain this order if he wanted to live long.

‘What should I do?’

It would take a long time for the other Lifers to get to his level. But he needed to join a party.

Though he looked through the list, there was no party willing to try a 3000 point mission. It seemed they took these out of the running because they were intimidated just by the number of

points.

‘Isn’t there anyone willing to try? Well...at the same time, it’s not good to just go into any party. I have to be selective too. Shit.’

He needed to test out the people he would work with before going into Field of Meat.

1 plus 1 is 2.

Math is math. But when you add humans into the equation, you could potentially get a different result.

More people could mean easier battles...but the wrong person could also make things a whole lot worse.

“Odin, search for parties with a level of 1000 points in Korea.”

[6 parties have resulted. There are 2 in the Seoul region.]

One needed to write his qualifications in the application for parties. That was the same for the person who was adding people to a party and the person searching for a party.

“They’re all pretty much the same.”

The first party had 5 people, the second had 7. All they had was armor that barely protected their vitals and one weapon each.

-[Would you like to apply for the Kill-All team?]

“Yeah.”

-[You have applied for the team. Speaking with the team's helper.]

Odin was familiar with Cha Jun Sung's habits now. He did not need to talk too much. Odin would do well if left to it on his own. During this time, he would check his equipment.

‘What a waste. The body modification! Why does it have to be so damn expensive!’

He had gathered a total of 80,000 points. But after the first modification, he had exactly 20,000 left. He wanted to try and stick it out without doing the mods, but his equipment had been ruined in Our Mad Dog.

Since he could not go around with a bare body with mutants abound, he changed his low class impact tights to high, and got plastic armor made of strong plastic.

There was a vision sensor attached to the helmet. Night looked like day and he could detect enemies by body temperature.

In terms of equipment, he was ready to go at any time.

-[The conversation has ended.]

“What did he say?”

-[The leader of the Kill-All team cannot believe your qualifications.]

On party applications, qualifications can be played down but not up.

“So?”

-[He would like to meet you in person.]

“Picky. We’ll meet in the mission anyway. Arrange an appointment.”

-[Mission confirmed.]

Odin reserved a place to meet.

Cha Jun Sung hoped it would be a party that looked at the person more than the points.

# Chapter 13

---

Bang.

As Devereaux's head was punctured, his flesh scattered. Cha Jun Sung, who was fighting hard, was disgusted and quickly jumped away.

Chiik.

The blood splattered to the ground. Level 2 Devereaux's blood had toxicity. There were many of them in sizes as large as bulls – and the blood splatter was proportionate to their size.

‘That asshole.....’

Cha Jun Sung's gaze became sinister. This was intentional. He had said that he would fight alone, but he had jumped in without any warning.

“Hell yea! That toad gave me 180 points just now!”

“Wow! That's a lot.”

“Nice! You should have like 3000 points now! Are you going to buy some equipment then?”

Three men were making a fuss out of nothing in the damp

swampy area. Cha Jun Sung repressed the urge to throw a grenade at the idiots.

“Are you okay?”

“Yes.”

A young man approached him. It was the party leader in charge of the idiots. Cha Jun Sung shrugged indifferently. These assholes were useless.

Any party that he thought would be good already had full membership. Since people who matched well had come together a long time ago, Cha Jun Sung had had nowhere to fit in as a stranger.

He had finally found a party that had exceeded 1000 points over the past 15 days...and this was it.

“What do you think about coming on permanently? Hunting has become much more comfortable since Mr. Odin joined!”

Lifers did not ask names before they revealed them themselves. It was awkward to choose aliases, so they went with the names of their helpers.

“Sorry. I’ll be going now since the mission has been completed. Good luck.”

Cha Jun Sung swallowed the swears at the tip of his tongue and returned home.

He heard the word 'wait' as he unilaterally ended the conversation and went back home, but he ignored it. He felt he would develop a cancer if he stayed any longer.

“Trash. The whole lot of them.”

Eudeuk.

He had fought the Devereaux alone on behalf of the injured people. He left the other 3 people as escorts to care for the injured person, but that person went and taken his Devereaux kill in the end.

He did not want to use the word steal because it was a party, but the guy had done nothing until he stepped in at the end to take the bounty. And then what? They want me to join their team after that shit?

With the Kill-All team, it was already the 15th one he had gone through. One party per day.

His first impressions of all the parties weren't the best, but he figured he should try a mission with them first before making a decision. Nope. He was right. They were all trash.

They only looked at points and made it a priority over their friends and teammates. He knew he would have a lot of regrets if he fostered relationships with these kinds of people.

‘How is there not one normal person? In reality or in the virtual version.’

The game had an interesting power of making a perfectly normal person into a psychopath. Cha Jun Sung met all types of people while playing the virtual version.

There were people who were probably completely normal in reality, but turned into someone who should be placed in a mental hospital right away once they entered the game.

Life Mission’s reality version was very similar to the virtual version excluding the fact that they only had one life. And it seemed the crazy transferred right on over.

This game, both in virtual reality and in reality, seemed to attract the kind of people whose gut reactions to situations were immediately to do something less than wholesome.

-[Are you feeling ok?]

“All I want to do at this point is just save like crazy for a month straight and go through body modification to go over to Class D. But I’m going to go crazy because I can’t do it, ok?”



There was something he found out while talking to Odin not too long ago. The number of times he died in the virtual version. It was 3225 – a higher number compared to others.

Cha Jun Sung had only done solo plays. He had learned as he confronted enemies beyond his capabilities. This was possible because it was the virtual version.

‘If I want to take on something like Caicus in Class C, even 10 lives are too little. If I don’t make friends, my strength will lack starting with Class E.’

They had to meet when they had nothing to deepen their ties. If it’s a Lifer who has advanced to Level D, won’t he have all of his bases covered?

Then they become people looking for business partners that they need.

And if they become useless?

They endure it and get out. It had to be now. This moment.

‘Let’s do one more today and fold.’

He did not experience fatigue because he was going into missions below his level. He still did not want to maintain this annoyance, so he would do one more for the day.

“Party, party.”

Cha Jun Sung murmured the word party as he searched through Life World.

There were a lot of ads, but a lot of the parties were preoccupied with aspects like bribes, how many mutants each person took care of, and points. Starting out like this would only end in disaster.

“Oh?”

-[Writer: Anonymous]

-[Title: Permanent Party]

-[Content: If you’re going to say some nonsense about point bribes or mutant distribution, press escape. Solo missions are possible up to 500 points. I am only looking for comrades I can trust until the end. If you lie to get in and are caught, you’re dead.]

These words instantly captured Cha Jun Sung’s attention. The content matched his thoughts exactly. Is he someone who finds importance in loyalty? Anyway, it was refreshing to read.

“Odin, search Underpass and send a party application.”

-[Searching mission ‘Underpass’. Search complete. I have sent a

party application.]

It said that he was bringing people on on a first-come, first-serve basis. He was not sure if it was good, but the ad was definitely different from what he had seen until now. He had high expectations.

-[The individual has accepted the party application.]

-[On standby..... If you agree, you will be sent to Class E mission Underpass.]

Of course he agreed. He wanted to see the party leader's face as soon as possible.

He was sick of dead ends.

‘If there is a God, have pity on this person and bring upon him a winner.’

“Hello, I am party leader Zephyrus. It's nice to meet you.”

“Oh, I'm Odin.”

Cha Jun Sung lowered his head in surprise. It was in greeting but also because of his short height.

18? 19? He did not look like a middle schooler. Probably a high school student.

Whatever he was, he was not an adult. He was a pretty looking boy. Maybe because of that, the manly pose he had felt from the post disappeared.

“Are you disappointed because I’m young?”

“I can’t say I’m disappointed because age has nothing to do with skill..... but I’m surprised that a young person came into a place like this.”

The primary selection criteria had been Life Mission account holders. It was an adult game, but some high school students entered by adjusting their birth dates.

“I’m going to catch all of the mutants in this mission, but I figure you won’t care?”

“Excuse me?”

“This is my 10th time completing Underpass, so I know this place well.”

Cha Jun Sung thought he had heard wrong. 10th time? Does that mean this was a repeat mission? He had assumed missions could only be completed once. He learned something new today.

If Zephyrus was not lying, he would know Underpass like the back of his hand.

“It seems you didn’t know. Well, I guess they wouldn’t just tell you great information like this.”

Zephyrus scanned Cha Jun Sung up and down. He observed carefully as though examining an object. It was not uncomfortable. Rather, he was curious of the words to follow.

“Your equipment is outstanding. I’ve seen hundreds of Lifers, but haven’t seen anyone who came even close.”

“Thank you.”

“Even if you get lost, it looks like you wouldn’t die.”

“Die?”

“This place is Class E, but it’s dangerous. I gained a lot of information while basically living here. I’m sure you have information that others don’t as well? That type of equipment is impossible to get with normal methods.”

Cha Jun Sung’s eyes rounded. Not only was Zephyrus not surprised at his equipment, he even showed some intelligent thinkin.

“Even when I think about it, I was lucky.”

“I see.”

He admitted it. Caicus’ appearance to make a special mission was all luck. Though it could have been unlucky if something had gone wrong slightly.

“Can I ask an uncomfortable question?”

“Sure.”

“It seems you like to do missions solo like I do, but how far have you gone?”

“To 1500 points, but I wouldn’t suggest it because it’s ineffective.”

“Wow!”

Zephyrus who had remained calm at Cha Jun Sung’s equipment showed surprise. He thought that someone great had come in.

“Let’s do the mission first.”

“Oh right!”

# Chapter 14

---

Zephyrus hit his head. He was being stupid. He had said that he would catch everything but had forgotten the mission while lost in this conversation.

Zephyrus put the rectangular case in his left hand and plastic box in his right on the floor. His attire was exceedingly casual.

‘He doesn’t have any accoutrements. Is it a state of relaxation from this being his 10th turn? I’ll see how he does.’

It seemed the case was his weapon. All he wore were low class tights and partial protectors. He appeared to have gathered a fair amount of points.

‘His equipment is weak. From the way he speaks, he isn’t the type to waste his points. Either he gathered them or..... had he used all of them on that case?’

The case opened. Inside was a 3-level stair-like structure.

Each level was immaculately organized with 3 components. They were separated into parts – crossbow, sniper rifle, a variety of bombs.

‘Terrorist? Sniper?’

Terrorist bomber.

Shooter sniper.

Cha Jun Sung thought Zephyrus' job to be one of two things. It couldn't be both because that would be inefficient.

Cha Jun Sung thought of blader.

With the virtual version's qualifications, he would need millions of points. He could not waste points in this situation. Other Lifers were the same. They needed to choose one thing and focus all their points on that. It didn't do to spread your points thin.

He was extremely quick in putting the crossbow together. It was not an ordinary crossbow. It was an automatic crossbow capable of 20 shots.

"I finally bought this."

As Zephyrus admired it when he finished its assembly, he pulled the sniper rifle on.

Cha Jun Sung's gaze went to the sniper rifle. He had seen it while looking at firearms. He could remember it being worth more than 3000 points.

It was shorter than a normal sniper rifle. It was a semi-automatic



sniper rifle.

“This is a set item. I used 20,000 points to buy it.”

“Ho ho.”

Cha Jun Sun laughed in disbelief. 20,000 for a case and a few weapons? It was ridiculously expensive, but there must have been a reason why Zephyrus bought it.

“If you buy this case, every day you automatically get 10 arrows, 50 bullets, and 2 bombs of your choice. There’s a benefit in the long term.”

That meant a saving of the cost of daily ammunition for low level missions.

“Wait here.”

Tatat!

Zephyrus took the crossbow and box and went forward 20m. It was in the sewers, but there was no problem with vision because light seeped in from many places.

‘What is he trying to do?’

Cha Jun Sung observed him. His hunting method was the opposite of his.

Can it be said that he uses his head to hunt rather than his body? His profession leaned toward the sniper side. A terrorist is called a life destroyer.

Zephyrus had a fever bomb in his hand.

He then opened his box and took something else out. It was raw meat dripping with bright red blood. It was a fever shot.

“These guys go crazy over blood. After a minute, they’ll come in hordes.”

“It’s a double-edged sword.”

“Exactly.”

He did not go around killing them, but made them all gather in one place. If something went wrong, it could turn into a concentrated attack instead of a lure.

Their shadows appeared first because of the angle of the light. They were not walking towards them, they were crawling. They wriggled like maggots. The number was unclear.

“Blood-sucking insects?”

“The mission is complete once you catch about 150 of them.”

A white lump the size of a human head with hair growing out of it was crawling.

It was impossible to differentiate between the head and the rear. A strange liquid was dripping from the hair. Paralysis toxin. He was certain it was a blood-sucking insect.

‘Could it be?’

Cha Jun Sung quickly looked around him. Blood-sucking insects were scary. They became stronger as they matured. The ones in front of them were just newborn babies.

One could not underestimate them just because they were babies, however. It was still among the top five of the strongest in Level 1. Though they seemed slow, they became as fast as lightning once they detected food.

“The evil blood-suckers aren’t here.”

“Have you seen the evil blood-suckers? How far is their home?”

“You don’t have to worry about them as long as you don’t go too far in.”

Zephyrus' explanation was succinct. It was a silent indication that he would not say more.

Cha Jun Sung believed that the information this boy had said he earned from this place, the Underpass, had to do with his approach of the blood-sucking insects. Whatever way it was.

His eyes squinted. The fact that evil blood-suckers were here meant that there were creatures of a higher level. Just the evil blood-sucker alone was a Level 3. Getting caught meant death.

They could only abandon the mission with a bow. He could not understand what kind of place this was. Judging by the forages, it seemed to be linked to a special mission like the Closed Area mission.

Slurp slurp.

The blood-sucking insect had attached themselves to the raw meat and were sucking the blood. Some took pieces of it and chewed on it. It was grotesque.

A rough guess was that there were 35 to 40 of them. Zephyrus waited until they gathered, press the button on the fever bomb, and threw it into the center of the insects.

Puak!

Kiak!

As the fever bomb went off, the blood-sucking insects melted. Smoke filled the underpass. The cost of the bombs are expensive, but this much was worth it.

“I got like this after playing Life Mission for half a year. How about you, Odin?”

“It’s been 10 years since I started with beta. I know the blood-sucking insects well. Can we speak a little after the mission is over? Should I say to exchange information?”

“We’ll see.”

Zephyrus pretended to be indifferent, but showed a positive attitude. He would have turned down the offer if he had just been asking for information, but he would be interested in an exchange.

Click.

Zephyrus stood in position with his sniper rifle and waiting for the blood-sucking insects to re-emerge. He had no anxiety. There was a sense of calm in his actions.

Kiki!

Immature blood-sucking insects only have a developed sense of the smell, and the rest was degenerate. The reason why he lured

them as a strategy was that they had the advantage of the terrain.

He meant to fight without worrying about variables. They came out as long as there was an odor. Going around finding them one by one was unnecessary in many ways.

Kwajik.

The blood-sucking insects that had appeared in hordes ate the burnt pieces. Their sizes expanded as they ate.

If it becomes as big as a person like that, it advances to a Level 3 evil blood-sucker.

Tang!

Zephyrus' sniper rifle hit a blood-sucking insect. That was when he showed the power of a semi-automatic. Even as the blood-sucking insects were being attacked, they focused on eating.

Tatatatang!

He shot and shot. Zephyrus did not use a grenade. He only focused at the distance with his eye on the scope. He had great aim.

He might have shot for too long, because the blood-sucking insects reacted to the smell of gunpowder. They could differentiate between smells coming from near and far.

Kiak!

The insects that had been busy eating the meat began screaming in Zephyrus' direction. They were poised for attack, recognizing an enemy.

They went from the speed of a person walking to an almost run.

Dozens of muckworms came in like a wave. It was truly detestable. Some rode the walls and some the ceiling. The attention was dispersed in all directions.

“We'll kill them as we escape.”

“Okay.”

Tangtang.

Each time Zephyrus took a step back, an insect died. Beyond his age, it was an amazing skill.

“Careful!”

Cha Jun Sung held his red fire in a desperate gesture. The insects riding the walls sprang off with their teeth bared.

The distance was not more than a few meters. Within seconds, it was right in front of Zephyrus' face.

Puk!

A surprising incident arose. Zephyrus took out his crossbow and fired at the insect. It pierced through its mouth and hit the ceiling, breaking in half.

He kicked the dead insect and continued on.

“Ha.....”

Cha Jun Sung was truly in awe. Even if this was his 10th time in the mission, that could not be attributed to a familiarity with the mutants and terrain.

That was talent. He could not yet know a lot about Zephyrus, but he was showing great talent as a sniper.

-[Congratulations. You have cleared Class E mission Underpass.]

-[You have earned 500 points.]

At some point, they had reached completion of the mission. He had received a free 500 points just while observing.



Other Lifers would have asked for a distribution of the points instead of a sweep, but Cha Jun Sung was honestly at peace. He did not care if they did this a few more times.

“You said you wanted to talk? Since it’s a hassle to speak through our helpers or speak outside, follow me. We have to move quickly.”

Zephyrus rushed to gather his equipment and directed Cha Jun Sung. He went along obediently since it did not seem he had bad intentions.

# Chapter 15

---

“What is this place?”

“I found it by chance while I was running away. There are a few other places too.”

The place where Zephyrus had led him was a bunker that could fit around 10 people. There were things like food and supplies in random places.

He said that they were not purchased, but already here when he first found it. Items found on a mission can be used. They cannot forget that it is reality.

“Odin, you passed the interview.”

“Interview?”

Cha Jun Sung tipped his head in puzzlement. It sounded like Zephyrus had decided on some benchmarks and tested him. Zephyrus relieved his curiosity.

“I saw 3 things.”

He then explained.

First, he did not underestimate him because he was young.

Second, he allowed him to take on all of the mutants.

Third, he was the same until the very end.

He was young, but he had his own standards. He could be seen as very thoughtful.

“Are those three criteria hard to fulfill?”

“I tried out a lot of parties, but there weren’t many who even passed the first.”

Countless times, he had heard laughter of disbelief at first sight or the words that a minor should not be leaving prank comments online. They did not see him as a Lifer.

“The second was to see which side you considered important.”

It had not mattered that he used harsh words in his post to try to filter out the garbage. The people who came in were all the same.

However, he had not given up. He had the belief that a good person would come in at some point. Someone like Cha Jun Sung who was still looking for a party even after experiencing the bitter aspects of it.

“Until now, there were 3 other people who had passed the second

point. But they were busy shooting their guns when the blood-sucking insects came swarming in.”

This he could understand. Blood-sucking insects needed to be eliminated early on. Those people must not have trusted Zephyrus’ skills.

Cha Jun Sung himself could not guarantee that he would not have done the same if he had not trusted Zephyrus. That was how dangerous the insects were.

“Since I passed the interview, is it time to earn trust?”

“Of course.”

Cha Jun Sung thought Zephyrus was cute. Though he did not act young, he was.

Looking at him as one Lifer to another however, his skill and personality was one to be admired. Age cannot become a determining standard of evaluation.

“What can I say to gain that trust? Information that only I know?”

Cha Jun Sung spoke casually. He did not have any intentions on surprising him.

Zephyrus was someone he wanted to make into a comrade, but he did not want to be at a disadvantage. Since he did not seem like he would speak first, he would have to tell him in the pretense that he had been fooled.

“I’m sure you know that Level 2 mutants appear when it’s 1000 points?”

“I saw that on Lifer World.”

“From 1500 points, 2 come out. I think there were about 400 Level 1 mutants?”

Cha Jun Sung continued to explain that because they were smart, they recognized objects that were a danger to them and hid while ordering the dwarves around.

Zephyrus asked questions as he listened. The difference between reading about it and listening to someone who had experience speak was that of theory and encounter.

Then Cha Jun Sung said the most important thing.

“Acting alone instead of as a party will make it difficult to reach over 1000 points. Even if you are the best out of 100, you’re nothing when facing numbers.”

Whew.

Zephyrus sighed. There was no disputing it. That was the reason why he did not move over to another mission.

He had spent everything on the case, but his goal was to get points from Underpass and buy the best equipment from the Class E store. He estimated it would take a month.

“While we’re on it, I’ll tell you one more thing. I earned 5260 points in the tutorial. That became the foundation for this equipment.”

“A special mission?”

“I guess that’s what is linked to the reason why we need to move quickly. If you stay in one place for a while, the evil blood-sucker could appear or there could be another format...”

Zephyrus was shocked. He looked like he had seen a ghost. He muttered,

“Oh, how did you know that.....!”

“Knowing the term special mission means you’ve already gone through it and..... looking at your behavior upon entering Underpass, I can assume.”

Cha Jun Sung had not only looked at Zephyrus’ skills. He had

kept Zephyrus' words and defensive behavior in mind.

It might be difficult to put something together with one piece, but a profile can be made out after gathering pieces. It was like a puzzle.

“With this much, I believe you have something to say as well.”

Talking alone defied the courtesies of give-and-take. Since he taught Zephyrus something he did not know, Zephyrus also needed to hand over information.

“I only know what I learned through Underpass.”

Seuk.

Cha Jun Sung gestured to him to continue as he did not care about such things.

The listener is to decide if the information is useful or not. Even if it is useless, he liked Zephyrus. He would be satisfied with becoming comrades.

“Exactly 12 days ago, I came into Underpass in a 6-person party.”

He was rewinding his memory.

Zephyrus recalled when he first stepped into Underpass 12 days ago.

\*\*\*

Zephyrus' first party. It is also the only party that was annihilated.

Their reason for choosing Underpass was nothing special. It stood out while they were looking for 500-point missions. To put it simply, they were just looking for something that would pay.

The start was smooth. Since they were all experienced in Life Mission, they knew what they needed to be careful of while facing the blood-sucking insects.

Since there were 6 of them and they were all fairly skilled, they completed the mission without much problem.

Then, one of the party members suggested looking around the underpass just for fun instead of heading back.

The party had delightfully agreed. It was a Class E mission anyway. Blood-sucking insects did not pose much of a danger. This was why the party was wiped out.

“Had you not heard an explanation on the overall difficulty from your helper?”



“..... We had heard it, but didn’t know how exactly it would apply.”

Tsk.

Cha Jun Sung had a bitter expression. The information from helpers were basic, but you could avoid a meaningless death by following their instructions. They had overlooked that.

It was difficult to survive while taking caution of only what was visible. The chance of survival was higher when being careful of something that could not be seen to the eye than what could.

Zephyrus’ party had ignored this and crossed a river they could not return from.

He could empathize on the one hand. He had listened to Odin, but he would not have understood the importance of it if he had not experienced Caicus.

“As we went along the path in the Underpass, we came upon the evil blood-sucker’s home and the mission went from Class E to Class D.”

Siksik.

They had heard a sound come from a hole they saw in an alley

they were passing.

They thought that it was the sound of wind passing through, but threw a grenade into it just in case, opening the door to hell themselves.

“2 evil blood-suckers who were guarding hundreds of cocoons came out.”

Evil blood-suckers were Level 3. They were the final evolution of blood-sucking insects. They were repulsive because they looked like a cross between an earthworm and centipede.

Its nature was as atrocious as its appearance – it was cruel. It enjoyed stabbing its opponent to death with its spikes or wrapping itself around the opponent to cut it up.

It showed its strength as a Level 3 mutant through its fast speed and unexpected movement. But 2 evil blood-suckers came out? That was bound to be a disaster.

“Was giving up the mission not an option?”

“We were forced. We could have if we had not been discovered by the evil blood-suckers, but we weren’t given the option once they had already seen us.”

“So you couldn’t force a return.”

“No.”

Lifers’ forced returns were only possible if they did not move from the spot they were in.

When he asked Odin about the principles, Odin had said that the location needed to return switches if someone moves, so they cannot calculate it in real time.

The time it takes to calculate the return was 5 to 6 seconds. But to stay still for that time while an evil blood-sucker was approaching meant that they were flirting with death.

“Even if you shoot your gun and somehow hit it, you can’t wound it very much.”

“Maybe.....”

“All our party members had were pistols and simple SMGs.”

Ugh.

Cha Jun Sung let out a sick sound. He pitied Zephyrus who had witnessed the deaths of all of his first party members. The flesh of the evil blood-sucker was thick and tough.

It would be hard to penetrate even with his red fire. For

penetration, stronger firearm was necessary. Zephyrus' sniper rifle was just barely suitable.

“2 people died like that and 4 people including me, ran away.”

“You can't show your back.”

“There was nothing we could do because our options were dying or running away.”

Blood-sucking insects only had a developed sense of smell. But the evil blood-sucker had a variety of the five senses. They were natural hunters. It did not let go of any prey it targeted.

“Each person was hunted. That was the first time I heard screaming like that.”

When emotions were mixed in, screaming sounded different. It was hair-raising.

Eventually they reached a different place as they ran away. Fortunately, one comrade also survived, but he was out of his mind after witnessing 4 people die.

“That's when you discovered this bunker?”

“No. It was a different one.”

“The other person.....”

“The way to get into each bunker is different.”

The bunker they were currently in could be entered by opening the door. The bunker Zephyrus was talking about was another place where they needed to open the top door as if it were a tank and go down into it.

“I was faster because I had discovered it, and he was following behind me.”

“So he got dragged out.”

“The entry was so narrow that they could not kill me without dragging him out. In that time, I was able to crawl into the bunker, and I lived.”

Zephyrus’ face turned dark. He was feeling guilt. To him, it was as though he had sacrificed a comrade for his own survival.

“I would like to say something, but can you listen to it as though it was coming from an adult?”

“I’ll listen.”

“You cannot be free from death the second you enter this place. But if you become involved in another’s death, only think about one thing.”

“What is that?”

“Whether it was intentional or not.”

“That’s hard.”

“I’ll solve it for you. Did you kill that man to live?”

“Never!”

Zephyrus denied it vehemently. You couldn’t automatically say he was pure just because he was young, but he was also clearly not someone who would kill another to stay alive.

“That’s it. If you didn’t make it happen, it was that person’s fate to die there. And it was your fate to live.”

# Chapter 16

---

The deepest hideout in the underpass – it was built as a bunker in case of emergency situations, but it had been a long time since it was used for those purposes.

A place with plenty of space for tens of thousands of people was bustling with blood-sucking insects.

To use military terms, this was their headquarters. The habitat that Zephyrus had discovered was a small camp of the evil blood-suckers.

Seuseuk.

As they got closer to the center, higher levels appeared. There was a clear order.

The weaker ones were gathered on the outside, but the stronger ones had constantly dug in to get to the center. Something was brewing.

Kyarung!

A stifled cry as if something was caught in the throat. As soon as the sound was heard, it became quiet.

As a thorn the size of a human arm scratched the hard concrete, 5

demon blood-suckers a few times the size of the evil blood-suckers raised their heads.

Demon blood-suckers controlled the incoming insects and drew a circle.

It was to protect the giant cocoon behind them. The cocoon was large enough for all 5 of the demon blood-suckers to fit in.

The top of the cocoon cracked. Something inside was trying to get out.

The demon blood-suckers and insects moved as if they were having seizures. It was like looking at fanatics enshrining a pseudo-Sheikh. It was about half larger than the normal demon blood-sucker. It was an elder to the insects.

Kiik!

They could not describe the despair they felt when they lost their king in a losing war. Fortunately, the king left an heir and the heir was about to be born.

-[We are not yet finished. Worship his return.]

This was what they would have said if the demon blood-suckers' thoughts were translated into human language.



Kwakwang!

The cocoon could not withstand the power being exerted from inside and a hole formed. The creature that sprang out of it surged towards the ceiling.

Woowoowoowoo!

There was a mighty power in its roar.

This was when Cha Jun Sung had passed out. This was the type of mental collapse that a Level 7 mutant could invoke.

Keukeukeukeuk.

The ceiling was cracking. It had been split by a thorn sharper than a knife.

As it was in the basement, the concrete's thickness was unimaginable – but the mutant had pierced it.

It was easily 100m from its head to its tail, and 10m in diameter.

Other than the cone-shaped thorn, the underground creature also had blades attached to it. The thorn was larger than a person.

It looked similar to the demon blood-suckers but the

underground creature was more fit for destruction. Its color was a harmony of blue, red, and black.

The blood-sucking insect's 3rd form of evolution.

The blood-sucking lords took one spot in the 36 nightmares.

Seuk.

The blood-sucking lord looked down. The things that gathered. They were weak and insignificant, but he could tell that they were a fellow species.

Kiah!

The blood-sucking insects howled. The king they had so waited for had been born.

How could they express this happiness?

They were ready to avenge the sorrow they felt in the past under the new king's command.

Mental collapse.

It was the mind control used when high level mutants wanted lower creatures to submit. This concept of lower creatures

included humans.

3 years ago in Life Mission, a Level 8 mutant was let loose in a big city.

Outbreak event? That was the basic objective. At the time, Lifers below the 5th stage of body modifications in a 500m radius passed out.

Cha Jun Sung survived the mental collapse and caught the mutant with other Lifers.

Level 8 was that fearsome. He recognized the same noise in the Underpass before passing out. But Underpass was only supposed to be a Class E. What was going on?

“How could it be a blood-sucking lord. Even I’ve only caught one before because they’re so hard to find.”

Disaster and nightmare.

It was the way to refer to Level 9 and Level 8 mutants. Blood-sucking lords were a Level 8 mutant.

Its ability to exert its power was real. In the virtual version, it destroyed a 10-floor building that Cha Jun Sung was hiding in with a flick of its tail.

He had meant to surprise it, but could not fool its sensitive senses.

‘This is incredible information. It’s information that brings value just by having it!’

Lifers advance through missions. He was struggling with Class E right now, but it was obvious that he would soon pass Class D to go on to C and B.

There were missions until Class S. The blood-sucking lord’s strength was estimated at Level A.

It was unthinkable at the moment, but as it became a goal to seek without rest, it would become the grounds to cross over to Level S.

‘Keep the goal big. We advance one step at a time, but I must be ever prepared. And knowledge is key.’

He did not care about the boundary between the virtual and real. As long as he had made up his mind, he would become the best in reality as he had been in the virtual version. Overload does not change just because it was now in reality.

Kiak!

The Great Spider, whose body was cut off, fell over. Cha Jun Sung blew at the heat coming out of the red fire. This signified mission completion as he had caught the last one.

“Jin Hyuk, come here.”

“Okay.”

Cha Jun Sung called Zephyrus, Park Jin Hyuk. 10 days ago after the Underpass mission, Park Jin Hyuk had contacted him immediately upon his return.

They made plans the next day and entered a mission where they formally introduced themselves.

Park Jin Hyuk was young. He was now 19 years old. He had earned his GED for school. Cha Jun Sung didn't see it as a problem because this was not a day and age where schooling meant everything as it had in the past.

“With today, you'll be getting all Class E equipment?”

“It's close but it should be. It's all because of you. Thank you.”

Bow.

Park Jin Hyuk bowed politely. In 10 days, they raised 30,000 points.

They had initially planned to get there in a month, but they had done it 20 days faster. A lot of it was thanks to Cha Jun Sung and

his experience.

Underpass, which had been Park Jin Hyuk's reliable mission, became the one to avoid.

The blood-sucking lord was there. It was a given to avoid it in their right mind. They had to have at least the 7th body modification and the battle shoot to try it. But at least they knew to avoid it. Valuable information indeed.

“To commemorate becoming comrades, I'll tell you something.”

“What is it?”

“I said I completed a Level D special mission, right? Class D store has something important.”

Park Jin Hyuk thought about it. Cha Jun Sung would not have told him this for no reason. Cha Jun Sung was curious to see if Jin Hyuk would be able to read what he was thinking.

“What's in the Class D store?”

“Body modification.”

Park Jin Hyuk's eyes rounded. He had not played Life Mission for long, but he knew the importance of body modifications. It was absolutely necessary for Lifers.

He had not been able to find it anywhere in Class E, but it was hiding in Class D?

“Are you saying we should attempt a Level D mission? I don’t have it in my list.”

“Think outside the box.”

He was at an age where he had a questioning and curious nature. They were discussing Level D mission and store right now. It must be related.

“I think I know what is it.”

“What are you thinking?”

“Special mission!”

“Right. I’m thinking of giving that mission a try. There’s nothing left to do in Level E. It’ll take half a year to buy Level D equipment with the points we earn here.”

Each level had its own wall. If he could not break through it, he could not advance.

Cha Jun Sung was at an advantage over Park Jin Hyuk because he completed a Level D mission. If he invested 1 year, he could freely

advance to Level D missions.

On the other hand, Park Jin Hyuk was a Level E. Unless he attempted a Level D mission, he would stay at Level E even if he gathered hundreds of thousands of points. Cha Jun Sung was asking if he will take the challenge. No reward without risk.

“My guess is that if we get it, the Level D mission will open. Granted, mine is already open.”

“Will it be okay with the two of us?”

“No.”

Cha Jun Sung revealed his negative thoughts. It was 3000 points at least. He did not know what type of mission the upgrade mission was. But it was dangerous for just two to go in.

“There are more 1000 point parties. I’m sure we’ll find someone soon.”



# Chapter 17

---

“Party..... Will there be normal people?”

“We’ll see.”

Though they might seem fine on the outside, people were mazes inside.

The world inside a mission had no law or order. Even if someone committed a crime, they could not put them on trial. When people are put in extreme situations, they turn into devils.

“I’m not forcing you to do it.”

“I’ll try it. I got this far in Level E missions with just my body. The advance mission shouldn’t be so bad since I’ve got good equipment and you.”

Park Jin Hyuk made up his mind. If he changed his equipment, he would have the confidence to take on 1000-point missions alone. With Cha Jun Sung on top of that, he was not scared.

“That’s impressive.”

Cha Jun Sung knew that he would do it and patted his shoulder. They had become quite close in a matter of 10 days. If compatible, time didn’t matter.

“It’s for me. I’m sure you’re the same, but I hate losing.”

“Except in studying.”

“Ha ha! Right. Except in studying.”

Kikik!

They checked each other’s thoughts. All they had left was to wait until the D-day.

If they gave up a mission, it would become congested. Lifers were growing by the day. If they stayed still, the Lifers would catch up to them and then they would be left behind.

“How many points go into body modification?”

“30,000 for the 2nd stage and 10,000 for the first stage.”

Ahem.

Park Jin Hyuk coughed. 30,000 points! It was easy to say 30,000, but it was dark. It would take them months.

“I gathered 10,000 so I can do the first stage.”

“You’ve gathered 10,000 already? Jackpot! So I guess you’ll do the 1st stage of body modifications?”

“Yeah. I’m going to go do it today.”

“The advance mission after a body modification? It’ll be easier than we thought.”

He wished it could be like that, but Cha Jun Sung knew that it would not be as easy as they were thinking.

Level 1 was fine. But if Level 2 mutants came out in hordes, he would not be able to handle it.

1 or 2 mutants between the two of them was just right. Even with body modification, 3 or 4 mutants would be all. He was not going to become unbelievably strong.

“From now on, let’s observe Lifers’ dynamics instead of gathering points.”

“Okay.”

Now they would lower the number of missions and search for a party to go into the advance mission with. The maximum number of people they could enter with for a mission in Class E is 10.

The day that number is filled would become the day they go into

the advance mission.

\*\*\*

After Cha Jun Sung left Park Jin Hyuk, he did not return to the real world. He needs to go through body modification. He went into the briefing room for the first time in a long while.

“10,000 points.”

Gulp.

He swallowed as he saw the number of points he had accumulated come up on the PDA screen.

It was the result of suffering for two months. With this, he could purchase the one or two of the best equipment in the Level D store.

The list of things he wanted to buy was endless, but he had already made up his mind.

“Body modification.”

He needed to rely on personal skill rather than equipment. In that end, body modification is a necessary course for Lifers to strengthen their bodies.

No matter how great the equipment was, he could not use it properly if his body was garbage. If the foundation was weak, it was just a sand castle that will be blown over in the wind.

“Odin, prepare it.”

-[Once you accept it, you cannot overturn it. Shall I set the body modification?]

“Yeah.”

-[Setting, setting complete. 10,000 points will be deducted.]

Cha Jun Sung's points fell to 100. He went into the body modification room slowly. It was simple. A cylindrical object in a transparent material closed around him.

It was similar to the body modification room in the virtual version. He did not see any terror-inducing instruments. There were only tubes to eject liquid.

Seureuk.

Cha Jun Sung took off the equipment he had been wearing. Body modification was not a raw surgery where his flesh was opened to tamper with his bones, muscles, and organs.

It was instead injected with transcendental cells that

transformed people into superhumans.

“This is nerve-wracking.”

-[You do not have to worry as there are no side effects until the 4th stage.]

“How about the 5th?”

-[I will tell you then.]

“Stingy.”

Wiing.

Cha Jun Sung pressed the switch on the cylinder. The clear entrance opened. This is the first time he is doing it in real life, but he already knew what was going to happen.

Since he knew, Odin did not offer a separate explanation. He did well on his own. There was no reason to tell him what to do.

-[Take a deep nap.]

A thick reddish liquid came down the hose and filled the cylinder, swallowing Cha Jun Sung. It must've allowed him to breathe though because he quickly fell asleep.

Though there was nothing like an oxygen tank, he did not choke but breathed normally. The cylinder's shape was simple, but it contained the technology of a secondary science.

Bibik!

A hologram appeared on the face of the cylinder that listed Cha Jun Sung's condition.

-[1st stage of body modification operation. Time 3 hours. Heart, pulse, blood pressure normal.]

The probability of success is 100%, but Odin did not neglect his duties. He did not miss any of the changes arising in Cha Jun Sung and checked each.

-[Congratulations on taking a step, however small, into the world of being a superhuman.]

Though his physical ability had barely doubled, he was definitely on the path to becoming a superhuman. When he woke up, the world would be different.

\*\*\*

Seureuk.

His eyelids quivered as he opened his eyes. He saw a familiar wall. It had felt like a moment, but he had returned from the briefing room and was home.

‘I’m naked.’

Cha Jun Sung got up from his bed. He was still in his undressed state. His equipment was organized on one side of the room. Odin had sent it to him because he could not wear it.

Tak.

Since he woke up at home, his body was activated. He could feel a power that he did not normally have. When he looked in the full length mirror, he could see the new muscles that had developed everywhere wriggle.

He swung his fist.

Was it fast?

Honestly, he could not tell. It was difficult to determine because body modification was not just in muscular strength, but also in fortifying strength and the senses.

Cha Jun Sung went up to the 2nd floor in a comfortable training suit. It was a gym rivaling a professional health center.



It was just for 1 person, so there was just one of each machine but this would be enough to tell him how much he had changed basically.

‘You need to know yourself well. Being drunk on power is stupid.’

He started exercising after a little stretching. He did not overexert himself from the beginning. He set everything to the strength he had done before the body modification.

10 minutes passed. He put the dumbbell down. 10kg did not feel very heavy. The heaviest was 50kg. He would need to lift that.

His biceps split and his veins bulged. He smiled.

The normal person could never lift 50kg with one hand.

To lift the weight of a woman with an easy movement of the arm would hurt anyone who is not a bodybuilder or of a related career.

Clunk!

As the weight was greater, so was the sound. If he had been at a professional gym, he would have gotten everyone’s attention because he was using weights beyond imagination.

Whether it was a push-up or a chin-up, it was easy to do with one

hand. Exercises that could be increased in intensity with the help of machines did not put any burden on his body.

He became more surprised as he continued to exercise. It felt like he had all of the advantages that athletes have.

‘It’s embarrassing to be called a superhuman.’

It was outstanding, but the anatomy was a mystery. There were a lot of people who could get to this state without going through body modification if they put the effort into it.

He had to become much stronger to gain the strength of a true superhuman.

‘This won’t do.’

His body itched. He cannot wait until tomorrow. He had decided on one mission per day because no matter what happened, there was always fatigue.

He stopped exercising and went back to his room to put on his equipment.

The red fire would be back-up – he would only use the sword. With this body, Level 1 would not be a problem even if he did not have the help of firearms and grenades.

# Chapter 18

---

Kwajik!

The massive middle-kick struck the knife-tailed macaque in the temple. It was an attack to the death. Its head tipped at just one blow and its neck broke.

The knife-tailed macaques made a fuss and encircled Cha Jun Sung.

It was obvious that they were angry. He did not worry though because they were weak. It was just annoying that they attacked without warning.

Dozens of them poured in. Everything was blocked off, so there was no retreat. Whether he struck through either side or he kill all of them, Cha Jun Sung's only choice was annihilation.

The sword danced. It was a simple slash and stab. The knife-tailed macaques' limbs were getting cut off. The power in the slash was like the strength of an axe.

Cha Jun Sung stabbed the knife-tailed macaque in the stomach and broke its neck. It was because another one tried to get his head with its tail.

Knife-tail.

It is similar to the knives used in the kitchen. Since the tail was connected by a bone, being stabbed with the tail would feel like being stabbed with a knife. It was the best to avoid it.

“Cocky.”

Cha Jun Sung avoided the tail and grabbed the tail, pulling the arm. The knife-tailed macaque flew through the air and fell to the ground.

It wriggled as though it were having a seizure. Something had gone wrong with its back on the impact from the fall. It would die if left alone, but Cha Jun Sung did not do that.

He held it by its tail and spinned before letting go. It flew and mixed in amongst the others that had been approaching.

Papat!

Cha Jun Sung hit the floor. There was no need to hesitate. His vision that had increased by 2 times and reflexes reacted automatically to the dangerous attack.

He had become strong enough to kill dozens of Level 1 mutants with his bare hands.

No matter how much they attacked, his outstanding equipment and strong body protected him.

This was body modification. It was the best item that made it possible for an individual to fight without cumbersome equipment.

Cha Jun Sung's sword split the knife-tailed macaque from its head to its rear. It felt strange. It was not bad.

His smile twisted. It was so sinister that Park Jin Hyuk would have taken a step back if he had seen. Cha Jun Sung was gripped with this new lack of emotion.

His blood boiled as his heart beat faster. He was overcome with an impulse to slaughter the mutants. His sanity sank and his instincts took over.

“I'll kill you all.”

Bang bang!

Tutututu!

The grenade and red fire he had been holding back on did their jobs.

Beyond the smoke, Cha Jun Sung looked like a devil.

Hahaha!

Cha Jun Sung took the head of a macaque with a half-broken neck and pulled with all of his strength. The bones ripped apart. This was not something he would have done under normal circumstances.

He did kill as much as he could, but he had not done anything so cruel before.

He shoved the sword into open parts relentlessly. He only wounded them to the point right before death on purpose. He wanted to make them feel pain.

His eyes were bloodshot like a beast seeking its prey.

He killed and killed without stopping. He could not control the madness. He swept back and forth like a sailboat pushed over by a wave.

Roar!

As he heard a great cry, the leader of the macaques appeared. It was a Level 2 knife-tailed macaque. The numbers in his subordinates had visibly been reduced.

It was only a matter of time before they would be wiped out. The macaque needs to hurry up and kill Cha Jun Sung before they suffered more damages. This was only his thinking.

‘Is that the leader?’

Cha Jun Sung looked the macaque up in down while covered in blood. It was big.

There would be much pleasure in slashing it. If he were in his right mind, he would have started a search but he considered it cumbersome now. He brandished the sword while he thought.

‘Come at me at the same time. I’ll cut you into pieces of meat.’

Cha Jun Sung dragged his sword as he ran. The macaque also ran. He needed to relieve his desire before this feeling disappears.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung leaned against a boulder as he gasped for breath. It was a compromising situation.

In front of him, the macaque with the stomach ripped open was dead with its tongue hanging out.

“I.....”

More serious than the fact that he had killed the mutants with cruelty was that he had lost his senses. He had gotten to this point after feeling strange when seeing blood.

He did not know the cause. Was it that he naturally fell into slaughter as he started killing living things? Or could this be post-traumatic stress disorder?

“No. I would have shown symptoms if it were PTSD. This happened suddenly.”

What could the problem be? He would figure it out no matter what.

If he went crazy while working in a party, nothing said that they would not mistake him for a mutant. If he had been as he just was, he would kill everyone.

“Body modification?”

The only change that had happened to him was the body modification. The equipment was inanimate. It could not shake a person’s sanity. He had no doubt it was the body modification.

“Odin.”

Cha Jun Sung called Odin.

There was no response. The helper does not communicate with their Lifer during a mission.

“I’ll just let it go since I’ll hear it once I return to the briefing



room anyway. I don't want to hear it while I'm in this mood."

-[What do you think body modification is?]

Odin replied. But instead of a response, he turned it into a question.

"It's strengthening a person's body to make it possible for them to fight against mutants."

-[That is correct. Then I will ask, won't there be a price to this power?]

"Price?"

-[Each person has a different depth to their talent. People who are born with a talent are often called geniuses.]

Cha Jun Sung just listened. Odin's explanation had not ended.

-[But genius or not, people are just another object, and there is an obvious limit when looking at the strain.]

Body modification breaks through the limits of each person and their strain. It is taking the skin off of the existing being and giving rebirth as a new being.

Evolution into a superhuman. Body modification was the process of making an unhumanly human by injecting a special transcendence cell.

“There is no price. I’m losing as much as I gain. So in other words, you’re saying it’s a side effect?”

-[I will not deny it.]

“That’s weird. Didn’t you say there would be no side effects until the 4th stage?”

-[This is not a side effect. It is something that naturally follows once you go through body modification. The side effects you will experience in the 5th stage have a direct impact on your life.]

“Why didn’t you tell me in advance? If I had known, I would have at least been expecting it.”

-[All we can do is answer your questions at a standard we are allowed to. We do not amicably solve your curiosity.]

Cha Jun Sung had an expression of giving up. It was just like an emotionless artificial intelligence to answer in this way.

This meant that he must now preemptively ask every possible question. Odin was saying that it was all the fault of the person who purchased the item without looking into everything.

“What’s the solution? If I get like this every time I see blood, I’ll have to keep doing solo missions forever.”

-[You can only focus so you don’t lose your sanity.]

“That’s.....”

-[Control your sanity with your will. If you are swayed by just body modification, you will not be able to advance as a Lifer.]

“You’re playing on my pride. I was eaten up whole this time, but it won’t happen again. You think I’ll lose to a cell?”

-[You could lose.....]

“What? Tell me honestly. You’re a person or artificial intelligence with emotions, right? When I think about it, you taunt people. You’re cunning.”

-[Since you have resolved your curiosity, please return if you would like to ask further questions. Would you like to return to the briefing room or reality?]

“Send me home.”

Only he would suffer if he kept arguing with Odin. He was satisfied with finding out the cause. He would need to learn to try

to control himself while going through solo missions.

# Chapter 19

---

He explained his situation to Park Jin Hyuk and went into solo missions alone until he became more stable.

Once he recognized the side effects of the body modification, there was little backlash. The madness came as it had, but it was not uncontrollable.

While he was busily spending his days, more and more Lifer group leaders broke through 1000 points. They had not broken through it alone, though.

It was the result of a full party of 10 people or of at least 5 or 6. There were even people who had stepped into 1500 among them.

The playing field was becoming more leveled. If he did not cross into Level D, Lifers were advancing so fast that, they might even catch up to Cha Jun Sung.

He looked for a party that slowly gathered points to try higher level missions.

As Lifers advance, their interest in higher missions increased. There were some comments on it on Lifer World.

Though not sure how difficult it would be, they were sure that they could beat it if Lifers with the skill gathered together. Cha Jun Sung agreed with this point.

If there were 10 people who had the best equipment in Level E, body modification, they would be able to go against 20 Level 2 mutants. But there were not very many Lifers like him.

The world was big and there are a lot of people, so it could not be that they did not exist. It was just not easy to find them. It was very lucky that he had found even Park Jin Hyuk.

‘It doesn’t need to be Korean Lifers. Let’s widen the area.’

This is what Park Jin Hyuk had said about 2 weeks after forming the party.

Park Jin Hyuk was certain. There was no Lifer higher than Cha Jun Sung in Korea. Korea was a country with a small population. It would be solved if they broadened their horizons.

They had only acted in Korea until now. Mission locations, however, were all over the world and they had only met Korean people up to this point. It was time to get out of it.

They loosened their restrictions. As they did so, an unimaginable number of parties appeared. There were various languages as well.

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk purchased a translator. It cost them 500 points, but it was worth the cost. It translated various languages.

They found comrades from countless countries like America, Britain, Russia, China, Japan, et cetera. A new world had opened.

A coffee shop in Seoul.

Cha Jun Sung called Park Jin Hyuk and had a meeting. There were too few members to call it a meeting, but he was leaving significance in meeting in person.

“Finally.”

“I found it.”

They each said a word. The result of broadening their horizon appeared. There were a lot of parties attempting the advance mission, but they were all below standard.

The thought of attempting with equipment that would be appropriate for a 1000 point mission! The more people there were, the more crazy people there were. If you wanted to die, you could die alone.

“If your equipment is in this state, you must be even greater in actuality.”

“That we don’t know.”

“The departure is in 5 days.”

“Until then, we’ll have to gather points and fill the space compression bag all the way.”

The two of them had purchased the space compression bag for 50,000 points. They could put in a cartful of items and the bag had the bonus of making all the items lighter.

They had passed the ordinary accoutrements they had carried along to a regular Lifer for free. He had been so thrilled to receive it to the point that they were embarrassed to hand it over.

They were out of points after getting the space compression bag. They could not know how long they would stay in the mission area. It could be a long time.

If they wanted to gather everything they needed to live, they would need to move busily for 5 days. They could not just fill it however, so they had decided on taking enough for 10 days.

“Let’s volunteer.”

“Okay.”

Of the 5 advance missions, they chose ‘Field of Meat’. That was the one that they were more attracted to and a party was being made for it.



Woong!

They each applied for it. They revealed their qualifications as one level above the party members. There was no meaning to fooling the equipment they have.

The party name was Kingdom. It seemed appropriate since the party leader was from Britain. He must not have been a very suspicious guy because he did not ask much about the qualifications.

Their team of 6 people became 8 with the 2 new people. It was up to the leader whether they would go with this group or fill the remaining 2 spots.

The departure time was different by country, but it was 8pm on the dot in 5 days for Korea. They would be notified if there were any changes.

“Stay next to me.”

“Of course.”

They did not know what kind of Lifers they would be completing the mission with. They needed to be wary of any team. The only people they could trust were each other for now.

The two discussed a number of cases in the coffee shop before separating.

5 days later, the morning came bright.

-[Level E Advance Mission: Field of Meat]

-[Goal: Attainment]

-[Scenario: An island located in the southern Philippines. A military base that housed 1500 soldiers has been abandoned for several years. Lifers must infiltrate the base to confirm the situation of the Field of Meat and quickly escape.]

-[Reward: 3000 points, Level D mission open]

Wiing.

Cha Jun Sung reread the mission information that he had already read through multiple times. There was scrappy information hidden inside each mission scenario.

1500 personnel.

It would not be wrong to think there could be 1500 mutants. Also, there was one goal but two conditions – confirming the situation and escaping.

‘Confirm the situation. And escape, there would naturally be an escape once they complete the mission. Does it mean that they

need to get to the outside instead of returning?’

That could be wrong. It was just a guess. However, if they had expectations in advance, they would not be so surprised when the situation actually arose.

‘What about Jin Hyuk?’

Cha Jun Sung was the first to be summoned. Summons were done sequentially.

Since all he could do was wait, he watched the vast sea in solitude. 1 to 2 minutes? After around that much time, there was a signal for a summons.

Woongwoong.

With a resonance, Lifers from all different nations were summoned one by one.

Park Ji Hyuk was among them.

“Jun Sung.”

“I was scared when you didn’t come.”

Seuk.

Cha Jun Sung joked around as he and Park Jin Hyuk checked their equipment.

The other Lifers did the same. As they did this, they recognized each other and gathered in one place since they were a party.

4 people from Britain, 3 from America, 1 from Japan, and 2 from Korea. Looking at his outstanding equipment, he looked like he had the skill to break 1000 points alone.

“It’s nice to meet you. I’m Lloyd from Britain. These are my comrades Henry and Martin, and this is Carlyle.”

The translator worked well. The fluent English was translated into Korean.

Seuk.

The Lifers’ eyes flitted around. It was a search to determine each person’s intention.

Could it be said to be an evaluation of whether or not the person would be of assistance to themselves and to the party?

Cha Jun Sung did the same. Lloyd and the sturdy men he introduced did not seem to be ordinary people.

How could he give an example?

Right.

They were like soldiers. It was like looking at well-trained soldiers. They had only nodded courteously at Lloyd's introduction, and had not spoken a word.

'That man. He seems like he'll be a troublemaker.'

Park Jin Hyuk wrote on his PDA and showed it to Cha Jun Sung. He was referring to Carlyle, not Lloyd.

An arrogant look.

This young man had an air that he knew he was the best in the world. Parties were about teamwork. It was a headache if they did not communicate well.

'It's too late to be averse to him.'

'Okay.'

Cha Jun Sung spoke like this, but he also had negative thoughts. If he said it badly, he seemed self-righteous. There was a need to watch over him a little more.

# Chapter 20

---

“Hicks from America, this is Smith and Jamie.”

“My name is Kayamoto.”

“Cha Jun Sung.”

“I’m Park Jin Hyuk.”

Everyone left their helpers’ names and used their real names. At that, Cha Jun Sung also revealed his real name. It did not really matter because they were all foreign.

As it became Cha Jun Sung’s turn, Carlyle crossed his arms and looked at him. It was the first time that they were meeting. Why was he staring like that? Did he like men?

‘Gay?’

‘Looks like he’s examining the equipment.’

‘Wow! Has he put down all his courtesy? He’s left quite an intense first impression.’

He did not react to Park Jin Hyuk’s complaint. He could put up with this much and get past it. It would be laughable to start a fight over something like this.

Carlyle motioned a finger at Lloyd. It showed his personality. He was treating someone as old as his father like his dog.

He whispered something in Lloyd's ear. It became the focus of everyone's attention. He spoke so low that Cha Jun Sung could not hear it even with his developed sense of hearing from the body modification.

Lloyd's expression became uncomfortable. He must have been demanding something strange.

“Mister Cha?”

“Do you have something to ask?”

“Excuse me, but is the equipment you're using the best of Class E?”

Cha Jun Sung nodded. He did not hide it. It was something that they could find out if they looked at the points in the store. Once he answered, the questions became stark.

“How many functions are there in the vision aid on your helmet? Is that a space compression bag on your back? How were you able to gather points?”

Cha Jun Sung frowned. This was surpassing courtesy. The other

Lifers who had been watching stopped treating it like someone else's ordeal.

Equipment worth a few tens of thousands. They could not help but be curious. The space compression bag was especially the object of awe.

“Look here. What are you trying to do?”

“Just stay put.”

Park Jin Hyuk went at Lloyd in disbelief and glared at Carlyle. Cha Jun Sung spoke. He was just the messenger.

“What do you want to say? If he's curious, tell him to ask himself.”

“Carlyle is expressing interest in Mr. Cha's equipment. The market price for 1 point is \$70, but he'll give you \$100.”

He said that he would pay the price in diamonds on the spot.

Park Jin Hyuk held his stomach in laughter. He was incredulous. The man is crazy. He is coming into a mission area to do what? Buy equipment? He could not understand.

“I will refuse.”



“If you will sell it, Carlyle will give you his equipment as well. Then there is no issue in going through with the mission. It’s a chance to make a lot of money.”

“No!”

Cha Jun Sung looked past Carlyle to reject.

It did not make sense to sell it in the first place – they were facing a 3000-point mission. In a situation where their lives were at stake, his equipment was invaluable.

“I’ll give you \$200 for every 1 point.”

“No thank you.”

“A bag with \$15 million. I’ll hand the whole thing over with my equipment. What do you think?”

“You brought useless diamonds in a situation where bullets and food are lacking? Did you acquire all of your equipment like this?”

Carlyle must have felt guilty because his expression became cold. The atmosphere was becoming dark because of a rude British man.

‘Let’s go with Plan B.’

‘Call!’

Cha Jun Sung sent him the signal. Park Jin Hyuk accepted his decision delightfully.

Plan A and B.

They did not hold great meanings. A was in the event that they liked the party, B was if they did not. Since they chose B, they were thinking of escaping.

“We will leave the party. Instead, we’ll block off the rear for you.”

“What does that mean?”

“Can you control Carlyle? A party is a team. If there is any one unit that cannot be controlled, it is worse than working alone.”

Carlyle did not understand the concept of a team. He would do everything in the way he pleased it seemed.

3 out of the 10 people in the party were under his influence. Including the one speaking for him, it was 4 people. He had control of 40% of the power.

“Um.....”

“We’ll move on our own somewhere nearby. Only call us when you need to.”

Though it had not worked out well, they were tied together because they had entered as a party. Separating would not be good for anyone. He meant that they would stay together but not ‘stay together’.

“Stop.”

Cha Jun Sung ignored the voice behind him and walked toward the forest.

“Drag him to back him.”

“Drag him?”

He stopped at the offensive tone. Henry and Martin approached him, walking past Lloyd who was laughing in defeat. They must really intend on dragging him back.

“Don’t approach him.”

“Put it down.”

Cha Jun Sung stopped Park Jin Hyuk who was threatening them with his crossbow. Using their weapons was the worst method. It was better not to do something that they could not reverse.

Carlyle showed his teeth to Cha Jun Sung. A pretentious smirk.

“They’re elites in the Special Forces back at home. Should we take a look at what you’ve got?”

“Ha ha!”

Special Forces?

In this world where boundaries have fallen apart, Lifers were murder weapons. It seemed Carlyle thought that he picked the best weapons.

Pat!

Cha Jun Sung moved first to wilt their wills. This place was a hell where common sense did not always work. He was also curious to see what made them so confident.

Seuk.

Henry and Martin did not get surprised and split to either side. It was a cheap trick to split Cha Jun Sung’s attention. Unfortunately, this did not matter.

“Better for me if you separate.”

Cha Jun Sung twisted his body as he kicked at Henry's head.

Henry easily blocked it by putting up both of his arms.

He was puzzled. He had blocked it lightly, but he felt like his body had lifted into the air. Lifers' faces passed him. Everyone looked astonished.

“Kuk!”

Cha Jun Sung first hit Henry's abdomen and he went flying off to the side.

The shock of penetration in his stomach...it was almost too much.

He coughed a rough breath. He would have passed out if he had not been wearing impact tights.

Cha Jun Sung had twice the muscle strength, but Henry would not die from getting beaten thanks to the absorption of his equipment. Cha Jun Sung counted on this and stepped on Henry's body with cruelty.

“If you come at me again, you can expect an arm or leg to break.”

Henry grinded his teeth. His head was clear but his body is not

listening. He had lost embarrassingly. Whether or not he had been prepared, the result was decided.

“Next?”

Cha Jun Sung looked at Martin. He seemed to be very tense since he had watched everything just now. He looked absurd in his hesitation.

“Be careful.”

Henry warned Martin while he was still lying down. He did not know how Cha Jun Sung had gained such strength, but his vision would become white with the wrong hit.

Martin shouted as he stretched out his arm. As expected of someone from the Special Forces, his movement was deliberate. He kept attacking the vitals.

Cha Jun Sung moved his body to avoid all of Martin's attacks. A speed that was neither slow nor fast. This was all thanks to his improved eyesight.

Kwang!

A strong turning kick hit Martin's chest. The strength of his legs was 3 times that of his arms. If it had not been for Martin's equipment, his breastbone would have been shattered and he would have died.

Cough cough!

Martin grabbed his chest and got to his knees. The impact must have pressed on his lungs because he could not stop coughing. Saliva kept coming out of his mouth.

“Body modification?”

“What?”

Smith spoke on a whim. If the reality version was the same as the virtual, there was no way it would be missing body modification, the most important element in fighting mutants.

It was not an item available in Level E. Then did that mean Cha Jun Sung opened a higher level store?

“If that’s true, it means the space compression bag and body modification are in the superior equipment section of Level E..... How many points did you accumulate? Is that even possible?”

The Lifers gave their opinions. He had just fought with his bare hands and left a big impression. It was clear to everyone he would be the most skilled among the 10 people.

Cha Jun Sung shortened the distance between himself and Carlyle who was staring blankly. Lloyd blocked him, but he did not

last long and fell like Henry and Martin did.

“Cover me so they can’t do anything stupid.”

“There there! Please be quiet until he’s done talking.”

Park Jin Hyuk pointed his crossbow at Lloyd. It was an automatic crossbow. At this distance, it was no different from a SMG.

“Don’t come close.”

“Why do I have to follow your orders? Show the confidence you just had.”

“How dare you!”

Carlyle took out the pistol from his waist. It could not have taken more than a second, but Cha Jun Sung was much faster.

A sword was withdrawn and stopped right in front of Carlyle’s forehead. If he had been unable to control his strength, it would have dug into Carlyle’s head.

Carlyle fell to the floor. His bleak face was pitiful.

It had been an instant to change his haughtiness into fear. In the end, he was just an immature asshole. Cha Jun Sung would have



accepted it if he had kept his nose turned up until the end.

“Stupid asshole. Let’s go.”

Kik kik!

He was so pathetic that Cha Jun Sung cursed and went into the forest. Park Jin Hyuk looked at Carlyle as if it served him right and followed.

The Lifers watching the two laughed. Cha Jun Sung seemed impressive, but Carlyle seemed like an idiot.

# Chapter 21

---

“That felt great!”

“This isn’t what we came here for, but it’s hard to meet normal people. It was expected.”

“The world is full of greed.”

“Right. And this place is like heaven and hell where your dreams come true as long as you survive.”

For people who were sick of their lives, Life Mission was a land of opportunity for them to escape reality. It was not impossible to just close their eyes and throw themselves away into the game world.

“Are we really going to support them from the rear?”

“We’ll have to.”

Cha Jun Sung intended on supporting the back as he had said he would. He did not care if he could not catch mutants since he had not entered the mission to gain points.

The goal of this mission was to open Level D for Park Jin Hyuk. They needed to do this for themselves. When their power is suspended, the radius for their activity becomes smaller.

They could become the target for mutants if they fell too far from the party.

He had realized as he did missions that the helper placed them in starting places that were relatively as safe as possible.

As long as they did not go wherever they wanted, they were always placed at the optimal starting point.

“What do you think they’re doing?”

“They’ll have to discuss their plans. Even if their personalities don’t match, they’ll be fine if they can tune them. But it’s dangerous because Carlyle is a maverick who won’t listen to anyone else.”

Cha Jun Sung had spent 10 years in Life Mission. He had been in thousands of parties and he had met all kinds of troublemakers.

Swiping items was commonplace, and there were people who threw others under the bus or ordered their parties around.

What’s yours is mine.

What’s mine is mine.

Your mistakes are your mistakes.

My mistakes are also your mistakes.

He had never ended missions with people like that with a smile.

“Do you think he’s nobility?”

“He could be since he said something about the elite Special Forces.”

There was still nobility in Britain. The boundaries with people had become more relaxed in modern times, but it was difficult to shake off the arrogance of tradition.

His behavior was understandable if he accumulated an enormous wealth and a rich history behind him, though it didn’t change the fact that he was a jerk.

“I’m pretty sure they won’t move from a safe place at night. They don’t have night-vision goggles.”

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk had night vision. It functioned so well that they could see at night as if it were broad daylight. They needed to take advantage of points like this.

“It’s wide.”

“Very.”

Cha Jun Sung examined the forest before him. He could not know how wide the island was. There was no way the helpers would tell them willingly.

The location of the military base was more important than the width of the area. Maybe it was because of the low altitude, but they could not see any towering buildings. It was highly possible that the base was in a basement somewhere.

“Change the vision goggles to thermographics.”

“Okay.”

People were more vulnerable in nature because their senses have degraded in comfortable environments. They would not be able to function without help from their items.

A light came from the vision goggles, changing it to thermographics. It was the disagreeable party members.

“They’re still in the same place.”

“Seems they’re not in a rush.”

The thermographic mode detected heat within 50 meters. Since there was also an infrared mode, they could see organisms who did not have heat signatures as well. The party was not moving. There

were a lot of objects obstructing their view, but they could see each movement through the goggles.

“Huh? Ah..... He’s really trash.”

“Hm!”

A Lifer who seemed to be Carlyle was hitting someone who looked like Henry and Martin. He was venting his anger at Cha Jun Sung out on them.

“Is he really an idiot?”

“I’m pretty sure he’s had everything go his way until now because he was born with a silver spoon.”

It might have been the first indignity he had experienced since birth. He was wrapped up in the thought, ‘How dare someone like he’.

“They don’t have a space compression bag and all they have in terms of weapons are firearms with a silencer.”

“50 points.”

It was a good thing that they brought the silencer, but mutants were sensitive to the smell of gunpowder. They needed to have something like a crossbow at least.

As long as other variables didn't arise, Park Jin Hyuk's crossbow would work. It was pretty powerful. If hit from a close distance, even a Level 2 would be badly wounded.

A silencer could not be underestimated as an advantage. Since it can be reused, it can be used in slaughter as long as it was not broken or lost.

"I'm going."

"Let's keep some distance. Whether we like them or not, we need to help cover the rear."

The party went into the forest without hesitation. Staying still in one place did not help in completing missions. They needed to go through with the mission even if it was dangerous.

Seuk.

Lloyd and the two men stood in a triangle to protect Carlyle. The rest took in their own boundaries as they went forward. They could not trust Hicks and the others.

Carlyle's incompetence had been revealed in the fight just now. The first impression of him was of him slumping to the floor at an attack with a sword.

As an afterthought, they wondered how it would have been if they followed Cha Jun Sung instead.

“It’s peaceful.”

“You can’t let your guard down even for a moment. It can break in an instant.”

It would have been better if the mutants just appeared because they would have focused on battle.

As long as this silence continued, they would have to be consumed in anxiety. But that did not mean in any way that they wanted to fight with the mutants.

“Will they really help us?”

“They will.”

Lloyd responded to Hicks with certainty. If they were going to completely leave the party, they would not have mentioned support.

“They’ll probably be following us from a blind spot.”

The vision goggles sold in the store have a few times the capability of those from the military. They could not hide from them no matter where they tried to go.



‘I’m sure they’ll be 40 to 50 meters from us.’

It was frustrating. A skilled Lifer was more appreciated as the mission is more dangerous. It was a loss to miss out on Cha Jun Sung because of Carlyle.

Carlyle Venter.

Duke Venter’s 2nd son. Because he was spoiled as a child, he had the shortcoming of looking at the world from his standard.

Lloyd also knew.

Telling someone to sell their equipment during a missions was unheard of.

However, he had a duty to act on the orders given by his superior. Even though he became a Lifer, he was a citizen of Britain and soldier under Duke Venter.

He was just holding back because Duke Venter had warned him. He was not blindly holding back. He would be getting that much compensation from Carlyle and his family.

Duke Venter wants Carlyle to become a famous Lifer in Britain. He had pushed him in so he could somehow make a living for himself.

The reality version of Life Mission was already known in places all over the world. Each nation was in the process of gathering as many Lifers as they could.

It had been impossible to prevent the information from leaking because it was mushrooming. In a few months, Lifers' identities would be known to the whole world.

Children from rich families in England got into parties by handing over large sums of money.

Lifers thought of it as a way to make money on the side and did not turn it down because they were making money on top of the points they get for catching mutants.

This was happening outside of England as well.

Life Mission was a different world, but the wealthy advanced faster than those without money. The estimation came out from the way someone like Carlyle without the talent was able to make it so far.

“There is a vacant lot ahead. What do you think about resting while we scout the area?”

“Very well.”

Lloyd was brought back from his thoughts at Hicks' words. There was a limit to moving at night without night vision. It would come in handy to keep places to rest in mind.

Seureuk.

An opening appeared when they cleared the forest.

Smith and Jamie who are rangers went out first to examine the area.

Smith sent the signal that nothing was suspicious. Jamie set up booby traps. Henry and Martin also helped in setting them up with their skillful workmanship.

A cave or something similar was useful. The smaller a place was and the less space there was to guard, the safer Lifers felt.

“Hicks, I looked from the top of a tree but there isn't a building that looked like the military base. It seems the prediction that it's underground is correct.”

Smith's binoculars did not catch anything. Because the island was at a low altitude they had purposefully chosen a high location.

At this height, they would be able to tell buildings apart if they even reached 3 floors.

“Can you find it?”

“I’ll be able to find it but..... the process will be a burden for the party.”

Hicks squirmed his fingers. There was a limit to what the equipment they brought could do.

The longer they stayed in a mission area, the more they are at a disadvantage. If they wasted time in looking for the military base, they would not be able to survive once they penetrated it.

“It’s fine. We can find the path.”

“Path?”

“It’ll automatically appear if we pass it.”

Lloyd organized his thoughts and spoke. It had been years since it had been abandoned. There would be a path somewhere that the mutants used to access it.

“So the path is the entrance?”

“Yes. Do you think they would have been smart enough to erase their trail?”

Hicks waved his hand in denial. Assume that somehow they had erased it the first time.

To repeat this for several years? Even a thorough person would find it bothersome later. What was the point of that on an island where no one looked for them?

“The night vision would have been of great help in finding the path.”

Hicks complained that it was a waste. He could not be sure how many functions there were in Cha Jun Sung’s goggles, but it would have been helpful if they had it.

Hicks wanted to work with people he was comfortable with as well, but he held back. If they scattered here, they would be divided. They needed to maintain this group even if it was fragile.

One needed to be quick in everything. He envied Cha Jun Sung who fell out of the group.

“Everyone here for a second.”

Lloyd called the party. All members except Carlyle gathered.

“As you know, time is gold to us. Instead of wasting it on looking for a path, it’s right to go into the military base.”

“Do you have a method?”

“We’ll have to lure them and follow their route.”

“It’s dangerous but we’ll save on time if it works.”

“How can we lure them if we’ve used the odorless spray? Have you bought the bloody meat or something from the store? Ha ha!”

## Chapter 22

---

From afar, Park Jin Hyuk picked his ear with his finger.

“We don’t need to think so deeply into it. I mean someone will become the bait.”

The expressions of the party members hardened at the mention of bait. If they had not heard wrong, he meant for someone to become live bait to lure the mutants.

“It’s a joke. If we make a small wound and put the blood in a specific location, I’m sure they’ll come looking for it. We can follow after hiding.”

They would have come up with a precise operation if the opponent were human, but there was no need to go that far with mutants. This was a simple, yet effective method.

“The person who will make the wound.....?”

“Since I brought it up, I’ll do it. Let’s look for a location.”

As Lloyd claimed it, Hicks’ people brightened. They were not scared of making a wound, but they did not like the thought of what could happen if the mutants caught scent of the wound.

Tatak.

The party's movement became active as they now had a task to complete. They would save time if they succeeded or would have to keep looking if they did not. There was nothing to lose.

\*\*\*

The party members hid behind a boulder and tree. They had chosen the location to lure the mutants to as an open place about 30m away.

Seukuk.

Lloyd cut his hand with a dagger.

As the sharp blade cut along his palm, blood flowed out.

The flow became stronger as he squeezed his wrist. A small amount might not carry the smell very far even with the wind. and he needed to make it count.

Seuk.

He wiped his hands with a clean cloth and put ointment on it. As soon as he put the medicine on, a scab formed.

He stayed on the spot and used the odorless spray. If he cleaned the blood while he moved, they would not be able to control the



smell. He needed to take care of it in one spot.

The party members were waiting behind a projection. The projection was a camouflage item that let objects pass through while hiding up to 10 people.

Lloyd's party had invested 1000 points on the projection. They had survived a few times because of it. It was compatible with the odorless spray.

“That’s fascinating.”

“There are a lot of cool things when you look through the store.”

It was impossible to look inside from outside, but the reverse was possible. Just as there were items necessary in battle, there were items necessary to survival.

Jiing.

Lloyd joined them. When Henry covered them with the projection, a boulder and tree appeared, erasing all traces of the party. Perfect camouflaging.

From then, they waited in silence for the mutants to appear.

\*\*\*

They started getting hungry 2 hours after they set up the trap. A strange sound came from one side of the forest. No one suspected that it was a mutant.

Hwak.

There was a fishy smell. The smell of blood. It had been long since Lloyd's blood had hardened. This was fresh – like that of an animal that had just been slaughtered.

The human sense of smell was not sensitive. But it was clear that it was nearby. And then, in a matter of a few blinks, there was a mutant in front of them.

It is a biped and similar to a human being. The differences were in its sharp teeth, awl-like fingers and toenails, and arms and legs that seemed a bit too long.

‘Cannibal!’

‘There's no way all 1500 mutants mentioned in the scenario are cannibals?’

Cannibal.

It was the strongest creature in Level 1. Its physical ability was that of a sturdy man, but its speed was supreme.

With a crafty personality, it had the habit of figuring out the opponent's disadvantage while fighting.

Facing one cannibal was like going up against 3 or 4 mid-Level 1 mutants.

Sniff sniff.

The cannibal looked around and put his nose to Lloyd's blood. It seemed to like the smell by the way it kept flaring its nose.

Its bumpy tongue licked the blood. The party members shivered when thinking about something so hideous running its tongue along their skin.

Kwajik.

The cannibal ate something it had been holding in its hand. It had been chewed to the point where it was unrecognizable, but it looked like a mutant.

He ate it ravenously. The large piece of meat was gone in seconds and its stomach bulged. It was an amount that a person would not have been able to eat.

It did not leave even after eating the meat. Looking at it closely, it was hesitating around the area where Lloyd's blood had fallen. It wanted more.

The party members watched this for dozens of minutes while hiding behind the projection. Every second felt like a minute. They just wanted for it to go away.

Seuk.

Their desperation was rewarded when the cannibal left the blood and turned its back.

‘Are we going to follow it?’

‘Not yet.’

Lloyd shook his head. If the cannibal was using its head, they would be caught as soon as they went out. They needed to take some time instead of going out right away.

30 minutes passed after the cannibal disappeared. At that point, they put the projection away.

There was a limit to how long they could hide. With this much time, it was okay for them to slowly follow it.

Lloyd searched the ground. Since it had not been long since it left, it left its trace in broken twigs and footsteps.

“Let’s go.”

The party got their equipment together and followed Lloyd. The search had started.

Rustle.

It was after the cannibal and Lloyd's party had disappeared. Bushes nearby rustled as something raised its head.

Kiki!

A rough face drew a dark line. Another cannibal was looking in the direction that the party had gone in. It was a horrific scene.

Papat!

The cannibal hid its trace. It looked like the party who had set up a trap to lure the mutants were the ones being lured instead.

\*\*\*

“What is that?”

“A trap.”

“Not that. Why is it so smart? It would put Zhuge Liang to shame.”

If Zhuge Liang had heard this, he would have been astonished. One of the most accomplished strategists of the past being compared to cannibals.

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk had witnessed everything from the start to finish.

When the first cannibal appeared, the second had settled in the bushes without moving. It looked like a lookout just in case it was a trap.

It seemed to be a case where they knew of the party's existence but did not know its exact location. Its smile when the party folded the projection proved this.

The situation was like a snake luring itself with its own tail and ripping it apart to get eaten. The party thought that it had succeeded in luring the cannibal, but it had dug its own grave.

They were Lifers who had gone through everything, but they could not have dreamed that a Level 1 would use such strategy like a high level mutant.

They had gotten caught in a trap so easily. Cha Jun Sung did not consider them stupid. He would have fallen for it as well if he had been in their position.

“Don't we need to go and tell them? They'll be annihilated like

that.”

Park Jin Hyuk was right. If left alone, they would get trapped and become the cannibals’ food. If they ran to tell them now, they could stop it.

“They might be able to find the military base too.”

“That’s so, but I feel wrong about using people as live bait.”

Park Jin Hyuk was pure like his young age. Cha Jun Sung did not want to do it either, but they could get dragged into it as well if they acted too quickly.

“We don’t have the responsibility of saving them just because we saw what happened.”

It may have sounded cold, but it was the truth. To put their lives on the line for others? They could do that, but only as long as they were people worth doing that for.

At this moment, Cha Jun Sung was not bothered by being on the sidelines.

He was just sorry that just as the party had lured the mutant to find the base, he was using the party though it could be dangerous.

“Let’s help them if we get the chance. Then we’ll have to follow

them, won't we?"

"Yes!"

Park Jin Hyuk's face brightened. Cha Jun Sung did not want them to be killed either. It was better the more Lifers there were. If they had the chance, they would help in any way they could.

If not..... they would leave them.



# Chapter 23

---

Cha Jun Sung scanned the area with his goggles and slowly followed. If a battle ensued, an explosion would go off and their location would be revealed anyway.

He was a beginner at chasing but since he knew the direction that the cannibals and party had gone, he could just go straight without going off route.

The interval of time between Cha Jun Sung and the party members was 10 minutes.

They thought that the party would be slow because it was a forest but the thermographic goggles could not detect them.

“What do you think Field of Meat means? It seems to be related to cannibals.”

“As in meat.”

The mission name was the mission itself. In explicit situations, they could figure out what mutant it was before being summoned. Field of Meat lacked that kind of hint.

“Should we try figuring out the meaning?”

“He he!”

There was no need to figure it out too deeply. Meat referred to the meat of cattle, and the field meant land to grow crops on.

Putting the words together, it was Field of Meat. It was a strange combination.

“Meat farm?”

“Could be since they can’t have just eaten whatever they wanted on this isolated island for years. My thoughts are a little different though.”

Cultivating could be used to mean herding. It could be possible from the behavior they just showed, but their patience would not allow for it.

Park Jin Hyuk’s eye shone. He wanted Cha Jun Sung to hurry up and tell him because he was curious.

“It seems like a meat warehouse.”

“Farm or warehouse, same thing.”

“There’s a difference between cultivating it and saving it. I’m positive the cannibals have a warehouse where they gathered their provisions. All we have to do is confirm that and escape.”

“That’s random.”

“What is?”

“It doesn’t matter for missions like annihilation because you can just kill everyone, but there was always a fair reason for ones where the goal was attainment. It’s too random.”

Annihilation and escape was just killing and running away, so the mission scenarios were not complex. In attainment, they needed to complete a duty to complete the mission.

In the attainment missions that Park Jin Hyuk had completed until now, there had always been a fair reason.

Situations like destroying mutant hatcheries to stop their breeding, connecting the electricity in a demolished building, or quickly reaching another area.

However, Field of Meat was to check a plantation, warehouse, whatever it was, and escape.

This was where his question arose. What were they supposed to do once they checked it?

He had just thought that was how it was just in the beginning, but this was an island and there were cannibals – he realized that it was not just a regular attainment mission when he linked the food issue.

“What’s it to us if it’s random? Did we pay attention to things like that when we accepted missions?”

“That’s true!”

All they had to do was complete it to go on to Level D. The rest did not matter.

“It seems they went pretty far.”

“I’ll say. I think it’s been an hour since we started following them and we still haven’t caught up to them.”

With the search range on the goggles, they could speedily prepare for any danger.

Therefore, they were moving pretty fast. Under the pressure that they needed to follow the cannibal, the party members in comparison could not help but be slow. At this point, they needed to catch up to them.

Ack!

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk hid behind a large tree. One of the party members was screaming. Something had happened. Had they gotten caught in the cannibals’ trap?

“I can’t catch them on the thermographics.”

“That means they’re at least 50m away.”

“I’ll go left.”

“I’ll go right.”

It was better to share the work instead of setting up an unnecessary boundary. The two went along each of their routes and carefully approached where the sound came from.

He controlled the distance with the thermographic goggles in mind. After advancing a few dozen meters, it flushed in heat with the detection of several living beings.

There are a lot. It is difficult to count the exact number in these circumstances, but an estimated 50 or 60 mutants were closing in on the party members.

‘Jun Sung, what is that solid thing? The thing that’s tying the Lifers down.’

‘A net?’

The party was caught in a net woven intricately like a spider web so that they could not move. Like a net tightening in on its prize, it made movement awkward.

Hihi!

Kyakya!

The cannibals did not attack the party members. They acted as if they were observing monkeys at a zoo. It seemed they had no intention to kill them.

‘Save them?’

Cha Jun Sung contemplated it. As his thoughts turned, he calculated their gains and losses.

## ***50 mutants?***

They could win if they attacked. If Park Jin Hyuk just covered him well, he could cut the net and work with the party members.

‘I’m reluctant.’

‘Jun Sung?’

‘If they’re going to kill them, they’ll act on it. Wait until they move.’

They caught the Lifers but were not killing them. He could not figure out the cannibals' plans.

Who could tell if that was also a trap?

There was an impending flow and they need to figure out what that flow was. Caution was key.

\*\*\*

‘Save us!’

‘I don’t want to die like this!’

‘Ack!’

The party screamed like crazy.

To be rescued.

To be helped.

Their voices just echoed inside because they were being shocked by the electrical net. They only had their five senses. They were paralyzed except for their eyes flitting back and forth.

‘How could something like a cannibal have an item like this.....’

Lloyd felt as if what had happened to the party was a dream.

Cannibals that had been waiting high in trees had dropped the net. A shocking current had gone through their bodies and they were unable to move.

Where could they have gone wrong? It was all so sudden. They were trying to lure the mutants, but they had been lured instead.

Electric net.

It is a capture item that can be bought in the store for 500 points.

A mutant under Level 2 becomes paralyzed under the net and is not able to get out. But he himself had been caught under it instead of a mutant.

‘You laid out the method! Figure out a solution!’

Hicks looked at Lloyd with despair and resentment. He did not care about politeness or courtesy when they were about to be killed like dogs.

Lloyd accepted Hicks’ resentment. There was no solution.

They could not speak and their bodies were not listening. They had not imagined that the cannibals would be so smart. An electric



net on top of that.

‘I’m sure he’ll be watching?’

Lloyd suddenly thought about Cha Jun Sung. He was by far the best Lifer he has seen thus far. His comrade Park Jin Hyuk was no joke either.

Since they had spoken as if they would follow from behind, they could have been watching the scene. He hoped that they would come to the rescue, but the reality was the gutter. There were too many cannibals.

Cha Jun Sung needed to take some risk if they wanted to save the party. If any of the party members had to make the same choice, they would choose safety instead.

‘Why aren’t they killing us?’

The cannibals did not do anything other than observe them.

They played around and yelled. It felt like they were subordinates who had completed their tasks and were waiting to report to their seniors.

Keureung!

Kik!

They heard an uncanny cry.

The cannibals straightened their shoulders and stood to either side.

A mutant 2 heads taller than the cannibals came and walked over to the party members. Their expressions were that of horror.

‘Evil Cannibal!’

‘We’re done.’

It was a desperate situation – the evil cannibal was an adult cannibal. Visually, it just looked longer, but it actually had 3 times the physical strength of a regular cannibal.

They could not guarantee beating it even if they had full use of their equipment.

Kuku!

The evil cannibal pushed its face toward the party members. They wanted to die every time the vicious pupil scanned over their entire bodies.

That would’ve been better than being ripped apart in a painful death.

Kwak!

Kyak!

The evil cannibal waved its hands and laid down orders. The cannibals were going to take them out of the net and take them to headquarters.

“Let me go, you assholes!”

“Ack!”

Puk puk!

As soon as the shock was released, Smith and Jamie struggled. The cannibals swung at their heads with their primitive bodies.

Since they were hit without their equipment, they just fell like corpses. This anger was vented on others as well.

All 8 people who were hit because of the 2 who struggled became quiet.

Kukya!

The cannibals were returning. They seemed to be happy because

they succeeded in their hunt. A few even danced.

## Chapter 24

---

“If we had gotten involved, there would have been a struggle.”

“A struggle would have been fortunate.”

Cha Jun Sung who had been watching in hiding let out his breath. The cannibals disappeared from the goggles. They had not been picked up in the cannibals' senses because they were far off.

“If I had fought the evil cannibal, I'm pretty sure you would have had to handle all of the cannibals.”

“That's too much.”

Park Jin Hyuk waved the notion away. If it had been a small space like the underpass, the space he had to cover would've been limited and it could have worked.

A sniper was most appreciated as support, not as the main.

This was a forest. They might have been able to do something if they had already claimed their spots from a distance, but they would not last long if they approached them in this state.

If cannibals appeared from everywhere, they would die helplessly even if the heavens sent a sharpshooter down to them. They might even curse the heavens.

“It’s different from the virtual version.”

“Are you saying that reality can change at any time unlike the virtual where everything is already decided?”

Cha Jun Sung nodded.

His brain held extensive information on Life Mission. He could think of a mutant’s name, skill, and weakness just by looking at its face.

Though it was just the virtual version, he had run his blog for 10 years and had gone up to a high position – past the super rankers.

His last Evil Queen raid was still a legend.

“The mutants in the virtual version moved in a system, but the mutants in reality move on their own. The difference between an existing limit and the lack of one. This difference is creating variables that Lifers can’t expect.”

The cannibals had built certain ranks albeit barbaric. They were even putting good use to Lifers’ items that they had somehow gotten their hands on.

They had developed the learning ability to use tools and remember things they had seen. This would not have been possible

in the virtual version where they followed the system.

Just as ancient people had followed the steps to become modern humans, it looked like the mutants were following the same steps.

“What are you going to do?”

“Should we give up?”

“Are you serious?”

“Joking.”

They could not give up now when this was the beginning. Cha Jun Sung looked at the ground. The cannibals had left a clear trace.

If they had used a mix of traces and hunches to come here, now they were going to follow only by looking at the floor. The military base would be where the trail ends.

\*\*\*

Kuok!

The cannibals and evil cannibal went into a cave among crevices.

Is the base inside a cave? It is the best location to avoid sightings from outside. A few cannibals were standing guard at the entrance.

“Is that the only entrance?”

“That’s the worst.”

They looked all over the area, but there was only one entry into the base. If they wanted to infiltrate, they had no choice but to go where they would be seen.

“There are 2 guards.”

“We need to go closer. There’s a limit to what the goggles can pick up because of the distance.”

From 50m, there were only 2 cannibals. Since they could not just go barging in, they needed to get at least 10m from the cave to identify what was inside.

“There’s less cover as we get closer. It’s dangerous if you think of their senses.”

“Hm..... we can’t stay here.”

“Even if we kill the guards or lure them somewhere and somehow succeed in infiltrating, we don’t know how many are inside. As long as we’re checking it, let’s do it right.”



Cha Jun Sung left Park Jin Hyuk where they were and disappeared for 10 minutes before returning. They needed a simple experiment to take on the cannibals.

“Let’s go up that tree. It’s possible, right?”

“I don’t think I can do it.”

Park Jin Hyuk looked at the tree and shook his head. It was about 20m high. The support was not very sturdy either. He could not climb it with his muscular strength.

“Get on my back.”

“Huh?”

“Hurry.”

Park Jin Hyuk put all of their equipment in the space compression bag and got on his back. Cha Jun Sung felt the heavy weight and carefully went up the tree.

The two weighed over 160kg with all of their equipment. Even with the body modification, he would not have been able to climb up if his basic strength had been terrible.

“After 1 and 6 minutes, I’m going to set off a shot at 150m on

either side.”

“Ah! They’ll come out in hordes.”

“If the cannibals were standing guard on a schedule, only the ones that were on duty will come out. The others won’t pay attention to it.”

The feeling of being annoyed was existent regardless of species, an emotion that all living beings have in common. Even cannibals will want to rest during their breaks.

The cannibals that come out to the noise will be the ones on duty at the time.

They had brought 8 sonic grenades to create disturbances. There were 6 left. He had set up 2 just in case because changes could happen at any time.

Wiing!

The first grenade went off. It was fine because it went off from afar, but anyone who had been in front of it would have gone deaf.

Kyak?

Kya!

The first to react were the 2 guards. As soon as they yelled in the direction of the noise, dozens of cannibals rushed out of the cave.

‘2, 5, 7, 15, 20.’

Cha Jun Sung counted their heads. There are 20 guards. 20 cannibals left the entrance and looked for the noise. No more came out.

Wiing!

After a moment, the 2nd grenade went off. The cannibals that had gone running left changed their direction and went the opposite way. The entrance remained the same.

Cha Jun Sung’s postulation had been correct. The cannibals on break did not care what was going on outside.

“Get on my back! We need to go inside!”

“Let me know your plans beforehand!”

Park Jin Hyuk frowned. Cha Jun Sung was saying they needed to go inside the cave without giving him time to get ready. His body was already getting on his back though.

Tak!

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk who descended as if falling infiltrated the cave. Their heart beat faster. They were experiencing fear and bliss at the same time.

Entry into the cave was linear. They could not turn around once they entered.

Papat!

“The path splits.”

“That’s blood.”

Cha Jun Sung slid his finger along the blood on the ground. It was still wet. It must be that of the party members that had been dragged away by the cannibals.

“We’re going down the middle.”

“I think my heart is going to burst.”

They chose the middle of the 3 paths. It would all be the same because they were all new places, but probability told them to go through the middle.

As they went further inside, the more it went from a dank cave to a military base. Nothing could be done about the waste of time, but the structure itself became more complex.

“Since it’s a large place, let’s look for a place to hide first.”

“Sure.”

It was a place where 1500 soldiers used to work. If it had been created for daily life, there would have been a lot of separate spaces for rooms or warehouses.

They said it had become a lair for cannibals, but an empty place would come out if they searched for it.

# Chapter 25

---

Drip drip.

Carlyle struggled to open his eyes at the sound of water dripping. As he was hanging upside down, his vision was upside down as well.

His brain started moving and trying to figure out what was happening like putting pieces of a puzzle together.

‘Ah.....’

They had been following the cannibal when an electric net fell on them and he had been hit over the head a few times. He was surprised they were still alive.

He was caught up in his thoughts. Though he was only the second, he was of a noble aristocratic family. He was not someone who should be captured by mutants.

‘I don’t want to go on this mission.’

‘You have to go. Look at your brother and sister. Until when are you going to fall behind them?’

He recalled the conversation he had with his father, Duke Venter. He had been forced to come here when he did not want to.

He had been nervous. There were countless dangerous obstacles even in a 1500-point mission, but 3000? It was beyond his capabilities.

‘But my brother and sister are geniuses.’

‘You brat!’

His father had always been disappointed in him. Because his oldest son and daughter had the poise of nobility, but he did not?

However, Carlyle only thought this because he did not know. There is no child that a parent does not love. No matter what, he was a son.

Duke Venter pushed Carlyle so that he might find his own calling. And he put Special Forces on him for his safety.

Duke Venter’s true feelings were delivered incorrectly to Carlyle.

Carlyle lifted his head. As he was hanging, he did not see the ceiling but the floor.

There was a small puddle of blood. He had thought that water was dripping from somewhere, but it had been blood falling from a wound.

“Euk!”

“Keuk!”

After Carlyle, the party members slowly came to their senses one by one. Thankfully, no one had been beaten to death.

“Huh?”

“Ack!”

Hicks and Smith, who came to their senses, began to go mad. All of the party members reacted similarly. They were looking at hell.

Unidentifiable bundles of blood were hanging like they were.

There was a mix of those with hardened blood because they had been dead for a long time, those where the blood was still draining, and some that were still breathing weakly.

The mutants were using them for food. This was their meat locker.

Carlyle did not know this even though he was the first to wake up. There was no way he could know unless he had eyes on the back of his head.



“Pe, people...!”

“Lifers. They’re Lifers!”

They killed mutants every day. Slaughtered meat did not scare them.

The party members were scared because of the human corpses hanging along with the mutants. To be precise, they were surprised that they were looking at Lifers like themselves.

The PDA on their wrists was the proof. The body Hicks was looking at did not have organs.

Their stomachs had been split opened. Looking closely, they did not have eyeballs and the parts with a lot of meat like the arms, butt, and thighs had been cut out.

Their eyes followed the blood that fell from the corpses. At the end, there were tools that could be found in a butcher shop and a cutting board as large as a table.

Shining blood, pieces of flesh and organs floating around.

It was grotesque just to look at, but they could not imagine going through it. Basically, humans were becoming meals for cannibals.

They each counted the number of corpses they could see from

their positions. From what they could see, they counted 15 bodies.

“15.....”

“How many parties have died? Hee hee! Is it 23 including us?”

Hicks mumbled madly. He wished he could go mad instead.

How could they maintain their sanity? All of their equipment had been taken while they were sleeping and all they had left were their PDAs and a set of tights.

It seemed they were just thinking of it as a skin to take off later. If the impact tights were easy to take off, they would have been naked already.

[You have confirmed the situation in Field of Meat. Please escape to the summons area.]

“Escape? Don’t be funny! I already gave up on this mission!”

“Me too!”

[You are in a state without freedom. You cannot exit the mission.]

“Shut up!”

“Send us back immediately!”

This was not a children's playground. Reckless abandonment was not an option.

"How noisy. Be quiet unless you all want to be cooked."

"Who?"

"Could it be a survivor?"

They heard an unfamiliar voice but could not find the direction because they were upside down. They did not have their translators, but they could understand. He was speaking in English.

"Your lives are at high risk as it is. Your lifespan will be shortened if you keep jabbering like that."

"Hey! Where are you?"

"Are you on the side of the cannibals? Get us loose first!"

They had hope for their lives. They ignored the warning and grew louder.

If they could just be untied and reunited with their equipment, they could kill all of the mutants or escape this damned mission.

“We’ll do anything!”

“There’s no answer. I’m locked in here just like you guys are. How can I get you loose?”

“This asshole!”

Hicks shouted in anger. The meat warehouse rang to the point where everyone else’s voices were covered. That called in their misery.

Keurung!

A beast’s growling that could not have come from a human – and the sound grew closer. A cold sweat dripped down the party members’ spines.

“The chef is here. I mourn for whoever it will be.”

His voice darkened. It was full of blame for their stupidity.

Bang!

As the crude steel doors opened, the chef that the survivor mentioned came in. An evil cannibal. It was fittingly fat for something that maintained the meat locker.

The party members froze like plaster. They just trembled as if they had malaria. The words that he mourned for one person kept turning in their heads.

There was no way not to understand what this meant unless they were stupid. 1 of the 8 people would be going into the chef's stomach.

The chef poked each person with its finger. Then he took the ropes tying their legs and pulled them up and down as if weighing them.

He looked at Hicks. The selection criteria was uncertain, but he had been chosen.

“It can't be!”

Bang!

The chef cut the rope holding Hicks and dragged him to the cutting board.

“I don't want to die!”

Hicks fervently moved his body, but it was no use. The party did not speak as if their mouths had been locked shut because they did not want to call the attention to themselves.

The chef placed Hicks on the cutting board. It pressed down on his chest so he could not move and brought the cleavers that had been lying in the corner down on his shoulder.

Kyak!

A fountain of blood spewed. The white of Hicks' eyes showed. It felt like thousands of ants were eating his skin. An indescribable pain.

The chef chewed on the arm whole. It ate ravenously. One arm must have been too little because it cut the other and ate it as well. Next was the legs.

Hicks died of a heart attack once his arms and legs were cut off. If he had survived that pain, he would have died from bleeding out or something worse.

The chef burped and put the corpse with just a head and torso in a large container. It was going to save it for later since it was full now.

Seuk.

Clang!

The chef went towards the party members, loosened the rope

tying them up, paired them off, and locked them in pens fit for animals.

It had learned from experience that they would die if left hanging for too long.

Kwang!

The door closed and the chef left the meat locker. The party looked at the dead Hicks and realized that their turn would not be long.

“He won’t come for another half day.”

“Half day.....”

“Keep in mind that 1 person always dies each time he comes. If we’re unlucky, it’s 2 people.”

The meat locker was the chef’s area, but the meat was shared by all of the cannibals. It could not keep all of the meat to itself when it thought of the other evil cannibals.

Seuk.

Lloyd turned his head in the direction of the voice.

The meat locker was dim. The shape was hazy, but the owner of the voice was sitting up not far away. He was also locked up.

“My name is Lloyd. Can we ask you to explain the situation?”

“Gladly.”

He was just waiting for the day he died. Explaining was nothing difficult.



# Chapter 26

---

Kyak!

It was weak, but Cha Jun Sung heard it. His amplified hearing caught the sound of a person's scream.

It seemed one of the party members taken away by the cannibals had died. He felt bad for him but that was it. There was nothing that they could do for the party in the present.

“It's a scream.”

“I didn't hear it..... Can you tell where it is?”

“No.”

He might have been able to locate it if it came out in a series, but it would be difficult to figure that out with one yell. He did get something out of it however. Thanks to the sound, he could tell the approximate direction.

The two of them waited in a storage room to observe the situation. Cannibals wandered around outside, but they did not come in.

This place held conventional weapons right before the disposal, so it was full of scrap metal or broken supplies. The residents

before the cannibals, the soldiers, had put them in here.

Park Jin Hyuk's keen eye had discovered this place. Cannibals do not have a concept of cleaning. They thought that they had nothing to worry about as long as they did not do anything that would call attention to them.

Chichik!

"This..... The walls must be so thick that the goggles can't function properly."

"How much of the energy is left?"

"24%."

"I have 26%. We only have 4 charging kits. If we don't save it, we won't last for more than a few days."

"6 hours per charging kit, 12 hours on power save mode, 24 to 48 hours at most since we have 4, so it's 27 to 54 hours with the remaining energy."

The 50m search range was drastically reduced because not only were they underground, but there were a lot of concrete and iron structures. It barely reached a fourth of its normal range.

Tak.

Cha Jun Sung took out his share of the 2 charging kits and handed them to Park Jin Hyuk. Park Jin Hyuk did not say anything and took them. He knew what it meant.

“Gather them.”

“Okay.”

Cha Jun Sung was a blader. He was an expert in melees, so he did not really need to use it. Instead of taking turns using it, it was better to give them all to the sniper.

“We can’t keep staying here..... Should we kill them as we go or hide as we go?”

“There are pros and cons.”

“If we kill them as we go, we’ll reduce their numbers but we’ll be revealing our presence. If we hide as we go, we’ll avoid being seen but we’ll have to keep on alert.”

Park Jin Hyuk stroked his chin. He thought for a moment and hardened his expression.

“Let’s go bold.”

“Bold?”

“Lure them into a narrow passage where a surprise attack is impossible and kill everything that comes. Throw a grenade once too many come; we have plenty of supplies.”

10,000 only in bullets, they had packed dozens of different types of bombs including fever shots and grenades. They also had a few remote control claymores even if they had never used them before.

They had filled the space compression bag. If they had anything left over after the mission, they could use it later. It was better to be over prepared.

“I saw a place where we can do this on the way here. It’s close.”

Maybe because Park Jin Hyuk had gotten used to life in the underpass, he was first to identify other locations like places to hide or run away to.

He had memorized the path and characteristics of the structure while they were finding this storage room.

“Your role will be important.”

“I might be on top in terms of firepower, but it’s hollow without you, Jun Sung.”

The cannibals who could only attack in a straight line in a

confined space, one shot of the powerful sniper rifle would go through 2 or 3 of them.

If there were too many for them to handle, they could clear it with one grenade at a time.

However, if they did not have Cha Jun Sung actively fighting on the forefront, they would not be able to focus on the fire support no matter how strong the attack was.

“Let’s go out.”

“Sure.”

Click!

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk checked their equipment and left the storage room. It is not something they would have been able to do in the open forest, but it would be possible here.

\*\*\*

An arrow pierced the forehead of a cannibal turning in the alley. It died instantly. As the smell of the blood spread, more cannibals started gaining interest.

Cha Jun Sung took out the arrow. They could not underestimate the advantage of recycling.

12 died with one. They could kill hundreds if they came one at a time, but only as long as the situation arose.

Park Jin Hyuk laid on his stomach at the end of the alley with his eye to the scope. The sniper rifle did not shake because it was placed on top of the cradle.

They were done researching the area. It was a space so tight it was frustrating. There was a door behind Park Jin Hyuk, but it was storage full of useless material.

This entire area seemed to be designated to storage. Regardless, it was a good space for the them to face many. They would kill them as they saw them.

Kyak!

Pew!

As soon as a cannibal appeared, Park Jin Hyuk's sniper rifle fired before Cha Jun Sung's red fire did. His reaction was as good as a sniper's should be.

Pew pew!

Cha Jun Sung had nothing to do and observed. They died even if he left them alone. He was helping by staying out of the line of fire.

They did not dwell on the points. They were comrades who would share billions of points in the future. Sincere trust could not be traded for anything.

“Your aim is good.”

“I’m not really aiming either.”

It was the truth. He was not even moving the cradle. The cannibals were putting themselves in the line of the scope. It was all thanks to the small space.

Papat!

“They’re coming.”

“Confirmed.”

The floor vibrated and the sound came. They could feel more than 100.

They came in hordes because none of them had returned from this place and there was the smell of gunpowder.

Cannibals remember the smell of gunpowder. Before Cha Jun Sung, they had suffered a lot of damages because of Lifers who tried to fight back before they were taken away.

Cha Jun Sung held up his red fire. There won't be time to take his finger off the trigger. All that was left to do was to shoot until the battle was over.

It was obvious that they would try to overwhelm them with volume. Using the sword would not help.

They could be pushed back if they all came rushing in at the same time. Cha Jun Sung went to the front of the alley to slow them down as they rushed in.

“It's bloody.”

Kyak!

The cannibals discovered Cha Jun Sung who had appeared suddenly, acted surprised, and glared. They stared at him.

Pew pew!

The red fire set to serial emptied its magazine. The forefront of the cannibals unexpectedly became meat shields for those in the back because they were pushed in.

Beep beep.

Cha Jun Sung hit the switch of the fever shot he set for 10



seconds and threw it above the cannibals' heads. He could not see where it fell.

He made sure they could not get in with the red fire and counted 10 seconds with the clock on his PDA. With 2 seconds, he escaped to where Park Jin Hyuk was stationed.

Bam!

Kyak!

A fiery heat engulfed the cannibals. Because there was a destruction radius, the aftermath did not affect Cha Jun Sung who had turned the corner of the alley.

The destruction radius of the fever shot was 15m. If someone was even 1cm outside of this, he wouldn't suffer any damages. The compressed heat was released to that distance exactly.

“Come take a look. It's a spectacle.”

“Where!”

Park Jin Hyuk put his sniper rifle down and ran over quickly. He was speechless at the devastation created by the fever shot. It had burned everything.

“It's no joke.”

“I threw one and it’s like that.”

It did not kill all of the cannibals. 70%? The remaining 30% were not in good condition either.

The ones that had been burned badly were melted and staying alive with their bodies in half liquid state. There were only a few that were capable of movement.

“I’ll be back there.”

“Okay.”

He ended their lives with the crossbow. It would take time for them to come rushing in again. He took care of the rest of the cannibals because he could not just sit around.

He recovered all of the arrows. Bullets are not infinite. He was thinking of saving them as much as possible. They would decrease if he used them without thought.

Cha Jun Sung took out the empty magazine. They had plenty of bullets, but only 9 magazines. It would be a problem if they ran out during battle. He needed to keep them filled up beforehand.

Kereung!

Cha Jun Sung was filling the magazine when he shifted his eyes to the side. There were suddenly a group of cannibals in numbers similar to the last group staring at him and drooling.

Tak.

The last bullet indicated a full magazine. The 30-bullet magazine was complete.

“Sorry.”

He was going to play them a song as an apology for keeping such important guests waiting. Prelude to Massacre with the guests' screams set as the base.

# Chapter 27

---

“I’m going to throw up.”

“I thought I’d gotten used to it, but I guess not as the degree gets more severe.”

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk frowned as they looked at the cannibal corpses.

There was no full body. Even if they had died whole, they had been blown up by the fever shots and grenades.

The alley they are standing in was flooded with the cannibals’ blood, flesh, bones, and guts. They felt sick as they looked at it.

The cannibals stopped approaching because they died every time they entered.

They had realized that they were at a disadvantage no matter what they did. They resented that the two had infiltrated their roost, but they did not have clear measures to take. All they could do was wait.

“They have learning ability.”

“If it had been like the blood-sucking insects, they would have really showed us their numbers.”

“How many did you kill?”

“Roughly 300? How about you?”

“Similar.”

In theory, there was still a long way to annihilation. They could have expanded their numbers by breeding, but it was a Level E mission. It did not look like that would be the case.

“They act pretty smart. How do we catch them?”

“Don’t you think we can fool them into thinking we’re out of bullets if we act like it?”

“You think they’ll fall for it?”

“Seeing how they lured the party to put an electric net over them, it seems they have the ability to remember what they saw or learned, but they lack improvisation.”

They had suffered huge losses when they tried to push in with sheer numbers. If they really had intelligence comparable to that of humans, 600 of them would not have died.

Since they had witnessed the deaths of their kin, the methods they used until now would no longer work.

However, if they acted like they were out of bullets, they would think that there was no longer any threat and start fighting again.

“Shall we try it?”

“Show them your acting skills. Just keep in mind that I can’t act, so I can’t do it.”

Park Jin Hyuk pushed Cha Jun Sung and went back to his station. Cha Jun Sung needed to start acting suddenly. To cannibals.

Pew pew!

Kyak!

Cha Jun Sung randomly shot at the cannibals watching him. A program was unnecessary. They would be able to tell once he showed them the results.

Click!

“I don’t have bullets? Did I run out? I’m going to die now!”

Ugh!

Park Jin Hyuk squirmed in embarrassment. Cha Jun Sung pretended he did not see this and continued acting.

He locked the gun. Bullets did not come out no matter how many times he pulled the trigger.

One cannibal could not resist its curiosity and approached Cha Jun Sung. The others did not let their guards down and watched.

“Are you asking for a one-on-one match? I’m sure I’ll have to kill you without a gun to make them less suspicious?”

Cha Jun Sung brandished his sword. The pale blade appeared. He thought it might back down but it stayed put.

“Come on, you ugly thing.”

Kyak!

The cannibal expanded. It was moving that quickly.

Cha Jun Sung was calm. It was a narrow space. No matter how fast it was, it was in his palm. It would have been harder to face if it had been blindly strong.

Cha Jun Sung swung his sword at it as it aimed for his side. Its arm was slashed off and wriggled on the ground.

He took a small step back and jabbed with the sword held long. The cannibal held its neck and collapsed. As a hole formed, blood poured out and bubbled.

Kwajik.

Cha Jun Sung lifted his leg and stomped on its face. He was provoking the entire group. It must have been effective because they slowly crawled out.

Kung!

“You’re finally here. You guys need to die so the area we can act in expands.”

The cannibals made a path and 2 evil cannibals walked through.

They had killed 600, but none of them were evil cannibals. Fitting for their rank, they had been relaxing and only showed up because the situation had become serious.

Humans and mutants were the same in pushing off work to the subordinates.

‘2 of them.’

They need to kill the evil cannibals to make searching the military base more comfortable. He needed to cut off their heads.



Even in war, killing thousands of soldiers was not as good as killing one general.

Cha Jun Sung took one step back at a time and the cannibals advanced that much each time. They had gained confidence from the appearance of their leaders.

“Get ready.”

“I’ve been ready.”

He started at the start of the curve and retreated to the end. It could be the last chance to wipe them out. He needed to fill the space as much as possible.

The evil cannibal’s muscle flexed. It was contemplating how it would rip him apart since it had him cornered. Cha Jun Sung had no intention of letting it go his way.

“Shoot.”

“Bang!”

Park Jin Hyuk’s sniper rifle could even penetrate a 2cm steel plate within 150m.

Fitting for a mighty force, it was not satisfied with taking one out and went through two or three at once. The cannibals panicked

and tried to run, but it was no use.

Kwang!

Cha Jun Sung pressed the switch on the remote control. The first claymore he set up went off. To make matters worse for them, their exit was blocked.

Kya!

The evil cannibal pushed through the bullets raining down and came in. It honored its high level. They had expected it. He threw a sonic grenade at them.

Wiing!

Kwang!

The sonic grenade and 2nd claymore went off at the same time. The evil cannibal covered its ears and writhed in pain until it was shot in the head with the sniper rifle and fell over.

The cannibals were frantic and could not do anything. A lack of judgement when faced with devastation leads to death.

“Is it over?”

“Probably?”

The cannibals had become pieces of meat. The ones that had died from being shot had at least maintained their shapes. There were no trace of the ones that were killed by the claymore.

The two did not leave quickly, but checked their equipment. They also needed to rest. All they had done was shoot their guns, but that did not mean they were not tired.

They could not sense any more cannibals. They would see this as an entry to hell since even the evil cannibals had been killed.

“Let’s regain our strength and go.”

“Okay.”

They needed to maintain the best conditions to increase their chances at succeeding in the missions. If they went looking for the field of meat in this state, they would become exhausted within hours.

Looking for another place to rest was also labor.

They were sorry to do this when they thought of the captured party members who were waiting for their deaths, but many things held them back. Their own safety was the priority.

# Chapter 28

---

Campbell Brian was a Lifer from America. He had been accepted into Field of Meat with 9 comrades and came into the mission 26 days ago.

20 days passed since they had been captured and he was the only survivor. His party was the first to attempt Field of Meat.

Lloyd's team had thought that they would be the first, but they were wrong.

The world was large and there was a huge population. Talented Lifers all claimed that they were the best, but competition was fierce.

According to Campbell, 20 Lifers died in the meat locker instead of 15, and 9 people died outside while fighting the cannibals.

Though he lived, there were 30 people including himself – exactly 3 parties. Including Lloyd's party, 4 had fallen for the cannibals' trap.

“Are you saying that the cannibals learned while fighting with your party?”

“That's right. It must have been their first time battling with Lifers because we were dominant at first, but they became more cunning with time. That's how this happened.”

They had not just been captured. They had taken a few hundred down with them.

“It seems they have the intellect of a 4 or 5 year old. You said that you were captured with an electric net? That’s an item that the party before you had.”

Campbell had spoken with the dying Lifers and found out the details of how they fought with the cannibals and how they were captured.

It was to help him survive. It was precious information that could not be traded for money.

“They were clumsy with the 2nd party, but the 3rd was different.”

The 3rd party had been caught when they fell into a hole in the ground. Not all of them fell in but the outcome was obvious because their power had been divided.

“They become more intelligent as they fight, and we just happened to be the 4th party.”

“Why did they keep you alive? Not just for a day or two, but for dozens?”

Carlyle tossed a question sharply. Lifers were meat to cannibals. It was definite for them to eat him but to keep him alive? Something did not make sense.

“There are 2 things. Their intention is to dry me out slowly since I killed hundreds of their kin and I am helping them a little in order to stay alive.”

“Help?”

“If you stay alive, you will find out. It’s a bother to say anymore.”

Campbell changed the subject as though they would find out even if he did not tell them.

It could be that he did not want to tell them. It was a way to stay alive even for a little bit longer. The second he shared it, he would become useless to the cannibals.

Carlyle did not ask further either. In this state, he was going to end up being eaten by the cannibals. The only difference was in whether it would be faster or slower.

“Ke ke! Those guys are lucky. I’m sure they’ll have quit by now?”

Carlyle thought of Cha Jun Sung. He had resented them when they quit, but he was now envious. Had that not saved their lives?

“Who do you mean?”

“We also came in as a full party, but 2 people left because there was friction. I’m pretty sure they gave up and went back.”

“Those are some lucky people.”

“They’re outstanding Lifers. They’re the best that I’ve seen so far.”

“What makes you say that?”

“They have each spent more than 10,000 points on their equipment alone. It also looked like the one who seems to be the leader has gone through body modification.”

Campbell’s eyes widened with surprise. The more points someone accumulated meant that they had completed that many missions.

At that rate, it was appropriate to call him the best. Though it could not be reversed now, they would have been of great help if they had not left.

“Whew! What a waste. But what use is it since they’re not here?”

“That’s right.”

He could not help but wish they were there. If Cha Jun Sung or another party did not come in to save them, they would not last more than a few days.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

While they were waiting to die, they heard an explosion that shook the base. This kind of power had to have come from outside.

It was an explosion that could not be made with a gun, but with something like a claymore or grenade. Even a fever shot was far from a bomb because it was something that only let out heat.

“They didn’t leave? They infiltrated the base!”

“No way!”

“Can they make it alive? I don’t want to die like Hicks! We’re here! Save us!”

The color returned to Lloyd’s gloomy face.

The heavens had thrown them a lifeline. There was no way of knowing if that lifeline would be of use to them at the moment, but they would think about that later.

‘2 people came?’



Campbell's eyes narrowed. He had been conscious when dragged in, so he knew how dangerous it was outside. It was a problem from the entrance.

There were dozens of sentry guarding the entry. He guaranteed that if they killed those cannibals, they would raise an emergency and make the situation complication. They needed to lure the cannibals away if they wanted to move freely.

It was not 100% certain, but that was how Campbell had seen it.

Please!

Tsk tsk!

Campbell clucked his tongue at Smith and Jamie who were screaming.

Unlike Special Forces officers, they started Life Mission as regular people. He did not know of their skills, but they showed their weak mentality in extreme situations.

Lloyd's team was equally scared. The difference from Smith's team was that they did not want to become pathetic if there was nothing they could do, so they had just given up.

"It would be great if the luck you people are counting on reaches all the way here."

Campbell had never seen Cha Jun Sung, but he wanted him to come as soon as possible. As he said before, at least one person dies every half day.

# Chapter 29

---

Pupuk!

Jiik!

Lloyd's party was giving up hope. It had been days and Cha Jun Sung had not found Field of Meat. In that time, Smith and Jamie died.

In the present, Japanese Kayamoto was being sliced like raw fish.

That did not mean they could give up all hope because they kept hearing explosions. They were sure that he was lost somewhere, unable to find the way.

Kwakwang!

Kyak!

The chef who had been eating Kayamoto's flesh punched the wall in anger and threw its tools anywhere.

It was much more violent today. With its eyes narrowed and nose flaring, it killed Kayamoto with more cruelty. It was angry.

Lloyd's team did not know, but the chef had come after fighting with the other evil cannibals. 10 evil cannibals had died at the

hands of Cha Jun Sung.

There were only a few left. The chef was not happy even though it went up in ranking. He was being pressured to personally fight as he should in his position.

Evil cannibals were smarter than cannibals. The chef knew he would die if he went out there. His mutant instincts allowed him to predict the future.

Keureung.

The chef brought the wagon over and packed human meat. He put the meat of the freshly slaughtered Kayamoto in a large bucket.

He needed to use a bribe since he did not want to fight. Mutants like human or animal meat. It did not have impurities because it had not gone through a transition.

The meat of mutants infected with A virus was tough, so it did not taste as good. There was also toxicity in the blood.

Had Caicus of Closed Area not relished the taste of the paste he made of people? To mutants, humans were just one of many delicacies.

Ke ke!

The chef laughed in satisfaction and left the meat locker. He held the wagon and bucket tightly so as not to let even a drop fall.

They had shared a fair amount before but the meat supply had ended once Lloyd's party came in, so this amount should be convincing.

"Hah! Others died until now, but it'll be our turn starting tomorrow."

Whether by luck or coincidence, the 4 British people were left. The 4 American and Japanese people were sacrificed first. They could say it was fortunate, but even that luck was over.

\*\*\*

"It was right around here."

"Let's look in each place."

Cha Jun Sung searched the base for a few days. It had not been at random.

Every half day, he heard screaming. He guessed the path with the sound, and he heard a scream just now as well.

The base was complex. Not only was it large, but it was dizzying

because there were a lot of forked roads. It was like a maze because they are not used to the internal structure.

Seuseuk.

The two freely searched for the meat warehouse. Cannibals rarely appeared. They had killed close to 1000 of them.

Bump!

“Huh?”

“It’s close.”

It was dull. It was closer to the sound of something rolling along than the sound of a collision. It was getting closer. It was coming in their direction.

Cha Jun Sung took out his sword and red fire at the same time. Park Jin Hyuk also took out his crossbow and prepared for a surprise attack. They were used to fighting as they moved.

Kuk?

“Evil cannibal!”

“Look at the wagon it’s pushing! It’s full of human bodies!”

“Kayamoto?”

Cha Jun Sung’s eye went to the top of the bucket where a dead head had its tongue out. The expression was twisted in pain. It was Kayamoto.

“I’ll take care of it. Cover me.”

“Leave it to me.”

Park Jin Hyuk stepped back and made an environment for Cha Jun Sung to fight in.

Kung!

The chef was surprised. Of all the places to meet. There were no cannibals to call to. They were all gathered in one place because they could not split up.

“Did you kill all of those people?”

It was rhetorical. He was thinking to himself.

“The trail of blood is clear. Thanks. It’ll be easy to find because of you.”

Kyak!

Its flesh was so thick that the bullet could not completely penetrate the chef with the red fire's power. It was wounded, but the shot was not fatal.

Cha Jun Sung shot near its eyes so it could not see.

The chef swung its arms. It was fairly strong. His bones could break with one hit. Park Jin Hyuk could even die.

“That’s not where I am.”

The sword slashed its leg. He cut with such force that the skin split open. It was extremely strong, but incredibly slow.

“Kuk!”

The chef threw the bucket at Cha Jun Sung. Kayamoto's blood drenched him. There was a problem with his eyesight as it became red.

Pew!

Puk!

Park Jin Hyuk's bullet went through the chef's eye and to the



brain.

The chef took a few steps and could not handle the heavy weight, collapsing. It was dangerous. If Park Jin Hyuk had been late in shooting, Cha Jun Sung would have been hit.

“That’s disgusting. How is he going to throw that?”

“Ugh, the smell!”

Cha Jun Sung took out a bottle of water from the space compression bag and poured it all. The water washed the blood away as it poured out but it did not get rid of the smell.

It was their drinking water, but he did not think it a waste. They could get more water in the base. They must have been using the underground water, because water came out in different places.

They were suspicious of the water, so they used a cleaning agent to purify it.

After pouring 2 bottles, much of the sticky feeling was gone. He left what was on the plastic armor and impact tights.

“Let’s go.”

“It’s right in front of us.”

As they followed the tire tracks, an ominous iron door appeared. There was so much blood hardened on it that it could not be cleaned. Especially on the handle.

“If this is the right place, all that’s left is the escape?”

“Escaping is easy. We can just go back the way we came when we killed everything.”

Creak.

The hinges creaked as the door opened. It stuck because it had not been oiled.

“I was right, right? I had a feeling it would be a meat warehouse.”

“Ah.....”

Park Jin Hyuk had thought that the description of hanging was only fitting for fruit trees. Starting today, he would need to change the way he thinks.

“Do you think all of those people were Lifers?”

“The likelihood is high. There must have been people who were faster than we were.”

“Telling us to check the Field of Meat meant to confirm their deaths.”

There were two types of Lifers to enter this meat house – those who were captured and those who infiltrated. The goal of this mission was to infiltrate it with their skill.

It meant that they needed to get past this much to be able to advance into Level D.

[You have confirmed the situation in Field of Meat. Please escape to the summons area.]

They can escape now that they had seen it. They pushed it back because they could do that at any time. Cha Jun Sung had something to do here. He looked for survivors.

“Mi, Mister Cha?”

“You were alive?”

“Oh! Thank God! Thank you!”

Cha Jun Sung went into the meat warehouse and found Lloyd locked in a pen. He looked overcome with emotion upon seeing his savior.

He had become emaciated while going back and forth between heaven and hell over the past few days.

‘That one’s not dead.’

‘I’ll say.’

Park Jin Hyuk looked at Carlyle with displeasure. The rude asshole had a lot of luck. He had not wanted him to die, but that was just his thinking.

Cha Jun Sung moved to rescue them. He would need to let them go first.

[You have discovered survivors. Activating a conjunction special mission.] [Level E Special Mission: Rescue Survivors] [Goal: Attainment] [Scenario: Rescue the Lifers locked up in Field of Meat] [Reward: 1000 points per person]

Conjunction special mission? Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk looked at each other.

By choice or force, there were special missions by association.

This case was forced, but it felt like a bonus because it had been activated while they were rescuing them already. They would always welcome this kind of mission.

Tatang!

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk shot at the locks on the pens

and broke them. The party was freed. They all seemed to be fine.

[You have earned 1000 points.] [You have earned 1000 points.]

As Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk released Lloyd and Carlyle, Henry and Martin, they each received 4000 points. They were free points that they had not expected.

“We don’t have the translator anymore because they took our helmets. We can’t understand Korean, but I’m sure you’re able to understand me?”

“Yes.”

The translator installed in the PDA allowed them to listen to what others were saying in the desired language through the helmet, so the function was halted without the helmet.

Speaking was of the same principle. He needed to be fluent in English to talk to Lloyd. He was at least able to understand Lloyd because of the translator.

“Please save him as well.”

“Who?”

Cha Jun Sung followed Lloyd’s finger and saw Campbell locked in the corner. A new face, he was not a member of the party he entered with.

“He’s a survivor from the first party.”

“The first party?”

He moved as he asked. It was 1000 points just for letting him out.

Even without the points, he was a Lifer with the cannibal as a common enemy. In a situation where rescuing was possible, it was not right to leave him there.

“So.....”

Lloyd explained what he heard from Campbell on behalf of the party. It was easy to understand because he left out the guesswork and only relayed the main points.

“Thank you. My name is Campbell Brian.”

“No problem.”

Campbell did not have a translator either. Cha Jun Sung could hear, but was disappointed that he could not communicate. Park Jin Hyuk kept his mouth shut as well.

“Your equipment is as impressive as I’ve been told. You did body modification as well?”

“Yes, yes.”

One person spoke and one person listened – it was a one-way conversation. He thought he was going to start sweating. Park Jin Hyuk was the one who saved him in a dangerous situation.

“Jun Sung, annihilation? Escape?”

“Hm, annihilation?”

“What do we do with those people? They’ll die on the way out without their equipment.”

Cha Jun Sung wanted to end the cannibals instead of escaping right away. There was no guarantee that everything would go as well as it did today once they entered the top mission in Level E.

If they left Lloyd’s team however, they would lose the lives they had saved.

“I guess so.”

“Let’s think about it after we get those people to the summons area.”

It made sense. They had plenty of time. 3 or 4 hours was enough to get to the summons area from the meat warehouse. They could

decide after sending these people.

“We don’t have weaponry, but the things that aren’t dangerous are over there.”

Different types of protective gear were in the area that Campbell pointed out.

There were items for dozens of people. Armor was like a shell that cannibals could not eat. It looked like they dumped it all here because they had no use for it.

Lloyd’s team went through the equipment. All they had to do was find the identification number that indicated it was theirs.

It included the helmets that would activate the PDA’s translating function.

“Where are the weapons?”

“I don’t know, but I saw them take them to a location in the 2nd forked path to the meat warehouse.”

Campbell searched his memories. He was not positive it was really a storage room for weaponry.

“We’ll go and come back. Use this to protect yourself until we come back.”



Cha Jun Sung handed the automatic crossbow to Lloyd. They would kill any cannibals they saw on the way, but it was just in case.

# Chapter 30

---

The place Campbell directed them to was where the Lifers' weapons were held. Pistols, SMGs, crossbows, and bows – there was a motley of weapons.

“There are a lot of good weapons.”

“Let's pack the supplies. We deserve this much after what we suffered.”

Cha Jun Sung separated the weapons to give to Lloyd's group. It would be convenient to put them in the packs, but the cannibals had ripped them all apart so none of them were very useful.

The space compression bag was already full of the loot. If they took these weapons back with them to sell, they would make enough money to each buy a car.

“But.”

“Huh?”

“Why don't the cannibals use the guns and bombs when they use the electric net?”

Guns and bombs. Once they are unlocked, these were items that make the user into Rambo. In some ways, the electric net was

harder to use than these.

If the cannibals had faced Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk in an armed state, they would have died, been captured, or run away.

“If I were the leader here, I would be totally against the subordinates using these weapons.”

“Why?”

“Because they might stab me in the back.”

With a gun, a cannibal could easily kill an evil cannibal. If they do not control it, the order can be overturned and the law could become a mess.

“When you say it like that, it makes sense.”

“Let’s go.”

Cha Jun Sung put the weapons in the least torn pack and went back to Lloyd’s group.

He gave each person an SMG with a couple hundred bullets, and a few grenades. Everyone took it without complaint except for one person.

“This is it for weapons?”

“No.”

Carlyle asked the whereabouts of the weapons. There had to be more than dozens of weapons because that many Lifers had died. Cha Jun Sung spoke honestly.

“I packed the rest of them.”

“What did you say?”

“Be thankful I’m giving you that much. I could have left you here.”

Carlyle felt shame at Cha Jun Sung’s words. It sounded like he was saying, ‘What have you done that you’re claiming weapons?’

“Mister Cha, let’s stop.”

“Are we leaving right away?”

“Let’s get out since there’s no good in staying in this terrible place.”

As soon as they made their decision, everything went according to plan. They got out of the base within 2 hours through the path

that Cha Jun Sung had memorized.

The strange thing was that they were never attacked while they were leaving.

Are they hiding themselves because they are scared of being annihilated? It could be. Even if they were angry, it is another way to conserve their species.

Kiik!

He was mistaken however. There was no reason for them to let them go easily in the first place.

Jiing!

As soon as they got outside, the vision goggles returned to their original search range. At the same time, the cannibals' heat was captured en masse.

“Jin Hyuk, put the crossbow away and take out your sniper rifle. They're too close.”

“Damn!”

Park Jin Hyuk held his rifle. He knew they were letting them go too easily. They had known that they were at a disadvantage in a narrow area and had brought them to an open space.

“Are we under siege?”

“It should be about 300 of them. I think we’ll have to go as we kill them.”

He could sense the cannibals’ movement clearly. They were watching Cha Jun Sung’s group from just 40m away. These cunning creatures must be waiting for them to enter the forest.

‘5 big ones..... 1 bigger one, that’s the leader.’

It was not Level 3.

The balance would be destroyed if it were Level 3. The cannibal itself was a strong mutant, so he estimated it to be a high Level 2. It was impossible to face one-on-one without a gun.

Seuk.

Cha Jun Sung moved around and searched with his bow. The cannibals did not intend to let him go and blocked each path.

They needed to somehow lure the cannibals elsewhere if they wanted to get to the summons area. This was their home ground, so the party members were at a disadvantage.

“They’re trying to fight intellectually with people? Let’s see who

wins.”

“Do you have a plan?”

“If we just barge in, they’ll kill half of us at least. We’ll have to play with them.”

Cha Jun Sung resisted saying, ‘Though we probably won’t die.’ He had the confidence to protect Park Jin Hyuk no matter what.

“It’s about 36 to 49m.”

He measured the distance. The closer cannibals were 36m away, the farther ones at 49m. They were exact figures. They were farther away the stronger they were and it did not get closer than that.

“Please give me the fever shots.”

“How many?”

“All of them!”

Cha Jun Sung himself had 5, Park Jin Hyuk had 6, and Lloyd’s group each had one. Once everyone handed them over, they had a total of 16.

Cha Jun Sung threw them into the forest without even setting the timer.

36 to 49m, the fever shot weighed 1kg. It was impossible to throw this heavy weight over 36m.

“Huk!”

“What are you doing!”

“Mister Cha!”

Lloyd’s team yelled. Fever shots were important bombs because they are capable of mass destruction. He had thrown something like that as if it were a rock without setting the timer.

Kyak kyak!

The cannibals ran from their spots as they saw the fever shots fly toward them. The ones that knew of its danger led the ones that did not know out of range.

At that, the distance between them and the cannibals became even larger. Now, they could not be detected by the goggle’s 50m range.

“You can detect the fever shot with the goggles, right?”



“I can just shoot it and set it off, right?”

“You’re smart.”

Hee hee!

There was a limit to adjusting the timer. He would not have been able to cause much damage if he had thrown it after setting the timer. But if he threw it as is? It would not go off.

“Since they’re so suspicious, they’ll wait for a bit before going back to their places.”

Cannibals do not have a concept of misfires. They can only differentiate between something that goes off and something that does not. They will go back into formation if they know that it does not go off.

Lloyd clucked his tongue. This operation was possible because they had vision goggles.

Shyashyak!

Cha Jun Sung smiled. The situation was unfolding as expected. The cannibals who released their suspicion after 30 minutes went back to their positions at 40m.

“See. No matter how smart they are, they’re smart for that level,

not smart enough to win against humans.”

“Relatively?”

“Yeah.”

Cannibals were perceived to be smart because they were in comparison to mutants. Lifers were fooled by them because they perceived the cannibals to be on a similar level.

If they had fought with the thought that they were on the same level, they might have been pushed back by sheer numbers but they would not have died pathetically in the meat warehouse.

Does it make sense? It is not even the primeval ages and they fall into a hole, or that they try to set a trap but instead are trapped under an electric net?

“The range of the fever shot is 15m, so there will be a series of explosions even if one goes off.”

“Will it be able to kill all of them?”

“They’re such fast creatures that they’ll reflexively get out as soon as it goes off.”

Annihilation was ambitious. Looking at the way they were spread out, 50% would not be able to escape and would burn to death. It

was obvious that they would be on their highest guard.

For the rest, they would have to use all their tricks whether it was to shoot or beat them to death. It was a pity that they would not fall for the same methods.

“Which one should I shoot?”

“The one furthest.”

“The one all the way at the end? There are a lot of obstacles along the way, let’s see if I can get through all of them.”

Park Jin Hyuk aimed his rifle at the fever shot Cha Jun Sung had indicated.

There were a few trees blocking the path to it. He was not sure the bullet would be able to go through because they were fairly thick, but he did not linger on it for too long.

“If it doesn’t work with one shot, it’ll go with two or three.”

“That’s the spirit.”

Pew!

The bullet cut through the air. It went through the trees and

looked like it was going to reach the fever shot as it rotated violently, but it lost power and stopped.

Pew!

As heat formed where the bullet had passed, the target he needed to match was marked. He fired again and went through the hole that had been formed before.

It pushed the bullet that was stuck out and cleared the rest of the obstacles.

Puk.

Kwang!

It finally hit the fever shot. The heat called its fellows.

Kwakwakwakwa!

The 16 fever shots exploded in a row. The 15m range expanded by 5 or 6 times in seconds. It was like a missile.

Kyak!

It worked. The cannibals were swept by the blast and ran around frantically. It was unsure whether it was the forest or the cannibals

burning.

Kung!

The leader was furious. The surviving cannibals gathered at its roar and charged at Cha Jun Sung's group. They had given up on psychological warfare.

Tutu!

Lloyd's team each aimed and killed one. Carlyle also attacked once in a while, but he was scared of the cannibals and busy hiding.

Kwakwang!

When a grenade went off, 4 cannibals ripped into pieces. It was the last stage. They needed to mobilize the last of their power and complete the mission.

“We can't last! We need to get out!”

“Follow me!”

Cha Jun Sung led the way. There were much more survivors than those that had died from the fever shots. It was dangerous to remain in this spot. They needed to move.

Kuk!

Cannibals charged at them from all directions. They built momentum. They did not guard their lives because of the leader's orders. It was the suicide squad.

Sukuk!

Tatang!

He shot his gun to clear a path. Everyone fought desperately but as the cannibals became more vigorous, Carlyle became more unstable.

“We need to follow Mr. Cha!”

“It's too much! There are too many cannibals closing in and the forest is on fire!”

“Sir!”

Carlyle blocked his ears. Cha Jun Sung was leaving all of the paths and choosing the one with the highest probability for them to die. He could not find the motivation to follow him.

“Let's take the path on the side! Look at it. The cannibals are following him!”

The majority of the cannibals chased Cha Jun Sung. They knew exactly who had killed all of their kin. He had killed more than 1000, so they could not forget him.

“Mister Cha saved us!”

“Shut up!”

Tatak!

Carlyle left the group and went through the path on the side. Lloyd’s group was a team of Special Forces meant to protect him. They had no choice but to follow him.

Seuk.

Campbell who had been looking on as a third party looked over at Carlyle.

A pathetic expression on a spoiled brat who was selfish when assessing a situation. His traits made him perfect for an unnecessary death.

Cha Jun Sung was taking an off-road even though it would be more difficult because he knew the path and it would take the least time to reach the summons area.

This was the cannibals’ hometown. If they got lost even for a

moment in another path, they would be captured without being able to do anything. They needed to be swift if they wanted to live.

Papat!

Campbell needed to choose between Cha Jun Sung and Lloyd's group, and chose the latter. He was already far from Cha Jun Sung and it was too burdensome to follow him alone.

“Ho ho! 4 people is better than 2 and weaker is better than the stronger.”

Campbell turned to the side. With this, the party split into two.



# Chapter 31

---

Papapapat!

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk ran. They looked back when they could to shoot and throw grenades. Each time, one or two cannibals always died.

“I did as much as I could.”

“Agreed!”

Lloyd’s group did not follow them. They had set everything up for them with difficulty and all they had to do was take it, but he could not take care of that for them as well.

It seemed the man they met in the meat locker, Campbell, had also followed Lloyd. Had they formed a friendship in the few days they spent together?

“They’re persistent!”

“Jump into the ocean once we reach the summons area.”

“The ocean?”

“If they follow us in, today’s the day they die.”

If they had taken the right path, the cliff they were first summoned to would appear.

It was 20 to 25m high.

Even if they fell into the ocean, the absorptivity of their equipment would reduce the friction.

The end of the forest was coming. They could hear the sound of waves nearby. Cha Jun Sung took out a grenade and pulled the pin. Park Jin Hyuk followed suit.

“Put the grenade on the ground and run!”

“Ack!”

Pat!

The grenade fell to the ground. It would go off in 5 seconds. Park Jin Hyuk made a fuss and jumped into the ocean. The cannibals filled the area behind them.

They were similar in speed to Cha Jun Sung, but the distance closed in as they ran. There was the problem of stamina as well, so it would have been a problem if it had been a long distance.

Kwang!

The grenades exploded and fragments flew out. It swept the cannibals that had gathered and they collapsed. But it was not over. There were still some standing.

Kung!

When the explosion disappeared, the evil cannibals and dozens of cannibals threw themselves into the ocean. They were determined to kill Cha Jun Sung at the very least.

“I prepared this for you.”

“Kung!”

Cha Jun Sung threw the grenade in his hand. The cannibals opened their eyes wide. They were falling in open space. Unless they could fly away like birds, there was no way to avoid it.

Kwang!

The shockwaves of the grenade hit Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk's bodies. Fragments came flying at them, but their plastic armor and impact tights absorbed it.

Splash!

Still it was early to think that they were safe because they had

fallen in the water. The cannibals that had survived the blast were swimming towards the two. It was a complete horror.

Tutututu!

The cannibals were not used to swimming and there was a notable difference in the way they moved in comparison to the way they moved on land. This made it easier to shoot them.

In their submerged state, they made the approaching cannibals into fish food.

“Let’s end this, it’s a drag.”

“My thoughts exactly!”

If the difficulty of Level E was this high, nothing needed to be said about Level D. Level D would be uncertain even after acquiring the best gear and going through the 2nd stage of body modification.

The number of cannibals gradually decreased and they eventually killed all of them off.

“Is that the end?”

“Could be?”

“There aren’t anymore.”

“Wow!”

Park Jin Hyuk put his hands in the air and cheered. Their attack on the cannibals was over. Then they heard the words they wanted to hear so much.

-[Congratulations. You have cleared Level E upgrade mission, Field of Meat.]

-[You have earned 3000 points, and Level D mission and store are open.]

Park Jin Hyuk was delighted at the fact that the Level D mission and store had been unlocked. Cha Jun Sung did not hear the last words because he had already unlocked them.

-[Please go to shore to return to the briefing room or reality.]

“Let’s find a low place.”

Cha Jun Sung looked at the cliff slopes and shook his head. They could not climb it.

But they both knew how to swim. They swam and rested by floating when they were too tired. After swimming like this for 20 minutes, they came to a beautiful waterfront.

Park Jin Hyuk put all of the weaponry into the space compression bag and held only the sniper rifle. It was the best weapon against a surprise attack.

“Now that we’ve finished, it’s a bother to annihilate them.”

“Should we go back?”

The purpose of Field of Meat was not annihilation. There could be cannibals remaining on the base, but he did not want to continue fighting.

“Let’s follow the waterfront. We might find Lloyd and his men.”

“Okay.”

Their shoulders were heavy. They were exhausted and as their tension relaxed, the fatigue spread. However, he did wonder what happened to Lloyd and the others.

There was nothing they could do if they had died in the forest, but they might run into them if they had made it out.

“There!”

“I saw.”

They could see what they estimated to be 40 to 50 dead bodies. It could not be people. It had to be cannibals. It seemed there had been a great battle.

Among the cannibal corpses, there were the bodies of Lloyd, Henry, and Martin.

They had died in a gruesome way. It looked like they had fought back until the end and were hacked up. Could it be that they thought it unfair that they died? There was anger in their widely open eyes.

Cha Jun Sung touched Lloyd's body. It was still warm but some time must have passed since his death because it was starting to cool. This was the same for Henry and Martin.

“What about Carlyle and Campbell?”

“Do you think these three died while opening up a path for them?”

“Could be.”

Cha Jun Sung walked away from the bodies. They could make money by selling their gear, but he did not need it and did not really want to do it.

They found Carlyle's body not far from Lloyd and the others. He had his face down in the sands.

"They opened up the path for him for nothing."

"Tsk!"

Park Jin Hyuk had a bitter look. He did not like the man, but he had never wished for his death. He just did not like him, it was nothing more and nothing less.

Cha Jun Sung felt something strange while examining Carlyle's body.

"What are you doing?"

"The cause of death is unclear. Other than his blue face, there isn't any wound."

"What about it?"

"There isn't a cannibal's body nearby and he's dead alone."

He looked for a mortal wound to figure out Carlyle's cause of death, but he was perfectly fine. Other than his blue face, there was nothing that could have killed him.



“I think he suffocated.”

“Suffocated?”

“They say when someone suffocates, their face turns blue. I saw in on TV.”

Cha Jun Sung thought that Park Jin Hyuk’s explanation made sense.

“Fight against me.”

“What? Kuk!”

Cha Jun Sung went behind Park Jin Hyuk, put his head in a headlock, and squeezed.

Park Jin Hyuk flailed. The impact tights expanded and pushed against Cha Jun Sung’s strength, but it was loose. He had discovered a new vulnerability.

“Ow..... My neck.”

“What do you think?”

“I think suffocation is right. The impact tights don’t function against it.”

“But there was a repelling force.”

“You have a lot of muscular strength because you went through body modification. How could I withstand it?”

It sounded like the impact tights would have been able to protect him if he had not gone through body modification. A cannibal would not have done something so onerous.

“Campbell.....”

“Are you saying he went through body modification and is the one who killed Carlyle?”

“In context.”

The only other survivor in this mission was Campbell. It could not help but raise suspicion. It would be a PK if it were a game, but it was murder since it was reality.

“That guy completed a Level D mission and opened the store!”

“Since I’m not the only one who’s special.”

“Why do you think he did it?”

“The reason why he did a PK? There’s a different pleasure in killing users than in killing mutants. Or he’s doing it to gain experience.”

“But this is reality. What experience? He’s psycho.”

“Point.”

“Huh?”

“Do you think he can take another Lifer’s points if he kills them?”

It was not information that was recorded in Lifer World. Of course opinions were divided. Would they be rewarded points even if they killed Lifers? Was there someone who had killed before?

“I’m sure there are a lot. A ton.”

There was no way murderers did not exist in this crazy world. If they were given points? They would tell people not to share the information in the greed of wanting to take all the points.

“Kill someone to confirm?”

“Probably.”

“If you find Campbell?”

“I’ll probably kill him if it’s possible, but I have no intention of going out of my way. Let’s look and decide.”

As he continued with Life Mission, there would be a day when he killed a human and not a mutant with these hands, wouldn’t there? The only difference was whether that day would come sooner or later.

“He’ll be close by.”

“How do you know?”

“Lloyd’s body was cold, but this one is warm. He’s close.”

Cha Jun Sung lifted his head. They needed to go to the summon area if they wanted to complete the mission. Campbell would be heading towards the summon area as well.

## Chapter 32

---

Park Jin Hyuk held his sniper rifle and walked toward the waterfront.

It was impossible to go into the forest and create an ambush. They could also be attacked if a cannibal were alive. Cha Jun Sung thought the same.

In a position where they were on a quiet chase, they could not take that kind of risk.

Seuseuk.

The two who had been walking as though running, lowered their bodies. They had found Campbell.

“Shoot?”

“We can’t shoot without talking to him. We need to be sure he’s the killer.”

The context pointed to Campbell, but what if it wasn’t him? Blindly shooting him was not something someone in their right mind could do.

“I’m going. You stay here and aim. Pull the trigger if I send the signal.”

“Be careful.”

Cha Jun Sung approached Campbell. He left some distance between them and made his presence known. If his senses had been amplified with body modification, he would already know anyway.

“Campbell.”

“Huh?”

Campbell reacted to the voice and turned around. His shaking eyes – Cha Jun Sung did not miss this change like an eagle watching its prey.

“Mister Cha? You hadn’t gone back?”

“Carlyle.”

“Carlyle?”

“He died. I’m assuming you won’t give the excuse that a cannibal killed him?”

“I want to say, ‘I didn’t kill him!’ but the situation won’t let me. That’s right. I took more care in killing him, but I guess I got caught.”

Campbell put on an expression of discomfort. This was a scenario he had not expected.

He had procrastinated thinking that Cha Jun Sung had already gone back. He had given his back to him while he had peace of mind. It was surprising, but he was unfazed.

“Are points the goal?”

“About half?”

“What is the other half?”

“Points are the main reason, but killing is also fun.”

Kik kik!

His mask was coming off.

Cha Jun Sung realized that he was facing a psychopath.

“Aren’t you curious as to how many points you’re given when you kill a Lifer?”

He was curious. If all of the deceased’s points were passed over, a war could arise among Lifers. It would be more rewarding than

hunting mutants.

“They give you 10%. I earned about 5000 points after killing 4 people.”

Cha Jun Sung needed to get through a 1500-point mission. He could earn that easily by killing just a few Lifers. He could see how it would be addictive.

“Did you kill Lloyd and his men as well?”

“They were mortally wounded while trying to save Carlyle. I am the one who killed them, but I guess it would be right to say that they pulled it ahead of schedule.”

This is why he had not found traces of Campbell on Lloyd and his men.

“You have an impressive eye. It’s a good thing I didn’t follow you back there.”

If he had followed Cha Jun Sung, not only would he not have been able to kill him, but he might have died himself.

“Let me ask you. Is what you said the truth? What about the party you came with?”

“I killed everyone because they tried to quit when they found out



it was impossible to complete the mission. I was captured because I was unlucky. Thank you, Mister Cha. You saved me.”

This much was the truth. If Cha Jun Sung had not saved him, he would have died 100%.

“Everything is true except that?”

“There’s no reason to hide the rest is there?”

“How did you stay alive?”

“The cannibals..... They’re stupid but maybe they felt a certain level of kinship with their own?”

Campbell annihilated his party and killed hundreds of cannibals. The smell of blood spread all throughout the island because he had been unable to clean up the battlefield.

This had called the cannibals to him. He fought back because he could not die so pathetically, but he could not handle the numbers that swarmed to him.

The funny thing was that the cannibals had locked him in a pen and killed Lifers in front of him. They had wanted him to experience the pain of watching his kin die.

They did not want to starve him to death, so they had thrown

him the provisions that Lifers brought in with them.

“I even pretended to be surprised sometimes because I thought they might kill me if I didn’t care. And..... I told them how to use the electric net.”

After he had spent a few days in the pen, the evil cannibals came looking for him.

They brought a few items that had bothered them and motioned something with their hands and feet. What could it be? They were asking how to use them.

They put the dangerous firearms in storage and started using the items for capture and camouflage in hunting Lifers because all they had to do was press a button.

Campbell had felt some pleasure in watching this because it was like watching a play. This was why he had not been bored even though he had been locked up for weeks.

Guilt? He didn’t have anything like that. If it was to stay alive, he could kill thousands of people without blinking. Look at him. Hadn’t he survived?

# Volume 2

# Chapter 33

---

“The life I saved, I’ll take it again.”

“That’s true, but I can’t let you do that. It seems too early to die.”

Campbell raised his fist. He was holding a grenade with its pin pulled.

“I pulled it when I heard you call me. That young friend of yours over there is aiming at me, right? If this goes off, you won’t be safe either.”

Cha Jun Sung clenched his teeth. He is cunning to have prepared such a thing.

“Ke ke! That expression is great even though it isn’t as good as the one people show when they’re dying.”

Campbell covered his face and laughed. His eyes showed through his fingers.

‘He seems familiar.’

Something had been bothering him. Campbell’s strange tone that is half formal and half informal, seems to overlap with someone but he cannot remember who that is.

Cha Jun Sung watched Campbell and tried to give Park Jin Hyuk the signal.

“No no! Don’t move.”

“Keuk!”

“The moment you give a signal, I’ll let this go off. I’ll only be caught off guard once.”

Cha Jun Sung stopped moving at Campbell’s warning. They are not even 5m apart. Even if he does not die when the grenade goes off, he would come out with serious wounds.

‘Jin Hyuk, shoot him. Shoot.’

He sent the signal in his mind. Jin Hyuk is fast to catch on. Cha Jun Sung willed him to shoot Campbell in the head.

Park Jin Hyuk squinted as he looked at Campbell laughing from afar. It looked like he is the culprit, but Cha Jun Sung is not giving the signal.

“What’s going on?”

When Campbell covered his face with his hand, his other hand came up and Park Jin Hyuk could see that it held a round object through the scope. It is a grenade without its pin.

He had not seen what was in Campbell's hand because he had been focusing on getting a signal. Campbell had turned his back with the grenade in his hand.

“This is driving me crazy.”

It is an ambiguous moment. The decision is all up to Park Jin Hyuk. Anyone in this situation would be conflicted. He cannot reverse a decision made on bad judgement.

“If that goes off, Jun Sung will be hit too. Will his body and equipment be able to handle it?”

Kiik!

Park Jin Hyuk's finger pressed on the trigger. Slowly, so Campbell would not be able to sense it.

If he reacts when he hears the sound, it will be too late. Once his head is hit, he will lose strength and the grenade will go off within a few seconds. There is just sand, with nothing to find cover in.

In that time, how far would Cha Jun Sung be able to get away in order to minimize damages?

“Die.”

Tang!

The bullet is shot. Campbell dies. Park Jin Hyuk did not doubt this would happen. Cha Jun Sung would use his speed from the 1st stage of body modifications to get away.

Puk!

He is hit by the bullet and he falls without strength. With that, Cha Jun Sung runs. But something is weird. Through the scope, Campbell is looking at Park Jin Hyuk and laughing.

While Campbell watched Cha Jun Sung, he was aware of Park Jin Hyuk's movements.

He could be prepared for Cha Jun Sung in any way. Park Jin Hyuk on the other hand is far away and there is nothing he can do to him. If Campbell misses a change in his behavior, he is dead. S

A feeling.

It is a distance that he cannot see from even with twice the sight, but Campbell got a feeling that Park Jin Hyuk's finger was moving on the trigger.

He could not be sure. He just felt like it could be. The behavior of a person whose life is threatened?

It is just his last attempt to live. Campbell had the feeling that Park Jin Hyuk was going to shoot him and tilted his body slightly. At the same moment, a shot from the rifle rang the ocean.

As Campbell fell, he threw the grenade past Cha Jun Sung's head.

Instead of going farther from the grenade, Cha Jun Sung had become even closer to it. He thought that Campbell would drop it nearby, but had not expected him to throw it.

Bang!

As the grenade explodes, countless pieces of shrapnel flew out. Cha Jun Sung protected his entire body with his heavily shielded arms and legs.

Bang!

The bomb exploded again.

The fortunate thing was that it was not a bomb for attack, but a smoke shell.

“Jun Sung!”

Park Jin Hyuk held his SMG and ran. He did not care if Campbell was alive. If Cha Jun Sung was hurt, they needed to return right away and receive treatment.



“He, he didn’t die.”

“Let’s hurry up and go back!”

Dozens of shrapnel fragments were embedded in his arms and legs. Blood gushed from his wounds. His bones must have broken while his skin was ripped because he could not put strength in them.

“What about Campbell?”

“I can’t tell what happened to him because he set a smoke shell off.”

“He’ll be alive. He tilted his body before the shot and got out of range.”

“Ugh! You’re right. I’m at a disadvantage like this, so there’s nothing I can do.”

Park Jin Hyuk pointed the SMG around them. It is Campbell’s voice. He could not see him because of all of the smoke.

“You... I’ll kill you the next time I see you.”

That’s what I should be saying. If it had been a warning from trash, I would have laughed it off, but I anticipate it because you

seem to be skilled.”

Campbell must be activating his return because his voice was becoming distant.

“I’ll be leaving first.”

The sound of blowing air from the mouth. When Cha Jun Sung heard that sound that the guy had made when they met in Life Mission, his pupils grew larger.

That tone and madness, the sound from his mouth upon leaving. He remembered.

“Blood King?”

“Who are you?”

Papat!

Campbell was shocked. He had returned before they could discuss. That is how Cha Jun Sung and Campbell separated after leaving strong impressions.

“Blood King?”

“I’ll tell you when we get back.”

He could explain the situation to Park Jin Hyuk when they got back. Cha Jun Sung realized that other Lifers were catching up to his rapid growth.

Campbell returns and looks weak as he goes over the situation just now.

He earned a lot from this mission. He had gone through all of his points for body modification, but he earned 20,000 points upon completing Field of Meat.

The mutant hunting points and reward points were generous, but the 5,000 points he got from killing Lloyd could not be ignored.

Lifer hunting.

The secret to Campbell's points. If you kill a Lifer, you are given 10% of their holdings. It is an easy way to gain points? That is a common misconception that people have.

It's a double-edged sword with high risk. You could kill someone, but you could be killed if something goes wrong. There are things that Lifer hunters need to keep in mind.

- Avoid full parties.

To kill a full party of 10, 9 people excluding myself? There is no chance of winning if fighting face to face. Defeating them individually is also difficult because of the numbers.

If there is no way to avoid going into a full party, it is better to gather murderers together but it is not a recommended method.

They are a team but murderers are also enemies. You do not know when they might stab you in the back. Campbell had gone into Field of Meat with a team, but all of the members had died at his hand.

- Know your opponent well.

Make a distinction in strength and only catch the weak guys. If he had followed Cha Jun Sung instead of Lloyd's people, he would not have come back alive.

If the party you go into only has strong people? You need to hide your intentions.

- Do not leave any survivors.

If you become known as a murderer and your face is posted, there will be restrictions to your movements. If you do not have the confidence to see it through until the end, do not start at all.

Of the three precautions, Campbell broke the 3rd. The bigger problem is that Cha Jun Sung knows who he is.

Blood King.

That is his nickname in the virtual version of Life Mission.

There are a lot of ways to change his identity in the virtual version. No one can recognize him by his looks. Then how did Cha Jun Sung identify him? It had been through his actions.

“I know it too. That kind of person can’t just be a minnow.”

Blood King is included in the top of the 36 people ranked in breaking through the 36 nightmares. Someone who could recognize him through his actions had to have been someone at a similar ranking whom he had met often. It could be that he is wrong, but his intuition said that this is right.

“There’s no special characteristic. A special characteristic.”

His body modification is weak and he does not have a unique weapon. Campbell’s pride was hurt. His opponent had recognized him, but he could not recognize his opponent.

It is difficult to figure him out from his appearance, but there will be a special characteristic if he looks for one.

He needs to find his tail. There are rankers who reveal themselves. Whoever he is, Campbell had a basic knowledge of who is he.

“It’s because he doesn’t have full potential now, but I’ll be able to tell who he is when I see his battle style. I have no doubt that he enjoys the melee. Was the weapon on his belt a katana?”

Katana.

Sword.

In Campbell's memory, there are 2 Lifers among the rankers who use swords.

Korea's Overload.

China's Chammadogaek.

Chammadogaek is also strong, but he cannot stand his ground against Overload who is in 1st place.

He is strong and grand. Even Campbell who was 1st place in PK lost against him.

"That's right. Overload was Korean, right? Then he would recognize me."

It is not something to be surprised by. It was right to have met someone among the 36 rankers in Life Mission by now.

"It feels like I'm at a disadvantage... but I'll be satisfied with having memorized your face."

If they meet again to fight, he would win then. For now, he needs to focus on growing and finding Blood King's force again.

“We'll meet again.”

Campbell fell asleep. He is not an exception to being tired.

# Chapter 34

---

Chullung.

Wine sloshed back and forth in a luxurious crystal glass. The man holding the glass was middle-aged and full of grace.

“Father. Field of Meat disappeared from the mission list.”

“I heard.”

Duke Venter’s voice is monotonous. It disappeared on the list. This meant the mission had been completed. But Carlyle has not returned.

“Our sister or I needed to go with him.”

“Do you think it is right to keep following him around and doing everything for him?”

“He was not strong enough.”

“He wasn’t. That’s why we needed to make him stronger. Even if by force.”

A tiger cub is a tiger. But even a cat is excessive for Carlyle. Duke



Venter tried to raise him as a tiger, but this is what had happened.

“Leave.”

“Okay.”

As Brayburke left the office, a voice sounded,

“Sorry dear. We lost our youngest.”

When he heard this, Brayburke clenched his fist and closed the door. Even a top authority of England is just a father.

“Brother.”

“Isabel.”

A beautiful blonde woman in her mid-20s was waiting for Brayburke outside the office. She is the only daughter among 3 children.

“An idiot went like an idiot.”

“Yeah.”

Carlyle was a brother with a lot of shortcomings. He always got into trouble and there was not a part of him they likes, but that did

not change the fact that he is the youngest of the 3 siblings.

“What do you think the problem was?”

“I don’t know.

“There are a lot of variables. There’s no way to pinpoint one as the culprit.”

The mission was completed, but Carlyle and the Special Forces members were unable to return. Since the result was decided, the affairs is now what is important – how he died.

“Was he killed by a mutant, or by an outside force?”

“If it’s the latter?”

“Revenge I guess.”

They had been unable to keep their mother’s last will to protect their youngest brother. Just by making them go against this will, the culprit deserves to die.

Carlyle had told them – 3 Americans, 1 Japanese, and 2 Koreans. If they even found one person, they could figure out what the situation was. One of those people could also be the culprit.

“I’m ready to go. Are you going to go?”

“I’m going.”

Brayburke took various kinds of weapons from his space compression bag and equipped his body. There were a lot like a sword, spear, dagger, and hatchet.

He and Isabel armed themselves and went out into the garden of the mansion. 8 Special Forces members were standing in a line, waiting for them.

“We’re going in.”

“Attention!”

[Approved. You are being transferred to Bone Mountain, Level E advance mission. Mission start.]

Brayburke, Isabel, and the 8 Special Forces members entered the mission.

Brayburke Venter.

In reality, he is second to Duke Venter, but he is one of the 36 rankers and England’s weapon master.

[Over 10,000 official figures of Korea are missing. It is said that only those revealed to be missing around the world reaches

400,000.]

Cha Jun Sung sat on a bench downtown and watched the news televised on a large sign. They are all victims of Life Mission.

Nearby, hundreds of other people watched the news and whispered. With time, Life Mission's existence is becoming known.

“Has the stupid Korean government still not been able to figure out what Life Mission is?”

“It makes sense.”

“Our country is like that.”

Cha Jun Sung thought that the government knew the situation and was neglecting it.

The person right next to him is also a Lifer. The reality version of Life Mission is spreading like a virus. He does not have to say anything for it to reveal itself.

People need to figure it out for themselves. If he gets involved, he could get implicated for nothing.

“That's a funny anchor.”

The mark left on the wrist from a PDA, that anchor is also a Lifer.

He must have taken it off for the authenticity of the news, but tons of people had already caught on.

1 or 2 out of 100 people on the street had PDAs on their wrists. Just because they took them off because they are detachable does not mean that they are not still Lifers.

Hm!

It was not far now. Within a month, the confusion would be gone.

When that happens, the reality version of Life Mission will dissolve into modern society like sugar dissolves in water. It will be natural as though it had always existed.

“Anyway, why is he so late? He’s completely ignoring the time we promised.”

Cha Jun Sung was waiting for someone. A few days ago, he put up a post on Lifer World that he was selling the booty he found in Field of Meat.

There had been a lot of comments, but he chose to sell to a fellow Korean. They had agreed to meet at 1 o’clock, but no one has appeared for 20 minutes.

“Mr. Odin?”

He heard a delicate voice. A beautiful woman in glasses was standing in front of him. People's attention focused their attention on her because she was so pretty.

"You're late."

"Sorry. Something suddenly came up and I didn't have a way to get in contact with you."

When she bowed her head, the picture he had drawn came apart. Cha Jun Sung felt himself in the wrong. Since it is of the past, he did not hold a grudge.

"Since there are a lot of people here, let's go somewhere else."

"There's a place I saw on the way here."

She took the lead and Cha Jun Sung followed. The curves of her body hidden under her suit are a form of art. He would not be bored on their way.

The place she brought them to is the top of a new commercial construction site. The security is tight. 6 security guards are blocking people from entering.

"Let me introduce myself. I'm Jung Hye Ryung of the virtual department of Chilsung Group."

“What?”

“The virtual department.”

“There are all types of departments now.”

“Life Mission is a next generation business that can bring in vast profits, so Chilsung Group has already contracted many Lifers.”

Lifers are not able to do everything. If the top company in Korea supports them with items, they can expect growth at a much faster rate.

They receive support and fulfill a request in return. It is mutual aid.

“No wonder you beat the others’ prices. Chilsung was moving.”

The government and large companies are the two ranges of public and private organizations. Chilsung Group, with dozens of subsidiaries, is one of the world’s 100 groups.

There is not a company in Korea that will fight with money against Chilsung Group. Since government assets are made from citizen taxes, its use for personal reasons is limited.

On the other hand, the chairman of Chilsung Group ranks 30 on

personal assets alone on Forbes. With all of the members combined, they exceed 50. No one can beat them with money.

“Can I see the items?”

“Of course.”

Cha Jun Sung took items out from the space compression bag. There was a pistol, machine gun, sniper rifle, automatic crossbow, ammunition case, parachute, GPS, et cetera.

They are the items of dozens of people. He had brought everything including what Park Jin Hyuk brought. There was quite a considerable amount. This could arm 2 parties.

“Is that bag a space compression bag?”

“Yes.”

Jun Hye Ryung’s eyes became ecstatic and looked at it as though it were a brand name bag.

A whopping 50,000 points.

Even she had only ever seen it once because it is the most expensive item in the Level E store. To think that there is another Lifer who purchased this.



“Because there’s nowhere to hide this. If I’m caught by enforcement with this in my car, I’ll be arrested or I’ll have to go through investigation, and it’s too heavy for me to even carry.”

He was not trying to be mysterious, but there is no good in revealing it either. He was thinking of using a big bag, but had chosen a space compression bag for various reasons.

“Do you have any thoughts of selling it? We’ll match whatever price you ask for.”

Of course she would want it.

He did not necessarily need it for the class E he would complete in a few days, but it will definitely be an item that he needs as he goes to higher missions.

Even if it is just the best item sold in level E.

“Money is just useless paper in Life Mission.”

It is just a fraction compared to Chilsung Group, but before he had enough wealth to buy the entire store even became a Lifer.

It may be different if something better comes along, but he would not sell it even for millions of dollars.

“Ah ah.”

Jung Hye Ryung thought it a pity.

The Lifers under contract with Chilsung Group were still new. But it was fine because money could compensate what experience they lacked. But this guy Odin is different and has gone far ahead as an expert. She needed to learn more.

# Chapter 35

---

“Please excuse my rudeness.”

“No, it’s okay.”

“How did you get these items? Did you buy them with your points?”

Cha Jun Sung smiled gently so that Jung Hye Ryung would not get the wrong idea. There is no crazy Lifer who would buy items with points to sell them.

They sell items when they no longer need them or if they come across them by coincidence as Cha Jun Sung did.

“They were gathered in a mutant nest.”

“There are store item numbers, but does that mean that many Lifers died?”

Items are classified into two groups. Ones that were bought in the store or ones found while going through a mission. The difference is in the product number.

“Since there were 3 survivors in 4 parties with 40 people, 37 people died.”

“Goodness!”

Jung Hye Ryung’s eyes widened in surprise. If 37 people went in and died in parties instead of solo, she could guess the difficulty level.

“And purchasing them?”

“Ah! They’re the point pricing decided in the group. Please check.”

The competent employees at Chilsung Group had created appropriate pricing.

Jung Hye Ryung showed him the prices written out simply. He had heard of the approximate prices on Lifer World, but seeing them is different.

The situation is different when selling items worth hundreds of points instead of 1 point. Of course an item is more expensive.

300 points is \$45,000.

400 points is \$64,000.

500 points is \$85,000.

This is how the price of points rises. The most expensive items that Cha Jun Sung brought are the 1000-point machine gun and sniper rifle.

If he sells the booty he discovered in Field of Meat, he would get hundreds of thousands of dollars. It is quite easy to make money. To someone with nothing, Life Mission is a way of life.

“Let’s do it.”

“That’s an excellent decision.”

Jung Hye Ryung looked satisfied. The items that she buys from Cha Jun Sung would become a way to develop the Chilsung Group Lifers a step.

If they arm 2 parties and go in a 1500-point mission, it would be a tremendous help to the guild founded by Chilsung Group/

Jung Hye Ryung handed a bag of money that was under the table.

“We rounded the last digit up and it is \$25 million.”

“Thank you. The number makes it easy to split with my friend.”

“Do you have someone with you?”

-[Zephyrus, put your gun down.]

-[Yes.]

Park Jin Hyuk's voice came out of the PDA. As a means of contact like a cellphone, it is the type that trades points.

When Jung Hye Ryung finally understood the situation, there were shivers down her spine.

“My friend is a sniper.”

“He was aiming here.”

“I had to leave everything covered because we need to meet in person in order to make a deal.”

How could he go out unarmed without knowing what kind of person would show up? Since he cannot walk the streets with his equipment on him, he needed to do this at least.

-[Aim at this woman in front of me for a second.]

-[Yay!]

A red dot showed up on her stomach. Jung Hye Ryung gulped when she saw it. If she had done something wrong, there would

have been a hole in her pretty face.

“I did something rude.”

“Since I did the same thing just now, we’ll call it even.”

It seemed she was talking about the space compression bag.

“As an apology, I’ll answer one of your questions.”

“Anything?”

“I’d like to if possible, but only what I know since I don’t know everything.”

Cha Jun Sung put the bag with the money in his space compression bag. Even as he prepared to leave, Jung Hye Ryung was only thinking about what to ask him.

“I don’t know how to ask you because I don’t know what you do and don’t know.”

“I know everything about level E missions.”

“Are you joking?”

Jung Hye Ryung’s expression hardened. Level E goes up to 3000

points. Until now, the only attack missions were Field of Meat and Bone Mountain with just a few others.

“Looking at the weapons you’re buying, I assume you’re trying to make a full 10 person party concentrated on 1000-1500 points and your goal is 3000 points?”

“How did you know that!”

“Are you going to stay at level E forever? You need to go up quickly and advance.”

Jung Hye Ryung had said that Life Mission would become the next generation of business with huge profits. Even if it is for the reward points, they will fill it up completely to go out.

With the proper weapons, 2 people could complete a 1000 point mission. As they go through, they will not be able to help but become ambitious and aim for higher.

“There are over 1000 mutants in Level 1 and close to 20 in Level 2. If each individual Lifer can’t break through 1000 points, don’t even try.”

Cha Jun Sung say goodbye to Jung Hye Ryung and walked toward the exit.

“Is that information with evidence?”



“3 survivors among 40 people – that mission is Field of Meat.”

Cha Jun Sung opened the door and left. Jung Hye Ryung who had been standing blankly understood what that meant and quickly followed him out, but he had already disappeared.

Jung Hye Ryung had seen it. Under Cha Jun Sung’s sleeve, there were impact tights worth 15,000 points. No wonder his body looked bulky.

With the space compression bag, he had only shown her 2 pieces of equipment, but even those total 65,000 points.

In a mission setting, how good is he? She could not be 100% sure, but he could really be the person who completed Field of Meat.

“Helper name Odin, level D Lifer who recently completed an advance mission. Since he said he had someone with him, does that mean there are 2 people just in Korea? I need to report this.”

It is worth reporting.

# Chapter 36

---

The Blue House.

The heart of Korea where the president lives. 2 visitors came to this place where not even senior officials could enter without permission.

“Mr. President, the Chief of Staff is here.”

“Send him in.”

When the Chief Secretary opened the door, the Army Chief of Staff with 4 stars on his hat and the Captain with 3 diamonds entered the President’s office.

“Attention!”

“Welcome. I was waiting for you.”

The President welcomed them both. It was a light atmosphere where it felt like he would ask how they are, but the reason for their meeting is not light.

For an hour, entry into the Blue House is banned.

Not even the Prime Minister would be able to enter. Dozens of security guards and soldiers were outside the office.

“So this is him.”

“Yes! He is very talented and placed 1st in the exam for Lifer skills in the entire army. He even surpassed the soldiers who are UDT Lifers.”

The President observed the man in his mid-30s. With his 190cm height and strong physique, he seemed invincible.

“Captain! Han Chang Jin!”

“I am familiar with the basic information through the report from the Chief Secretary. For a brief summary, you are saying that you would like to figure out the issue in the army first?”

Months had already passed since Life Mission became reality. As Cha Jun Sung had expected, the government had already completely identified the situation.

“Sir, do you believe that you will be able to control Lifers?”

The President shook his head. There is no way that he would be able to control them personally.

Even super power America was looking into each Lifer's identity

and mollifying them one by one. Clear measures do not come out for Korea.

“Korea’s land and population are small. If we lead the army, we can protect the nation from Lifers with rogue intentions.”

What if a criminal is a Lifer? What if there is no personnel to control these people? Even for an old man, becoming lawless only takes moments.

Sword possession permit?

Firearm possession permit?

It had been a long time since such formal documents had just become pieces of paper. As long as one has the points, they can go shopping for all of the firearms they desire.

Countries have been forced into situations where they need to take measures for national security but as time passes, nations are bound to form unions because they will grow as they combine.

“We’ve seen movements from large companies to create private organizations as well.”

“I know that as well. I am just not doing anything because there is no way to sanction the laws. Within a few months, there will be laws established regarding Lifers.”

If they could not force them, they could place sanctions. They cannot just let Lifers act freely.

“Countries are also trying to create army units made of Lifers.”

The start may be humble, but the goal is to increase the personnel and make it a symbol of Korea, while placing his son, Han Chang Jin, as the Commanding Officer.

This is not because it is his son. Han Chang Jin is a great soldier and Lifer.

He is patriotic and is skilled enough to complete 1500 point missions alone. If he leads Lifers, he will establish his place quickly.

“What extent of treatment are you thinking?”

“I was hoping for the most benefits and precedence that the country can offer.”

“Since we cannot decide it specifically here, I’ll meet you separately.”

The President finished speaking and looked at Han Chang Jin. It seems there is something he wants to say.

“I don’t know this Life Mission game because I have never done it but if it is as the report says, Captain Han was a very famous Lifer.”

Iron King Han Chang Jin.

Like Cha Jun Sung, he was one of the 36 rankers who surpassed the nightmares. Of course he had a separate ID, but he was just called Iron King in the second half.

“It is a meaningless virtual name, President!”

“Even if it is virtual, strictly speaking it is training for reality.”

“Yes, sir!”

“Then I’m sure the other 35 rankers will have achieved what you have?”

Han Chang Jin hesitated in answering the President. The two worlds are different. There is no guarantee that the abilities from the virtual version are manifested in reality.

But.

“If someone’s name is among the rankers, they will be active somewhere.”

The monsters he remembered would be laughing as they ripped mutants apart.

“How many are there in Korea?”

“There are 3 people including me.”

“Are you able to contact them?”

“I would be able to find Ghost Gun through acquaintances, but Overload is difficult.”

Han Chang Jin felt embarrassment as he said the names aloud. He is over 30 years old and saying things like Iron King, Ghost Gun, and Overload like it is a children’s cartoon.

“Ah!”

“What is it?”

“Overload has a blog.”

“Blog?”

“Yes. That is where he writes his know-how on matters like strategy and weapons. If we find the blog and track the IP address..... we could find him.”

Han Chang Jin swallowed his last words. Tracking an IP address is illegal. It is not looked kindly upon if someone is being tracked.

“Don’t you think there would be an understanding as it is for the country?”

“President, are you thinking of him as a member of the Lifer unit?”

“If he is as great of a Lifer as he is in the game.”

“He likes to play the game solo. He went around by himself inside the game as well. I can tell you for certain that he will not agree to it.”

To start, the way they are trying to find him is wrong. Even if it takes time, they need to find him in a normal way in order to maintain a relationship.

“There’s no reason to get ahead of ourselves. We can talk about that issue later and establish the Lifer unit first. As the President, I approve it.”

“Yes, sir!”

“Yes, sir!”



The father and son saluted. Just as large companies were trying to form private organizations, the government is preparing to defend the nation.

\*\*\*

The Director of the U.S. CIA had been under pressure for 2 months now because of an order from the top. No matter how much he investigated, the situation was not resolved.

He was so stressed that his hair was falling out.

“Until when do I need to monitor this? Something needs to come out in order for me to investigate.”

“There really isn’t anything?”

“No, it’s clean. It’s as if an alien came to Earth for a moment and disappeared. All information regarding Life Inc. evaporated.”

Life Inc.

It is a company that appeared 10 years ago and released Life

Mission that was like a nuclear storm. This monster game broke countless records.

While it was running, there was never a time when it lost its 1st place position in the game ranking, and it accomplished reaching over 100 million subscribers.

Even now when all traces of it are gone, it is the center of controversy – a secret. Does this make sense? They were not satisfied with the game and made a reality version.

The director was implementing the order to investigate Life Inc. with dozens of agents.

The headquarters of Life Inc. was erected in the center of U.S. Washington DC. The greatest gaming company in the world was operating from a mere 10 story building.

“300 employees disappeared at the same time. We cannot search their identities and they do not have families. No one has seen them since May 9, 2020 either.”

Life Inc. was a strange company from the start. It appeared unexpectedly as if it had fallen from the sky, and it cruised by from then without any problems.

They had 100 million cumulative users, and they always had more than 10 million current users at any given time.

In a state where they had such a strong fan base, if someone just calls for a fee, they would see astronomical profits that large companies could not even speak of.

If they put an advertisement up through the game? The profits increase even more. It is a goose that lays golden eggs. But Life Inc. did not have anything like that.

They offered the game for free and they kept a distance from actions that would bring in profits. They just left the game to become what it may because there were no bugs either.

Money hungry authorities and enterprises made huge efforts to create smooth relationships with Life Inc. in any way they could, but it was all in vain.

When they shook it, not even dust came out. When they set traps, it did not get caught.

Who could have known that gaming company success story Life Mission would create such a fiasco? If they want to find the cause of the reality version, they need to find anyone whether it is the Life Inc. employees or executives.

“This is driving me nuts.”

“I think it’ll be better to pretend you’re searching and to ignore the orders. Nothing comes out no matter how much we dig. It’s not like we can make information up.”

The director sat at his desk and massaged his face. It is easy in words, but the pressure he is receiving in reality is not something he wants to suffer again.

Even if he cannot implement the order, he does not have a problem because he gave it his best. However, that is a cause for being criticized that he cannot do his job properly.

Ring!

A phone rang with a text message. The agent looked at the director. It is discourteous to check his phone without permission from his supervisor.

“Check it. It could be important.”

“Yes.”

The agent took out his phone and checked his message.

[2nd preliminary Lifer selection complete.] [Selection criteria: random 0.1% of men and women from all over the world in their 20s-40s.]

“Huh?”

“What is it?”

The agent just blinked and gave his cellphone to the director.

“2nd preliminary Lifer selection? Hey! Hurry up and track the sender to find the location!”

If they track the text, they can find the person who sent it as well as the location that it was sent from.

They are going to find it even if they need to dig through the ground in the middle of a desert. The CIA became busy. A clue they had been so longing for had appeared and they needed to go with it as much as they could.

Ring!

This time, the director's phone rang. It was a call, not a text. He subconsciously checked the caller and became tense.

“I understand.”

The director's tone was serious. The agents could feel that something was off.

“Call all agents who receive a selection text going forward. If you are working, bring him to me even if you need to employ someone else.”

“Who is it that you are being like this?”

“The White House secretary office.”

The agents did not ask questions and left right away. If it is the White House secretary office, it would be the Chief Secretary and the person who had moved him is the President.

August 2, 2020, 5pm.

After the 1st preliminary Lifer selection, the 2nd preliminary Lifer selection began.

# Chapter 37

---

1st preliminary Lifer selection, half a year has passed since the reality version of Life Mission was started. It seems as though 3 months had passed with the 2nd round standards.

How had the world changed? It had changed a lot. Since the number of people going in was increasing, they began to understand on their own without anyone telling them.

The people who are selected become Lifers and go into the game.

They kill mutants and complete missions to earn points. Then they can purchase items that can be of help or that have value, from the store.

People see those that are worth money as the most important.

The sweet reward received in exchange for the unidentified reason for creating Life Mission or the problems that arise from this, is trivial.

It is the harm of a capitalist society's only thought that I need to succeed as an individual. It did not matter whether others died, and these kinds of situations grew worse with time.

The world is changing with the benefits provided by an unknown market.

Because the Lifers who started early, have an advantage with points, they could sell their items for hundreds of thousands of dollars.

An unusual path had opened for even the underdogs of society with nothing to live in prosperity if they were just good at killing mutants.

The people who had not been chosen as Lifers in the 1st and 2nd rounds envied those who had been and wished and wished for an opportunity in the 3rd round.

\*\*\*

Vroom!

An impressive BMW I8 rides the road. Its red body is sensual and tough at the same time. It is a sports car launched this year for \$200,000.

Youths gazed at the car as though examining it. All had their respective thoughts.

They thought it was no big deal, envied him, or were jealous. There were a lot of other thoughts on the car, but these were the leading ones.

The car was parked next to the Han River. The weather had become chilly because it is December, but there were a lot of people



regardless of gender and age.

People's faces were flushed. Not because it is cold, but because it is warm. To feel warmth in this weather? There is a reason for that.

Wiing.

The car doors went up like wings and the owner of the car came out. It is Cha Jun Sung, a handsome man with looks fitting for a sports car.

“Insulating long johns are good. People are moving so actively.”

Insulating long johns that holds inner body temperature while blocking out cold air are sold for 10 points in the store.

For some time, the bulk distribution of store products through Lifers working with major companies have had an impact on the public.

Harmless items like medicine that stops bleeding and makes the wound scab as soon as it is applied, and odorless spray that gets rid of all smells were among them.

They were expensive, but very useful once purchased. They do their money's worth. With the large population, they sold quickly.

The products in a class E store is at this standard. The items in class D have not yet been revealed, but they could have an effect on electronics later.

A cyborg that can only be seen in movies might roam the streets.

The government and major companies are taking these items that surpass modern science, deconstructing them and trying to grasp the principles of them.

“Look here. It’s another shooting accident.”

“Even if laws have been strengthened, there are so many crazy people. It’s an apocalypse.”

A young couple passed Cha Jun Sung’s car. They were looking at the news on their smartphone and discussing it.

As much as Life Mission and the store have had a positive impact on the world, they have had negative effects as well. Effects like the shooting accident being reported on the smartphone.

There is no way to determine the state of firearm possession without searching through millions of people. They can buy whatever they want from the store as long as they have the points.

Crime rates had surged 150% from last year. A professional burglar needs a gun but if that is hard, there is the automatic crossbow. They are going crazy.

The shocking part is that Lifers themselves are quiet, but it is the general public that is going around doing these things. They were expressing their frustration with not being chosen in crime.

One month ago, a law targeting Lifers was enacted. It ordered them to enroll as Lifers while paying taxes as citizens.

\$100,000 in taxes every year. As it is impossible to calculate exactly how much Lifers make in profits, a sum of money had been decided.

A Lifer earns \$100,000 by completing a 300 point mission. The government had chosen an amount that is not burdensome and instead low. After the law was enacted, there was almost no protest to it.

The next part, the national registry. On the outside, it looks like it is just a Lifer license like an identification card or driver's license, but it is not at all on the inside.

There is the sneaky ulterior motive to track the number of Lifers and watch them with various goals like migration.

Cha Jun Sung did not see it in a negative way. There was a trend of private organizations popping up everywhere. If they are not managed, they might become lawless.

However, the taxing and registry have common problems.

They need to enroll in order to pay their taxes? This meant that they do not need to pay if they are unregistered. The government expected this transgression and put a powerful restriction in place.

-[Lifers are a potential threat to the well-being of the country.]

-[If law enforcement catches an unregistered Lifer completing missions, it is punishable with 5 years of community service.]

It did not mean that they would receive punishment for 5 years but that they would act as a Lifer for the state.

Then what would happen to a Lifer who is registered, but does not like missions and wants to give up the privilege? How could he manage the \$100,000 tax?

Nothing has been revealed in detail, but the government is in the process of creating a program for these kinds of Lifers. They will do well as it is a great power.

“Now that I’m here, my mood is better.”

Today, Cha Jun Sung shut down the blog that he had run for 10 years. He did not delete it completely, but placed a lock on it so that only he would have access to it.

Once the reality version was introduced, the number of visitors

gradually decreased and starting a few days ago, it did not even go over 30,000. There were still a lot, but it had diminished.

Of course, advertisements had dropped off one by one. It was not like nothing was left, but Cha Jun Sung called the advertisers himself to take them down.

He got the sense that the advertisers were in favor of this in their voices. He was able to take care of it within minutes because he was solving a dilemma they had due to their contract period.

The virtual version of Life Mission was dead. The age of the reality version has come. He does not care about money. He felt strange because the blog had been like an alter ego.

-[Where are you?]

-[Han River. Are you done with the mission?]

-[1500 points is easy. I want to go into a 3000 point mission, but I'm scared.]

-[It'll be dangerous because you have distance.]

-[Huk! To say that you can do it but I can't! I should just fold and do something else.]

A few months after doing Field of Meat, Cha Jun Sung's skills

had advanced so much that he was capable of completing advance missions by himself. It is the power of the 2nd stage of body modifications.

Park Jin Hyuk went through the 2nd stage as well, but going alone was dangerous because his basic aptitude was low. He could guess what would be said next.

-[Now is it level D?]

-[Yeah.]

-[The easiest preview is 5000 points, but how strong do you think a level 3 will be?]

Cha Jun Sung has fought the Evil Queen before. Compared to level 9, level 3 would be like less than the dirt on his foot, but it is a fearsome monster in reality.

-[It'll be separated by what style they are.]

-[Mind or body?]

-[Right.]

The combat style of mutant are split into two. The type that uses skill to make up for its weak body. The type that is purely physical in pushing forward.

The ones that use their heads use poison or stealth, but whatever it is has shortcomings. Therefore, Park Jin Hyuk could face them as long as they prepare well.

With those that use physical strength however, failure is inevitable unless one has gone through the 3rd stage of body modification.

-[Do you know what Slayer is?]

# Chapter 38

---

-[Slayer?]

It seems he does not know. Park Jin Hyuk had not been in the virtual version for even half a year.

Unlike Cha Jun Sung who started in South America, his starting point was Asia. Slayers do not appear in Asia.

-[That's a disgusting bastard. If even 2 gather, they can fight 3 Evil Bloodsuckers.]

-[What! But Evil Bloodsuckers are at the top of Level 3!]

-[Opinions are divided, but I see Slayers as the strongest in Level 3.]

They are fast and sharp. That is Cha Jun Sung's assessment of Slayers.

Its body is two or three times the size of a person's, its legs are abnormally long, arms are sickles like a mantis', and it's fast enough to make someone pass out.

It may be possible with an ambush, but it is impossible to hit with an automatic crossbow. It may or may not work with a gun either. It moves to get out of the way before the shot goes off.



Its thin skin is a flaw, but if its skin was thick and even had guarding properties, it would have gone over to Level 4. This is the type that uses pure physical strength.

-[If we combine our strength, we'll be able to fight with 1 Slayer, right?]

-[If it's in a wide space.]

He could not guarantee it. One of the two of them would die. It could be that both do.

-[Are we going to go as a party?]

-[It is our first attempt, so don't you think it'll be better to go in as part of a raid?]

It is not like he is looking for wealth, so they must go in and take a look with the thought that it is a quest.

If they go in together and fall into an unfavorable situation, they can only quit the mission. It is better to earn less points and join a raid operated by the guild.

Most private organizations cannot go out because they are blocked at 3000 points but when viewed globally, there are many people who have gone into Level D.

Is their equipment better than Cha Jun Sung's? The answer comes out just from looking at a Level E mission. The difference between 2 people completing it and 10 is 5 times the points.

If the number of people who enter Level D goes from 10 to 100 people, it goes from a party to a force. They are making up for the lack of skills with equipment.

The word is that if a private Lifer goes into a guild raid, there are a lot of opportunities to take all of the points with few casualties in situations that are not dangerous.

This is why even if the rewards are great, people are unable to gather enough points to go through body modification as Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk did. It is fortunate if they even get to complete the 1st stage.

-[Have you decided on a place?]

-[Hocheon.]

-[If you say Hocheon, are you talking about Daeho Group? Their reputation is bad..... It'll be alright, right?]

Daeho Group is one of the 10 groups. Their ranking is at 8? Since they completed this advance mission, they could be expected to make an attempt at Level D.

Rumors say that several major companies shed a lot of blood and each completed Level D, but the number of casualties exceeded 60.

Daeho Group is on the late side. Enterprises do not like to lose. It is inevitable that they will become impatient in trying to catch up. They could be followed then.

-[Since there are a lot of people going in, I guess it'll be genocide if we don't command properly.]

-[Strangely, major companies don't have patience. I don't know if it's an issue with guilds or with alliances, but they rush into assault. That's why so many of them die.]

They are armed with good weapons like limited SMGs and sent into missions. It seems their strategy is to blindly run in since there is an unending supply of Lifers.

3 months have flown by since Cha Jun Sung completed Field of Meat. He only looked at Level D missions. He felt that he was too lacking.

The standard for making an attempt at a challenge is whether or not he is able to fight a Level 3 alone.

After preparing for 3 months, he finally felt like he was qualified. He found new Lifers who went into missions recklessly daft and pathetic.

-[Rest for a few days. I'll contact you.]

-[You relax too.]

They ended the call. Soon, Daeho Group would be recruiting Lifers entering Level D. They would need to complete simple missions while examining the situation until then.

Kyak!

People gather in. While Cha Jun Sung was leaning on his car, locked in his thoughts, there was a fuss not far from him.

“You bitch! I fed you, gave you a place to sleep, and gave you clothes to wear and you cheat on me?”

“Honey! That’s not what happened!”

“Shut up!”

A Lifer holding a crossbow was glaring at a man with a woman while aiming at them. He looked as though he would kill both of them.

Cha Jun Sung slowly moved in among the people. A crossbow show at Han River, it would be something unimaginable before. Life Mission had ruined the world.

“Everyone, go away! I’m going to kill you two! You guys want to die too?”

When he swung the crossbow back and forth, people became frightened and backs away. There are Lifers among them. Lifers are people too. They die if a hole goes through their heads.

“Who are you!”

“Me? Just an observer. Don’t pay attention to me and go on so I can watch.”

Cha Jun Sung’s finger was pointing at himself. It is an infuriating gesture.

He did not back off and watched from his spot, pretending he did not care. The angry Lifer felt as though he had been lit up.

“Asshole! I’ll kill you too!”

“If you can.”

An arrow from the loaded crossbow flies out. It is not a bullet, but it reaches a speed of almost 200km, so the average person cannot avoid it.

As the distance is a mere 10m, it is over in the blink of an eye.

“It’s the lowest level of the crossbows. It has short range and weak penetration.”

Cha Jun Sung lowered his body and ran forward. He could see the arrow clearly. With the 2nd stage of body modifications, his physical abilities increased by 4 times.

His calloused hand caught the arrow. The repulsive force pulls his shoulder.

“He caught the arrow with his hand!”

“Goodness!”

The people who had watched a scene that was like magic made a fuss.

Cha Jun Sung reached the Lifer within moments and punched him in the stomach.

His eyes rolled with the pain of his guts being twisted. Cha Jun Sung had really only hit him slightly. If he had hit him with force, his muscles would have been ruptured or he would have died.

“Tsk!”

Cha Jun Sung looked at the Lifer who had passed out with pity, and went back to his car.

Rather than getting involved because he wanted to, he felt that he would have been in a terrible mood if someone had been murdered right next to him.

“I saved a couple people’s lives.”

The law says that a Lifer who commits murder is to be executed.

That is what it says, but no one knows if it is actually true. They may not really kill the murderer.

Vroom!

He started the car and left Han River. If he stays here, there will just be bothersome incidents. In a short while, the police would come and resolve it themselves.

# Chapter 39

---

“It’s up.”

Cha Jun Sung clicked on the recruitment announcement on Hocheon’s homepage.

They had cast their bait 9 days after he made up his mind at Han River.

During that time, other guilds were diligently recruiting Lifers as well. Their standards must have been raised however, because their goal was 6000-7000 points.

It did not seem like there would be a great gap between 5000 points, but they could not ignore the step. Even if it makes them late, it is important to take each step.

If their patience runs low in the first place, they would not have waited 3 months.

-[We are recruiting intrepid Lifers in Hocheon to go into a Level D mission. We will be selecting personnel with a test, so please knock on the door to Hocheon on the given date and time. Thank you.]

Information like the sponsor and how many people would be recruited were posted, but it meant for them to wait until the test and go to Hocheon.



“The number of people they’re recruiting is 50..... Since it’s the first, are they saying they’ll go in a controlled orientation?”

Controlling becomes easier as a guild has more people. If it is 50:50, he could guess Hocheon’s intent. It meant that this round is a quest.

Filling a guild to complete a Level D mission is solely for the reward points. They accept bribes to take people with them.

People could say, ‘If they’re going to do that, why follow them.’ ‘If individuals make a force, they can get rid of point bribes and take-alls.’

Would all Lifers who went through the advance mission to go on to Level D have outstanding skills? It would have been good if they did, but the reality is in the gutters.

Top Lifers create a party and allow 1 or 2 mediocre Lifers come along in exchange for a bribe of points or money.

Mediocre Lifers could complete the advance mission just by watching from the rear. This is why problems in skill arise.

They only think about getting out of Level E, and do not think about honing their skills.

Since there are Lifers that still struggle with Level D 1000 point solo missions, there is a type that cannot come out alive without the help of a guild.

-[You have applied for the recruitment announcement.]

Cha Jun Sung applied. Simultaneously, Park Jin Hyuk followed suit and applied.

“We just have to hide our body modification.”

There is no change in the equipment. It was all the same as when they left Field of Meat.

450,000 points accumulated. Of those, 200,000 points were invested in the 2nd stage of body modifications. He did not buy anything with the 250,000 points and they were being held in his PDA.

The price of each Level D equipment is at least 30,000 to 40,000 and reaches 300,000. As there is no way to resell them, there could be great regrets with the wrong click.

If there is something that Cha Jun Sung needs to buy, he deals with the most expensive item first. The first thing he wants in the Level D store! The thing that made him fall in love at first sight!

“Wolf blade.”

It is the best blade to buy from the Level D store. Its weak cutting force is a flaw, but it is understandable because it is a downgraded version.

300,000 points! If he just gathers 50,000 points, the wolf blade is his.

If the body modification and weapon are combined, he could confidently take on the lower half level Level 3 mutants as long as they are not as extreme as Slayers.

Park Jin Hyuk was also aiming for head hunter, a 350,000 point explosive sniper rifle. These are sitting right in front of them. They would come into their possession if they complete a few more missions.

“100 applicants. It’ll be noisy.”

An annoying situation could arise, but thinking like that before even going is unlucky. It is better to see everything in a positive light.

“I might as well warm up.”

The test is in 3 days. He does not want to just hang around, so he should just complete a mission.

He wanted to break through a 3000 point mission while he was at it, but it would easily take 5 days alone, but it would be enough to do two 1500 point missions.

“Hey!”

“It’s complicated.”

Park Jin Hyuk and Cha Jun Sung had expressions of disbelief as Lifers came swarming in like bees.

Seuk.

They could feel explicit attention. Everyone was comparing their equipment.

The test is simple. After checking their equipment and mission experience, they just have to go into a 1000 point mission accompanied by observers to complete it alone.

“I can’t tell by looking at them.”

“I’ll say.”

Everyone had impressive gear as people making attempts at a Level D mission should.

A 1000 point would be simple to complete if they had gotten here on their sole effort, but those that did not would be filtered out easily.

The difference between an expert and someone who is not shows in the simplest of behaviors.

Only a few users had equipment like Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk's. They would need to keep an eye out but from what they saw so far, there were only three or four people.

There is a relaxed sense to their waiting. Those people are the real deal. They are Lifers who have gotten here on skill.

“There are a lot of pretty women.”

“So you are a man.”

“But it's not like I'm trying to do something about it. I just like seeing women more than I like seeing men.

Cha Jun Sung nodded in agreement. Could it be because the ratio is small? Strangely, he has never been in a party with a female Lifer.

According to the government census, the ratio of men to women is 7:3. In some ways, it is inevitable that there are more men.

The violence of Life Mission is more attractive to men than it is to women. Since that was reborn into the reality version, what would happen?

Even among the 36 rankers, only 6 are women. Cha Jung Sung had maintained an amicable friendship with one of those women.

“Reminds me of that woman.”

“Who.”

“Someone. She’s pretty, cold, and quiet, but makes me feel good when we’re together?”

“Oh oh! Invite her to a party!”

“She’s a foreigner. She can’t come here easily and I don’t know her contact information.”

With the ability to add friends in the virtual version, they could take actions like meeting up, but they had lost contact when the game switched to a reality version.

She is not a woman to be taken easily, but if it had been possible to contact her, he would have asked her opinion before inviting her to be part of a party with him and Park Jin Hyuk.

“We’ll meet if it’s fate.”

“What a pity.”

If they are fated to meet, they would meet. If the trust they had fostered in Life Mission had not come apart, the feeling would not have changed with time.

“Lifers, please gather in the auditorium! We will begin the test.”

A staff member of Hocheon’s guild yelled through a speaker. He moved the disorderly Lifers into the building auditorium. Cha Jun Sung was mixed in here as well.

When they went into the auditorium, judges were waiting for the Lifers at the end. They are the primary filter.

They could lie about their mission experience, but they could not lie about their equipment.

“I will call you in order by your names.”

The guild staff member started with last names beginning with K. Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk settled into the seats for Lifers with the thought that they would have to wait for a while.

The order passed in order. There were 2 or 3 people eliminated out of every 10.

Even those who passed were separated by their equipment. People with mediocre equipment and those with distinguished equipment. The guild staff members spoke politely to the latter.

Park Jin Hyuk went out and shortly after, Cha Jun Sung also went out. Both were assessed as the highest level and joined the ranks of Lifers receiving better treatment.

The practice test was also conducted by order of name. Even if a lot of people had been eliminated, it is impossible to observe each mission with just the staff members in one day.

It is safe because the observers are veterans who have gone through 1200 to 1300 point missions. Park Jin Hyuk went on the 2nd day and Cha Jun Sung went on the 3rd.

They were told to stay at a reserved dormitory in Hocheon until their turns came.

“Numbers 1 to 250 will enter the assigned missions.”

The mission numbers are decided, but another is assigned if one disappears. Even if tens of thousands of people enter, there is not a shortage of missions.

If there were, Life Mission would not have been able to handle the Lifers all around the world.

“Enter.”



In order to be chosen to enter the group entering Level D, Lifers were making the commitment and throwing themselves into the mission. They just hoped there would be no deaths.

# Chapter 40

---

“You don’t have to do this.....”

“I can’t receive special treatment when everyone is doing it. There’s no reason to either.”

An observer had an uncomfortable expression. After checking Cha Jun Sung’s equipment and mission experience, the observer proposed skipping the practical test.

His equipment was of a category indicative of someone who bribes others to join a group. A few other Lifers also received this proposal.

There were people who accepted and those who rejected, and Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk were among those who rejected.

In this situation, that was a favor. A major company giving out a favor?

Cha Jun Sung did not want to be connected to Hocheon in any way. There must be something that they want from him. He is blocking it, whatever it is.

“Phew! It’s high.”

The roof of a 12 story building. All he needed to do was get down

from here. The goal is the escape. There is nothing as quick as escape if someone has the skill.

He opened the door of the roof with a crossbow in his hand. He only needs 30 minutes.

Not coming up with a strategy? What strategy. Kill it if he is detected while going downstairs, and keep going if he is not. The only aspect he needs to pay a bit of attention to are Level 2 mutants.

“Excuse me!”

“Yes?”

“Are you just going downstairs?”

“Yes.”

“Aren’t you going to take equipment like bombs? You’re just going with one automatic crossbow?”

The observer was taken aback by the straightforward answer. He had seen a lot of Lifers’ missions, but this is the first time someone is acting so recklessly.

When they enter missions, they rack their brains to prepare for all potential situations that could arise or equip themselves with all

types of gear and crawl out.

On the other hand, test number 617, Cha Jun Sung, ignored all processes.

“It is escape, not annihilation. We need to move quietly to avoid engagement.”

Would it be necessary to call in mutants that he does not need to fight by firing a gun?

“But still.....”

“Does Hocheon get involved in playing styles?”

The observer gulped. He could only assess if a Lifer is passing or eliminated, and he does not have jurisdiction beyond that. He was just worried that he would have to get involved.

“I’m going.”

“Number 617 test is beginning.”

The observer gave up. He thought that Cha Jun Sung was placing his trust in the gear on his body. If it becomes dangerous, he could eliminate Cha Jun Sung and handle it himself.

Cha Jun Sung went down the stairs. About 300 Level 1 mutants appear in a 1000 point mission. There would be about 20 to 30 per floor.

When he arrived on the 12th floor, demons with thin arms and legs and a bulging stomach greeted him. He could not tell what they had been eating, but their mouths were messy.

An arrow embedded in its forehead. The same scene repeated a few times.

One shot, one hit. It was just one shot no matter what. Before the demons could react to the strange presence in their nest, they were dead.

A demon that had been hiding behind some shelves, flung his body at Cha Jun Sung. The observer watching from a distance pretended he did not notice. He could not get involved.

Cha Jun Sung did not even look at it and grabbed it by the neck. The demon that had been caught suddenly made a choking sound.

As its neck broke under the force of squeezing, there was the sound of cracking. Its body went limp. Cha Jun Sung threw the body.

The 12th floor was handled within moments. Even though it is a Level 1, it was done too easily. The observer fully realized that Cha Jun Sung is a true Lifer. He is not like the people who latch onto

others. He is better than Hocheon's raid leader.

10 arrows in one bundle, is 5 points. Since they are a waste to throw away, they can be taken out and reused. It is a bit uncomfortable to do, but quick.

“What are you doing?”

“It's nothing.”

He was about to go down to the 11th floor, but the observer was standing with a blank look.

‘Its neck..... Would I be able to do that too?’

Level 1 mutants are weaker than humans, but breaking its neck would not be easy. The observer suspected body modification but went past it thinking that it is probably not possible.

Even the master of Hocheon only went through the 1st stage of body modification a month ago.

Since he is now preparing for the 2nd stage, it is hard to believe that a private Lifer is able to go through body modification after getting that kind of equipment.

He thought that Cha Jun Sung in front of him could not do that unless he is a world renowned Lifer. This is why stereotypes are

dangerous.

“Ugh, it’s bothersome.”

He wanted to go through the emergency stairs. But these damned helpers cannot let their Lifers take the easy route.

He suddenly remembered something funny he read on Lifer World. One Lifer had posted that he completed an escape mission by jumping off with a parachute.

As he left the mission area, a special mission was activated while it became Level D and because there was no way to go back, he had to give up the mission.

It is a scary situation where one might die, but it is funny in text.

To take a parachute off of a building, he is probably an unusual person in real life as well.

Every time they went down a floor, they met the demons living there. The numbers that ran away in fear of Cha Jun Sung’s strength increase.

They had smelled the blood coming from upstairs. Even if they lack intellect, they have instinct. This is where mutants have an advantage over humans.

After killing mutants here and there, they got closer to the 1st floor. At the same time, they detected strange movement in the front. It must be a Level 2.

“Will you hide somewhere you can’t be seen?”

“Ah, sure.”

The observer left. It is not necessary for him to put himself in danger to see the battle. His mission is complete just by seeing the results.

“Where are you?”

Kyak!

He even went into a shaded area on purpose with the thought, ‘I’m unprotected. I’ll give you the benefit of surprise.’ Going further in, it bit the bait.

Cha Jun Sung tilted his head and got out of the way. A sharp toenail passed right in front of him. It was really close. He moved just the amount that he needed to. He had planned this.

“Demon Chief.”

It is at least a head taller than he is. With its sturdy muscles, it must have muscular strength as well. A normal Lifer would not



have been able to take it on with a bare body.

Cha Jun Sung looked the Demon Chief up and down and stopped on a spot. Even the cannibals covered their important parts, but this goes around naked.

The Demon Chief's voice sounded as though it were mocking him. It made him angry.

“You’re going to be executed.”

Its crime is crushing a man's pride. He could not forgive it.

# Chapter 41

---

A sharp-looking man, the master of Hocheon, Chun Myung Ik, carefully looked through the list of applicants who passed. He does not look through the entire list with hundreds of people.

Chun Myung Ik only looked at Lifers with gold ratings. The vice master looks through the silver, and the raider leader goes through the rest. Contacting them is a matter for later.

He turns the page of the list. Shin Ho Young, the operating officer, waited in silence.

“Are there 6 people?”

Chun Myung Ik who read through the content, spoke. He sounds pleased. He does not know about body modification, but they are at the vice master’s level if they are gold level.

“So 3 people rejected the exception.”

“Their reasons for rejecting are similar. They said they would do what everyone else needs to do.”

“Contact the guys that accepted first.”

“We handled them first.”

“The difference between the guys who accepted the exception is just whether they have a lot or a little, and there’s going to be a prestigious ceremony. If they are treated like kings, they’ll fall into that and be easy to handle.”

Chun Myung Ik grew up in a rich family. He knows how to identify a situation.

Even if they are annoying because they are so full of themselves, it could be overlooked as long as their skills are there. They would become blood and flesh for Hocheon at any time.

“It has become quite a fun world, hasn’t it?”

“A dream has become realized.”

Chun Myung Ik leaned on a plush chair. He is the second son of Daeho Group.

He had been far from business administration since a young age. While his brother was advancing in business, he was going into Life Mission. Is that why? Everyone thought him pathetic.

The situation is reversed now. Chun Myung Ik’s brother does not have an account for Life Mission. He was not chosen in the random 2nd round of selection either.

Chun Myung Ik’s position in Daeho Group went up everyday. He did not have ambition before. But now that he has gained power,

his thoughts changed.

He wanted to take Hocheon past Korea to make it a world-renowned guild.

He desperately needs talent. He does not need bookworms who write up business plans at their desks. The type of talent he needs is skilled Lifers.

He did not feel that they fell behind other guilds, but the reality version is not like an open highway. There are obstacles everywhere.

It is not a situation where starting first meant reaching the finish line first.

“What about preparations?”

“They are being processed without issues. Currently, we are picking outside personnel.”

Chun Myung Ik, the vice master, 10 raid leaders, and upper levels will participate in the level D mission. Since there are limitations to the crew, small adjustments need to be made to the operations.

The advancement of Hocheon is riding on this. They need to button the first hole well.

If they fail, Hocheon's honor falls to the ground. Members of average guilds and Lifers at lower levels do not get an opportunity.

“We're completing this no matter what.”

“Of course.”

Chun Myung Ik stood up and enjoyed the scenery outside. Sacrifice on behalf of a handful is inevitable. He is always part of that handful.

He would try to save as many members as possible, but they would be turned out if the situation calls for it. For Hocheon, there is nothing more important than mission completion.

\*\*\*

Lifers' actions become busy. Various sounds rang in their ears. It was the sound of firearms and gear being checked.

They will be entering a Level D mission in 10 minutes. They checked their equipment multiple times, but they need to quickly go to the store and supplement whatever they were lacking in.

The top 50 Lifers of the 1000 who took the test, were chosen.

They have the skills to complete a 1500 point mission alone. If 10 of them make up a party, they could complete a Level E advance

mission as well.

“They’re complete burglars.”

“Think of it as an investment for the future.”

“Does it make sense? To ask for half of the reward points! They’re thinking of getting 2500 points for nothing. They’re going to take all of the mutants anyway.”

Cha Jun Sung calmed down Park Jin Hyuk who was grumbling. It was harsh even to him. He heard that other guilds asked for 30%, but Hocheon is 50%.

Since the guild is the subject of the mission, they go in with a mutant take-all.

Lifers other than Park Jin Hyuk had issues with it, but Hocheon did not force the mission on them. If they do not like the conditions, they can leave.

“I’m tearing.”

“Let’s go see the mood.”

Their purpose in applying for Hocheon is to see how many level 1, 2, and 3 mutants appear, how wide the map is, and what they need to prepare and keep in mind.

“If they’re going to be like this, they should have just gone in by themselves.”

“If they do that, they can’t earn points.”

“Why not?”

“Think of getting 50% of points from each guild member. If it were you, what would you do?”

If it is a guild at Hocheon’s level, it is possible to come up with the members to complete a level D mission. The reason they do not do this is for the bribes.

They are thinking of using outside personnel as a means to earn points. Lifers who pass the test have gotten on the ride whether they wanted to or not.

The auditorium door opened and Hocheon’s master Chun Myung Ik, vice master Oh Min Ho, 10 raid leaders, and the 38 upper levels they chose, came in.

Along with the personnel in waiting, 100 people had gathered together. Chun Myung Ik’s people acted pompous and went up on the stage. Lifers focused on them.

“It’s the burglar boss.”

“Be careful what you say.”

Cha Jun Sung scolded Park Jin Hyuk. When Chun Myung Ik turned around, the auditorium became quiet. If he hears someone saying negative things about him, it could become an uncomfortable situation.

“I am Chun Myung Ik, master of Hocheon.”

Hocheon’s guild members clapped. Lifers did not follow suit and looked at him. They just wanted him to quickly say what he needs to and go into the mission.

“I’ll get to the point. As this is a mission of extreme importance to Hocheon, we hope that you will give it your best.”

Chun Myung Ik said a few more words. If it were not for the mission ahead of them, these are people that he can ignore. Lifers searched the mission name on their PDAs.

-[Level D Mission: Empire Biology Institute] [Goal: Attainment]

-[Content: Pharmaceutical company, Empire, established hundreds of laboratories around the world. Laboratories study samples that are respectively differentiated. According to current Lifers’ standards, deodorizing the sample on the last floor is impossible, so you must create a path to the middle half first.]



-[Reward: 5000 points. Lucky box.]

“Empire Biology Institute? Even the conglomerates can’t escape the clutches of missions.”

Empire.

It is a world-renowned representative pharmaceutical company of America and exists in reality as well.

With time, there was a connection between the mission’s worldview and reality, but what that was is not revealed.

There are several companies that have experienced damage because of missions. There were even times when government secrets were revealed.

“Give me your force applications. My helper name is Vulcanus.”

Lifers gave their force applications under Chun Myung Ik’s helper name. Cha Jun Sung erased the questions in his head and decided to focus on the mission.

It is not his duty to reveal the phenomenon. If they keep going, there will be a day when they find out. Until then, he will just keep going forward.

## Chapter 42

---

It is an open space like a tunnel. Nothing was visible because of the darkness where no light entered. It was damp and heavy.

The starting point was quiet. It is as an area specified by the helper should be.

A red light flashes. The force members' vision goggles had turned on. As their vision sharpened, they could see around them.

There is a difference with built-in features, but everyone had vision goggles because their equipment was on the better side.

“Is this the path to the laboratory?”

“This scale is no joke.”

It is not certain where it is open until. It was not uncomfortable even though 100 people had gathered. If the path is to this extent, the laboratory will be incredibly large.

“I think it's a linking mission.”

“It could be.”

Park Jin Hyuk whispered. He thought that it was impossible to reach the sample on the last floor with the current Lifers'

standards.

There is a high probability that as with the underpass, it is a linking mission where the level of difficulty becomes higher as they travel in. Until the middle is the limit that the force is to be allowed.

A catastrophe could arise if they stepped into this without tension, but he did not think that Chun Myung Ik would be that stupid.

“Who activated the radio feature?”

“Me.”

“I did as well.”

“We can do it too.”

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk also raised their hands. If they use the radio feature, it is possible to deliver a messy situation and react quickly.

“We’ll match them to frequency number 6.”

-[Ah ah! Can you hear me?]

-[I can hear you.]

-[Confirmed.]

The voice is clear. It was just right in dealing with a large scale of members. Those without radio features agreed to follow the Hocheon guild members' orders.

-[Seeker input.]

10 seekers in simple gear went into the tunnel ahead of the force.

The vision goggle range is 100m. It is extremely efficient on this kind of straight road. It is an invisibility cloak that conceals a moment's appearance.

A clear system is not visible because it does not have the former system of the virtual version, but they could work out a frame.

A mechanical engineer who uses all sorts of means like stealth, search, laser, sniper, hand-to-hand combat blader, professional terrorist.

There is even a medic who has the ability to fight and is also specialized in medical equipment.

There are hundreds of occupations in the virtual version. If they gather points and purchase equipment, Lifers' styles will become

more determined.

“Do you think there will be something outside?”

“Don’t you think it’ll be a desolate desert, the middle of nowhere, or in the middle of the sea?”

There is no detour.

It is a cul-de-sac.

Behind them, an iron door of a thickness they cannot guess is blocking the way. There has not been a Lifer who escaped the mission area, and no one who escape had anything good to say.

Unnecessary curiosity brings trouble. It is wise to only do what they are being told to do.

-[200 meters in front, we’ve discovered an object similar to the iron door behind us.]

-[We found a door that one person can go through. Force, proceed.]

Chun Myung Ik signaled with his hand to move them. The force formed a long line and took one step at a time. Cha Jun Sung was going to follow as well, but he did not see Park Jin Hyuk.

He looked around for him and saw him stuck to the iron door behind them.

‘What are you doing?’

‘There’s a door here too. I want to open it.’

‘Follow me.’

Cha Jun Sung took him by the hand and dragged him. Park Jin Hyuk still looked like he wanted to open the door.

When they arrived at the front, a seeker was waiting with the door open.

It seemed opening the door was not difficult. They went inside in turn. About 5 minutes passed and everyone on the force had succeeded in entering the laboratory.

“Geez.”

“It’s incredible.”

Even if it is a laboratory, it is a building. When the force members looked at it however, it did not seem to have the configuration of a normal building. It was so wide that it was like looking outside.

It was to the point where they could hold a soccer or baseball match there.

“There are a lot of strange things here because it is a laboratory.”

“It’s perfect for a mutant to ambush in.”

“Be careful.”

“You be careful.”

The Hocheon guild members were quiet but as there were so many Lifers, they could hear a reckless local broadcast. It was difficult to control each person.

-[For a smooth mission process, we will temporarily operate the laboratory power.]

The dark lab lit up brightly. The Lifers took their vision goggles off. More than what they could see, there is nothing they could do about the cumbersome aspect.

“He should have just left it off.”

“Really.”

“We can’t avoid battle anyway. This kind of environment is

easier to fight in.”

“We have to take care of it manually if the power doesn’t come in, but how could we do that? If the path to the middle is blocked by an automatic door, what are we going to do then?”

The force members were divided by positive and negative thoughts. If a mutant wakes up, the risk becomes higher but it is convenient in some ways.

Cha Jun Sung was on the positive side. In a mission, not being able to avoid mutants while trying to is an added option. On top of that, is this not their living room?

Since they are used to the darkness, using them is another option.

-[We will not move on until we completely attack one area.]

Chun Myung Ik radioed in. To interpret, that meant he wanted to make sure they kill all of the mutants to get the points before moving on.

The average time to complete a level D mission is 1 week if it is short and 2 weeks if it is long. In this situation, it would take 2 weeks because they are cleaning up the entire place.

Clunk!



“You heard that, right?”

“Yeah.”

They heard the noise of metal colliding far away. Because obstructions blocked their view, they could not tell what was making the sound.

The force members were not able to hear it and were busy chatting amongst themselves. Chun Myung Ik and Oh Min Ho who had only gone through the 1st stage of body modification were focused on explaining the operation.

If the first metal sound was a fricative noise, the sound now is clearly a mutant’s cry. It is getting closer. As the sound grew louder, Chun Myung Ik reacted later.

-[To the raid circle.]

Hocheon’s raider took out his SMG. It is not visible yet.

“Slow and frustrating, it’s those guys.”

“What type is it?”

“Demon.”

“Ah! Demon.”

The cry of demons is unique. A few force members realized what the approaching mutants were. It is similar to zombies that appear in movies.

The difference is that it is not a corpse but a living being. It is an easy opponent as long as they are careful of its vomit, salient with acid solution.

Demons swarm in from everywhere. It is ugly as though a person was melted down.

They were covered by obstructions, but there looked to be 200 to 250. With so many of them coming in early, it shows the difficulty of level D.

-[Aim a shot each and fire.]

Pew pew!

They could only go as fast as human speed would allow them, so they could not even approach them and fell to the floor one by one.

When a bullet goes through them, blood splatters. Compared to their numbers, they were pushed back relatively easily.

There is no reason to take their heads off. Wherever they hit them, all they have to do is get the shot. On the other hand, Chun Myung Ik did not kill them instantly and hoped to end it without acting.

-[Stop.]

The hail of shooting stopped. Chun Myung Ik and Oh Min Ho looked among the demons sprawled on the ground and happily killed the ones that were still alive.

They are getting all of the points at one time. That is why the point accumulation speed of large guild cadres was so fast. They take others' points and take the easy work.

-[Move.]

They are remaining by the iron door because of Chun Myung Ik's predation. They need to move diligently if they want to get to the middle. The Lifers followed orders well.

Cha Jun Sung watched the Lifers' actions and focused on understanding the mission.

He had given up on points before entering the mission.

Instead, he would be gaining something better. First, he needs to find the changes. Even if the answer is different, the goal is to find the formula.

If the points are the same, the difficulty will be similar. Level E was like that as well.

The lab is a large maze. No matter how much they wandered, the terrain did not become more familiar but instead, more complex. This is how large the map of a level D is.

C and B could be guessed to be about the size of a small town. Then the time it will take to complete? It could take at least a few months and up to a few years.

“They’re scraping everything up.”

“They’re persistent.”

There are dozens of rooms where people sleep and warehouses that store items.

Hocheon went around digging through each to see if there would be anything to take.

The comical aspect was that outsiders like Cha Jun Sung were under control, ordered to just follow them everywhere without any other rights.

The tyranny of a large guild. Hocheon was showing them the epitome of a take-all.

# Chapter 43

---

[\[Previous\]](#) [\[Table of Contents\]](#) [\[Next\]](#)

[TN: Here is your last chapter until I come back from my x-country road trip! This is unlocked as a sorry for going away :P]

Unlike the other Lifers, Cha Jun Sung did not have a problem with it. He had chosen this. He even thought it convenient that he did not have to do anything but watch.

Park Jin Hyuk was also relaxed and had a drowsy expression.

Several hours had passed since they entered the lab. In that time, they had engaged in fights just 3 times and each time, 200 mutants had turned up like the first time.

It seemed the mutants were coming at them with numbers since the Lifers came in as a force.

“We could handle the beginning on our own.”

“Level 3 is the issue. Since the goal is getting the path to the middle, it’s probably there, but it wouldn’t be weird if they turned up now either.”

What if they were at ease because it is the beginning and a Level 3 turned up amongst the Level 1s and 2s?

The aspect they must not overlook in missions even more so than the mutants is change. If a change in the flow occurs, everything becomes a mess.

“Looks like we’ll be here a few days.”

“Probably.”

“I’ll draw a map.”

Park Jin Hyuk activated the hologram on his PDA. It had memo and drawing pad functions, so it was useful for writing information down.

He must memorize the entire situation including the terrain and mutants.

If it really is a linking mission, they may need to come here often.

He could not guarantee that they would be coming as part of a force the next time, but if they made the evaluation that they could handle it between the two of them, they would come in before Hocheon could make another attempt.

Whether it is 1 person or 2 people, no one else can enter a mission until the leader of the party that entered first comes out. Life is speed. There is no sharing.

‘Let’s enjoy this freedom.’

He looked peaceful, but his eyes and head were attacking the lab.

\*\*\*

They went around and around for 5 days. Chun Myung Ik is a man and he kept his word. They did not move on to the next area until they cleaned one out.

A mission that started with tension became covered in annoyance.

Park Jin Hyuk swore about Chun Myung Ik randomly. He is ignorant and only hunting. As the same situation kept repeating, the mission became long and extremely tedious.

“I can’t take this anymore.”

“Me neither.”

“What is he doing? This is too much. We’re not just lookouts.”

The other Lifers expressed their complaints out loud. They could understand bribes and take-alls because they were told about this ahead of time. The issue was that there was no progress.

If they finish like this, all they come out with are 2500 reward points.

They wanted to speed up the mission even if it meant catching less mutants, but Hocheon did not seem to have any intentions of doing so.

A take-all and this situation are completely different. Lifers had participated in this level D mission while knowing that they are at a disadvantage, for the experience.

If this was a level E mission, they would have earned about 10,000 points by now.

“Looks like they’re going to start something.”

“It’s just that they ask for too much patience, but it’s not like there’s nothing to get out of this.”

They had stayed in the lab for a long time, but he had learned a lot. And in a broad view, they had been able to see the difficulty level of the beginning of a level D mission.



Nearly 2500 level 1 mutants appeared. There were over 30 level 2 mutants.

Even with that, they had not been able to reach the middle. The map is vast and according to the region to perform in, it is important to know how to use the facility.

Because power becomes the operation, there is freedom in a primitive life. The boiler turned on in the room with the Lifers and it would have even been possible to take a warm shower.

In the food warehouse, there was abundant food for all of the force members to eat for 1 year. Though it was worn out, it even had a medical facility as a lab should.

If only there were no mutants, they could have figured out the food, clothing, and shelter in the lab.

The more interesting thing was that if there was a well-informed Lifer, he would be able to dominate the lab's main system like the helpers.

Then they would be able to find out the lab's exact configuration and why it was founded. They might even be able to find out some secrets of Life Mission.

The question was of how many people there were in the world who would be able to do this.

15 Lifers went to Chun Myung Ik who was taking a break amongst Hocheon members. It seemed they were going to voice their complaints like Park Jin Hyuk had said.

“Look here, Mr. Chun Myung Ik.”

“Do not call the master by his name. Show respect.”

The raid leaders blocked the Lifers. They looked like loyal servants.

“Name? Respect? Are you filming a soap opera?”

“What?”

Ha ha!

The Lifers laughed when the raid leader became angry. Chun Myung Ik is only a master to Hocheon. He is just Mr. Chun Myung Ik to Lifers.

“Speak.”

“You get to the point.”

Chun Myung Ik had the raid leader back down and asked the Lifers why they had come to him.

“I’ll be direct. Until when are we going to keep going in circles?”

“I think we told you.”

“If you were going to take so much of our time, you should have told us on the notice or before entering. What are we supposed to do if you tell us once we’re inside?”

Chun Myung Ik looked into the Lifer’s eyes. In the sudden eye match, the Lifer was pushed down by his opponent’s force, but he endured it with his trust in his colleagues.

“Did you really not know?”

“So you’re saying you didn’t do anything wrong because this is something that other guilds do as well?”

“Yes.”

“You’re joking.”

Hocheon’s infamous ways are like a practice. Lifers are not completely ignorant to this.

However, there is a difference between hearing about others falling to it and going through it yourself. There is no loss like this. There was a need for calculations.

Lifers needed to choose between quitting the mission and going through with the mission the way Hocheon wants to. Chun Myung Ik listened quietly and then filled the rest of their words.

“So it seems like you’re asking for the chance to hunt equivalent to Hocheon’s.”

The Lifer coughed as though he had hit the bullseye. Anyone, not just Chun Myung Ik, could think like this. He thought for a moment before speaking.

“You 15 take part time shifts at the front, hunting the mutants.”

“Really?”

“Really. Just one thing! You have to fall back right now if you don’t have the confidence. I really don’t like people who take back what they say.”

The Lifers were happy with Chun Myung Ik’s decision. They had already gotten an idea of the lab’s pattern. They could kill hundreds as long as a level 3 does not appear.

Even if it does appear, the force members would help. It is a golden opportunity.

“Are you finished?”

“Ha ha! It’s a good thing the master of Hocheon isn’t too stiff.”

The Lifers were satisfied with the result and went back laughing.

‘Hm.....’

Cha Jun Sung saw everything that had happened and felt off about it. He thought Chun Myung Ik would have rejected them, but he gave in so easily. He is less fun than expected. Unless he is up to something.

-[Let’s go.]

The short break ended and Chun Myung Ik stepped in for the progression. After solving the problems of the discontented, the mood of the force became much lighter.

# Chapter 44

---

-[You have gotten through the beginning of the Biology Institute and entered the center.]

As soon as the door to the cargo lift opened, they received a welcome and unexpected notice.

The journey through the beginning had finally ended and they were moving on to the next step. The lifts were large enough to hold all of the force members with space for more.

It had not been created for transportation at first, but since it was aimed for large capacity loads, it was easy to load and move people with it.

“The warehouse is as big as a gym.”

“What do they have saved here? Is this too related to the linked special mission?”

One Lifer approached a container box and tried opening it. It has a padlock on it but that does not matter.

-[You have discovered a large object. The linking special mission is starting.]

-[Level E Special Mission: Procurement]

-[Goal: Attainment]

-[Content: Move the materials into the briefing room regardless of the type.]

-[Reward: 1 point per 1kg]

“The food storage and hospital are the same.”

“Tsk! If the space compression bag were big enough, we would have gotten a few thousand points.”

There was so much that Hocheon could not keep all of it to themselves, but they did not bother putting their hands on it. The absence of space compression bags is a big reason why.

Even if they had them, there would be no room inside because it would be full of items they need to take care of the mission.

“What a waste.”

“It’s however you think about it.”

Cha Jun Sung looked around the warehouse. If all of it was taken to the briefing room, it would be worth a few million points.

If the food warehouse and hospital was added, they would no longer need to worry about points. If they complete the mission however, there is no re-entrance.

It is a type of balance. There is a limit to the points that they can obtain.

With the underpass that Park Jin Hyuk found, it could not be seen as a completing with killing the blood-sucking insects. The blood-sucking lord needs to be killed for it to be over.

Repeating the task of emptying the bag and filling it again seems to be ignorant.

If someone enters the mission during that time, it becomes like a dog chasing a chicken. The reality version that Lifers experience is not forgiving enough to allow for tricks to work.

It is an enclosed space with restricted access, save for a few cargo lifts. It was ominously silent. They could only hear the sound of wind leaking in from somewhere.

“It’s the entrance.”

“Is there just one?”

As they walked along the container box, they quickly found the entrance door. Unlike the lift, there was just one. It seems they have to leave through that door.



It has a door like a valve because it stores important material. The handle did not turn whether it was because it is locked or rusted over.

Chun Myung Ik called one of his guild members. The man cut the valve with a fever cutter from the space compression bag. They carried with them all sorts of items.

It did not cut in one try. It took quite a while to open the door, but it was still better than making a lot of noise by trying to open it with a bomb.

Creak!

The door opened up to a narrow passage like a train compartment. One person at a time? If they tried to fit two people in, it would be packed tight.

Now it was time to input the seekers, but Chun Myung Ik spoke to the Lifers who asked for equal hunting opportunities.

-[Go in.]

-[You're telling me to go in there?]

-[Of course not. I'm telling all 15 people who came to me yesterday.]

-[I'll turn it down. If we go in and a mutant comes at us, won't we be the ones taking the hit? Put in the seekers like you normally do!]

At that, Chun Myung Ik touched his face. Hocheon's guild members held their breaths. It is behavior that he shows when he is really angry.

-[Do you swallow it if it's sweet and spit it out if it's bitter?]

-[What are you talking about?]

-[I told you to fall back if you don't have the confidence and now you're saying that you want to put the seekers in because it seems dangerous? I'm sure I told you that I don't like people who don't keep their word.]

The Lifers shut their mouths as though glued. Their shock was apparent. Everything that Chun Myung Ik was saying is correct.

“They're caught.”

“Chun Myung Ik is obnoxious, but they won't be able to refute that.”

He had given them the opportunity to hunt because they had frustrations about the slow progress. However, they are trying to pull out now because it is a dangerous situation.

No matter how much they tried to look at it in a good light, they could not. They were completely trapped. Chun Myung Ik had justified reason to condemn those who disobeyed him.

-[If you will not go in, I'm going to send the list of your names to all guilds in Korea. If you can't follow through, you shouldn't have said anything in the first place.]

-[You can't do that!]

-[Please!]

It is an extreme measure and it is possible with Hocheon's influence.

The 15 Lifers looked at each other. It is safer the later they go in.

If they are being forced to go in, they need to avoid being at the forefront. Everyone looked at one person. The first Lifer who brought up the issue to Chun Myung Ik.

He looked like he was going to cry. He would turn back time if he could.

The Lifers went into the passage. They do not have a choice.

It is not a width that can hold 100 people, so they went in 20

people at a time from the beginning. Cha Jun Sung was in the 2nd half of the group.

There were thick and thin pipes all over the passage walls.

The surface itself is a sturdy steel. It would be difficult for a mutant to get through. The ceiling and floor were similar. All they have to do is be careful with the front.

Since it was the basement and there was not much ventilation, the internal temperature was high. Tension and heat mixed to make them sweat. It felt bad, but they endured it.

Each time they opened the door, the group leader was relieved. They were on edge just in case a mutant might appear.

It was when the door opened for the 4th time. The view changed suddenly from that of a place they needed to go into a place that they need to escape from.

They could not go out recklessly. They were going out as though waiting for something.

The group leader put his vision goggles on. The range is short because it is a basic model. The effect was weak as well because the wall is thick. Only the open front is clear.

-[Go forward.]

‘Damn it!’

‘Damn.’

Chun Myung Ik’s radio reacted the same as if it were the leader’s.

It was strangely dark even though the power had been turned on. Why is this? Is it something the mutants did? As they relaxed, they started having other thoughts.

Their feet became heavy with tension. They could not get out because they might be attacked by surprise in their blind spots. One Lifer threw a photothermal grenade after thinking a while.

The grenade flung far hit the ground and gave off a bright light. As it is an open space without obstructions, the brightness had its best effect.

‘Chair? Table? Vending machine?’

‘Is it a rest area?’

A few people from the leading group stuck their heads out and looked around.

They could not figure out the situation outside by seeing what is inside the door. What could they do when they did not want to

expose their bodies but stick their heads out.

They were in desperate need of navigation equipment, but the point consumption for that would be severe.

There are commonly seen products on the market.

Their first impression was that it is a rest area for public use. They could be wrong but this was their feeling. Fortunately, they did not see any mutants.

‘Seems empty.’

‘Whew!’

One Lifer let out a deep breath. The hot breath rode the air and spread throughout the rest area.

Thump.

A sound similar to a heartbeat rang in the leading group’s ears.

It was weak at first, but it grew loud enough for all of the force members to hear. It is a living sound that a machine cannot make – there is no doubt that it is a mutant.

Sniff sniff!

They are certain that it is the heartbeat of one being. It just seems like several hearts were beating at the same time and after overlapping multiple time, it was like a drum was being pounded mercilessly.

-[It's a hatchery.]

Cha Jun Sung unintentionally revealed the mutant's identity in the radio.

# Chapter 45

---

There are few mutants that show their identities in such a unique manner. Of them, only the hatchery follows heartbeats.

-[Of course.]

-[I think it is as well.]

The force members agreed with Cha Jun Sung's opinion. They had each also experienced Life Mission for a few years. They knew how to distinguish between unique mutants.

-[Which stage do you think it's at?]

-[Since it's level D, 1st stage is highly possible and 2nd if it's more evolved?]

-[That's right. If it's completely developed, it would not be 5000 points.]

It is a hatchery. It is nearly unable to fight but like its name, it consumes nutrients when it feels danger to produce mutants.

Hatcheries go through the nest in the 2nd stage and become a complete headquarters. Headquarters in the virtual version are whopping levels 5 to 7.



Cha Jun Sung had never seen a level 7 headquarters before either. According to rumors, only Nine Tail of the 36 rankers had caught one but he could not remember well.

The guy outside is a hatchery or nest. It would be better if it were a hatchery, as long as it is not an old nest with a level 4.

-[Seeing how it is waking up from hibernation, it seems it smelled the force members.]

-[There isn't movement in the production. It hasn't sensed danger yet.]

The radio became busy. It is easy for 100 people to get rid of a hatchery.

What they are reluctant about is coming across a new mutant during battle.

Mutants are each individuals. So most of them including the hatchery, do not like encroaching on other areas.

This is a variable. They could get in trouble if they let their guards down thinking that it is just a hatchery area. They must calculate all possibilities in every situation.

More is better does not apply in the case of mutants. If there are more mutants, there are only more disasters. Not having any is the shortcut to world peace.

-[I still see a few dark corners. Let's throw a few more photothermal grenades.]

-[If possible, I'd like to get visibility and get by without fighting.]

They cannot bother it. It is important to deliver the message, 'I want to get by this path. I don't intend to impose on you.'

Instead of throwing the photothermal grenades, they were rolled out. 3 photothermal grenades lit up the rest area. The panorama came into sight, including the hatchery hanging on the ceiling.

-[Nest?]

-[Damn it!]

Thump.

It is a living being hanging ominously over a rest area exceeding hundreds of square feet.

It is like a wrinkled piece of meat with disgusting veins, bumpy thorns, and dozens of open wombs that give birth to mutants.

A hatchery has less than 10 wombs. It has a short range, thin veins, and thorns that look as though they are not fully protruding. The one on the roof is immature.

The light red color shows this. Regardless of its evolution, the color gets darker the longer it stays. In the case of headquarters, it is a darker red than blood.

Even if it is freshly evolved, a nest is a nest. Therefore, it is definitely a level 3.

-[Does anyone know how many minutes it takes to pull a level 3 in the virtual version?]

-[It only takes a few seconds for level 1, 1 minute for level 2, and 5 minutes for level 3.]

There must be a Lifer other than Cha Jun Sung who knows because someone responded as soon as they heard the question.

-[How many wombs are there?]

-[26.]

It was hard for people other than the leading group to check the situation, so it was relayed by word of mouth.

-[It could pull out 400 mutants by itself. It looks like we'll have to expect at least 2 mutants in level 3 as well.]

This is in the case of a fight. If they just get past this safely, they

will not have to face even one.

-[Do you see a way out?]

-[Wait a second.]

The Lifers that were an issue to Chun Myung Ik had found a path using photothermal grenades.

With the force as the point, there were doors similar to the one they had come through to the east and west. They must be paths to places like warehouses.

In a direction slight off a straight line, a connection that they could go in and out of with ease was waiting for visitors.

-[I can see it. It's difficult for us to assess this on our own, so please come and take a look for yourself.]

-[I'll go up.]

The force members pushed their bodies against the wall. The passage is narrow but when they moved around a little, they could make enough space for Chun Myung Ik and a few others to get through.

When they arrived at the front, Chun Myung Ik looked in the direction the Lifers indicated.

-[We've found the right place.]

A rest area is a place to meet. Even if they had rode the cargo lifts into a different warehouse, they would have had to go through this one anyway.

It seems the road pioneering mission exists because of the nest. Since it is in the center, blocking the path to the latter half of the mission, they will need to either avoid it or kill it.

“Do you think the mission will be complete even if we avoid it?”

“I don't think so if it's pioneering.”

“Right? If we avoid it, it'll stay alive. That's not pioneering it. With time, it'll multiply or develop into headquarters.”

The force members nodded to Park Jin Hyuk's words without realizing.

It makes sense. What if when they received a sample takeover that is suspected to be a link, the starting point selection is always a tunnel? Every time they come, they would have to face the nest.

[Battle will be the worst possible situation. We will go in the direction of avoiding it.]

Chun Myung Ik thought on Park Jin Hyuk's words before making

his decision. They will go with the lower risk first. Battle is not the best method, it is the second best.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung who was passing through the rest area with the force members slightly tilted his head.

Boom boom!

The nest is moving. Is it because it senses movement in the area but not danger? They were being consistent without showing activity. Even if it noticed that they have a motive, it had no way to know what that is. Look. Does that bizarre creature have expression? It is just stuck to wall.

‘Throwing it is a problem too, but the middle falls and blasts if the bomb’s timing is off. In this battle, a bomb is a double-edged sword.’

The distance between the floor and ceiling is about 30m, higher than a 10 story building. This problem is not to be resolved with strength alone. There needs to be a sense for measuring distance.

Even with Cha Jun Sung’s muscular strength, he could not guarantee that he would get the timing right.

To only bring shock?

As a building type, the outer shell of the nest is tough and thick. The eggs is hatches are indescribably hard as well.

‘Confine them.’

There are 100 people in the force. It is a large space of almost 500 to 600 square feet, but a battle here would put shackles on the Lifers.

If they misuse the weapons, allies will be hurt. Weapons do not have eyes.

‘It’s the best way.’

A few Lifers kill the hatching eggs that fall one by one.

A few check from the rear. The Lifers cannot get mixed up no matter what. A level 3 that falls will keep several Lifers tied up.

If this happens, there will be fewer deaths. There is no guarantee for what will happen once they encounter it. It is all just prediction.

-[The situation at the tail-end?]

-[Groups 7 and 8 just passed. Now, only 9 and 10 need to pass.]

Soon after, the rest of the groups came over. The force went into a connected path. A change occurred while they were get farther away from the nest's sensing range like this.

-[If you would like to complete the mission, you must get rid of the nest in the rest area.]

-[Ack!]

-[This is crazy!]

The force was in despair. What Park Jin Hyuk said had come true. They could not avoid battle. They reacted with sensitivity because the situation has a direct impact on their lives.

-[We'll need to split up into teams. It is not a good environment for 100 people to start shooting.]

-[Are you saying that some people will have to go out and fight while others stay back and keep a lookout?]

-[If you have a twisted outlook like that from the beginning, our teamwork will only come apart.]

There are several conversations. There is one meaning in all of the conversations. 'I don't want to go out and fight, so you go out.'



It is different if the entire force goes out, but they do not want to take the initiative to go out and fight. Cha Jun Sung did not refute this either. He was the same.

-[Can't we lure them into the warehouse?]

-[Oh! It would work if we take on a few with our large numbers!]

It is the method that Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk used in Field of Meat. If they use that narrow passage, they could reduce the nest's productivity for sure.

‘Will the nest be deceived so easily?’

# Chapter 46

---

Hatcheries and nests are intelligent. This is unnecessary to say for the headquarters.

If the nest is the head, the womb that produces mutants is the body or arms and legs. There is no reason that something that needs to control hundreds of mutants would not be smart.

Cha Jun Sung hid his inner thoughts. Even if it is not deceived easily, it is still better to fight it in the warehouse than it is to fight in the rest area.

‘So this is how the situation becomes twisted.’

Chun Myung Ik wanted to avoid the nest in order to reduce the damage.

Level 1 and 2 could not harm the force. Level 3 is different. There are a lot of points to be earned if they catch it, but it is wise to go past it if they can.

-[We will decide the order of going back to the warehouse to face the nest.]

They need to create a rotation however they can, whether it is by drawing lots. If they do not, it could end with everyone trying to push it off to the other. If they are chosen, they will just have to think of it as fate.

Chun Myung Ik started with looking at the last group that came in. Maybe because they already passed through once or because they need to fight, their tension was released.

Achoo!

A Lifer who had been moving in the middle, sneezed.

The smell in his saliva filled the nest as it sprayed out.

Kung!

It is a sweet smell contrasting that of a mutant's. A smell that was once sensed a long time ago, wet the nest's resting appetite.

-[Bastard! Why would you sneeze! You bastard!]

Ranting was poured on the Lifer who sneezed. As the radio became noisy, the rest area rang. It did not matter if they lowered their voices because they had already been discovered.

26 wombs open and eggs the size of humans come out. It is impossible to distinguish their levels visually. The force rushed to the warehouse.

With so many people, the eggs fell before even half of them could go in. When the eggs hit the ground, they broke and unidentifiable

mutants sprang out.

Kiak!

A nest operates the genes of the mutants that it gives birth to as it pleases.

It could even maintain the characteristics of the types that it swallowed. As long as it has nutrients and freedom, it can bring out new types as easy as production.

“Get away!”

“Die!”

Pew pew!

A Lifer was caught and brandished his SMG. It was washed out because it is a level 1. They cannot drag the time. These guys are bait.

There are 26 eggs but 20 hatched. It is obvious that 6 of them will be level 2 and 3.

Level 1 only takes a few seconds, so they fell down as they were killed.

“Hurry up and get in, asshole!”

“Move!”

The entrance is narrow, but nearly 50 Lifers had gathered there. Since it is a lawless situation, their speed was faster than usual.

Zing!

Woah!

When there were about 20 Lifers left, 4 out of 6 eggs cracked. A roar let them know that a muscle monster over 2m in size had been born.

“It’s a Crawlion!”

“Shoot!”

It is a simple and ignorant mutant. Its intellectual level brinks on retardation as it only eats, sleeps, and kills, but its tremendous muscular strength covers this shortcoming.

Its muscular strength alone is 5 to 6 times that of a human. The toughness and thickness of the muscles are reminiscent of elephant skin. Even as it is hit by an SMG, it pushes forward.

Kung!

Bang!

The Crawlion pushed through the shooting and headbutted a Lifer, hitting his chest and making him fly at a wall of the rest area.

With the shock of the pressure on his chest, the protective gear and his sternum shattered, and his ribs pierced through his heart, lungs, and skin.

The more shocking thing was that he must have still been alive because he moved his head.

Kiak!

While 4 Crawlions were hanging in, the number of level 1 mutants increased to 50. Wrapping up was up to the Crawlions.

-[Shit! Chun Myung Ik, you asshole!]

-[If you still have the strength to curse, how about blocking the mutants from the rear?]

When Chun Myung Ik heard the radio come in, he laughed in mockery. The Lifer cursing at him is the one who had asked him for an equal chance to hunt.

He had not known that there was a nest when he had sent the Lifer to the front. How could he have known?

All he had done was allow the 15 Lifers who did not know their place to have the first meeting with a level 3. If they live, they live and if they die, it is their own fault.

When they discovered the rest area, the nest realized their presence. This is when they started thinking. They needed to know the cognizance of the nest.

It was the perfect location to force them out. They could push the look out onto other Lifers.

The thought 'as long as it isn't me' made the 50 members of Hocheon and the other 35 Lifers into accomplices. It was a cause that could make them into sacrifices.

After Chun Myung Ik confirmed safety through the 15 Lifers, he sent the 85 people into the rest area. There was no issue until he heard his helper's announcement.

From now on? The faster they go into the warehouse, the lower their chances are of being attacked. The slower they are to go in, the higher their chances of attack. He was fair and sent the people who came out last, in first.

15 is the end. 1 idiot had sneezed but the results were not bad.

Someone needed to block the mutants at the passage anyway.

Though it was a forced matter without consideration for their wills, but he did not care.

-[Ack!]

-[Kya!]

The radio is full of screaming. 20 Lifers were battling the Crawlions and level 1 mutants that surrounded them. Escape was not feasible either.

Pew pew pew pew!

Sparks fly in the passage. 6 Lifers paired off and took positions to shoot to the side, sitting, and standing, supporting the Lifers outside.

Kung!

Kung!

The nest cries. 1 Crawlion understood it and went toward the passage. Its flesh ripped as the shooting was focused on it, but it kept pushing on.



Bang!

And the door closed.

Ping!

Since it is an iron door, the bullets did not go through and bounced in all directions. One flew by a Lifer's head, but he avoided penetration thanks to his helmet.

“How could it close the door!”

“Go and open it! We'll all die like this!”

“You go!”

None of the 6 people approached the door. If they open the door and are captured by the Crawlion or are dragged outside, they are dead.

-[Help!]

-[There are only 12 people left!]

Ping ping ping ping!

Even while hesitating, Lifers died. Everyone ignored it because

another's death was not as important as their own safety.

Papat!

6 Lifers closed their eyes and went into the warehouse. There, 74 Lifers were preparing for battle. The first casualties were 20 people.

[If a level 3 is born while we're fighting out there, we don't know how many people will die. The best we can do is to block the passage and only kill the ones that approach us.]

Everyone looked at the only door that was closed at a distance, and sighed deeply. The second that door opens, they would be stuck at the border.

-[Ha ha ha ha! They're all dead!]

-[Hurry up and move this! Chun Myung Ik, you asshole! I'm going to kill you!]

A few Lifers must have survived because the radio rang. It seems they killed the Crawlions. Since there are 20 people, they had to have a lot of fire power.

-[Behind you!]

-[Huh! That's s.....!]

Not even 10 seconds had passed since they let them know that they are alive. They had talked as though they would come in through the door at any time, but the radio ended with an eerie sound.

“It’s a level 3.”

Cha Jun Sung touched the sword on his belt. It is not enough with level E equipment.

Is the store level separated for no reason? If he had the level D wolf blade, he would have been able to take it on alone but it was a pity.

Kihik!

Kiki!

“There are 2 of them.”

There is no particular characteristic to the sound. They need to see it for themselves to know. It could probably rip an iron door as if it is paper, but it does not come in. They seem to be under the nest’s command.

-[Snipers, please get into position where you have a good view of the passage.]

-[Install your Craymores and support with fire power against whatever comes from the head. The people with grenade launchers, please wait on the side.]

Their roles are distributed. If a mutant comes in through the passage, there was enough fire power aimed at it to take care of it whether it is a level 3 or 4.

There is confidence in the Lifers' expressions. It can never get through this.

Try coming at them.

# Chapter 47

---

Blood dripping from the stomach flows down the leg. The Lifer who had radioed in was hanging 2 meters in the air.

6 nails that were like a rake had penetrated his stomach, and came out. They are almost 1m long. A lifeless body hit the cold cement.

A forked tongue covered in yellow bumps licked the blood on its nails.

Kihik!

It looks around the area. There are objects born from the matrix and pieces of meat with sweet scents everywhere. It is a favorable scene.

-[Sniper.....]

-[Craymore.....]

The Lifers could sense movement beyond the door. Even though they could not see it, they could hear it and their emotions showed in their sweat.

After taking a few steps, it is at the door. As large as it is, its strides are long.

It can see a Crawlion leaning lifeless on the door. It is a hindrance to its focus. It grabbed the Crawlion by the head and flung it to the side. A 200kg weight hit the ground.

Kikik!

Kyak!

Another of the same type appeared. Brothers born at the same time, their appearance and ability to fight were the same. The two mutants recognized each other.

They both thought. Should they break the door? They could crush it with one or two hits. Should they crush it and go in to fill their stomachs with the blood and guts of weak beings?

Kung!

Kyak!

The nest stopped them and gave them a different order.

They made a fuss and gathered the corpses in one place. They even made sure to pick up the small pieces. They did not separate the mutants and humans.

A large lump detached itself from the nest's main body, crawled

down, and swallowed the corpses. It is getting supplements by consuming nutrients.

It spit out the gear that it cannot digest and even sucked the bones of what it could digest. With this amount, it would not need to worry about food for a while.

The lump that absorbed the corpses went back to the main body and supplied it with rich nutrients. It went back to a healthier state than before it had given birth.

Woowoo!

Kyahak!

The nest gave its 2nd order. Because the creatures are large, it is dangerous to go through the passage. They need to find a path where they will not be attacked.

Papat!

Kwajik!

They searched through the rest area, broke a door on the east side, and entered the warehouse.

Kihaek!

They disappeared into the warehouse and the rest area fell into silence. The nest trusted the creatures and produced 26 eggs. They are all level 2 mutants.

The creatures surprise attack the force from the back and the level 2 mutants can join to spread confusion. That is the nest's plan.

Oh!

Level 2 mutants are born. They varied by specialty in those with sturdy skin, petite and fast bodies, and large with strength.

The nest had distributed roles just as the force did. It did not know if the force members knew this or not, and was just waiting for the door to open.

\*\*\*

The snipers climbed to the top of a container box.

No matter how much they look around, this is the best place as there are no obstructions and it is high up. It is refreshing because they have a view of everything.

If they need to shoot from the bottom, they could. They could stay in a corner.



There is a worst case scenario. If the mutants get through the passage and go to the warehouse, a higher place is best.

“I can see well.”

Park Jin Hyuk put his eye to the scope to check the passage. It seems they could see everything from the bottom, but the view is clearly different from the top.

He changed the scope. The long-range expands too much, so it disturbs the short-range. A proper sniper has 3 or 4 scopes to fit distance.

“If they come in, I’ll have to hit all of them.”

Hihit!

Park Jin Hyuk got in position 25m away from the passage. Of the 7 snipers on top of the container box, he was closest.

He could not know the other Lifers’ sniper skills, but being closer is better if the speed of their bullets is similar. That is of course if the passage is open.

Crunch.

“Huh?”

Is someone grinding his teeth? Park Jin Hyuk tilted his head and looked behind him.

He sees snipers. They all have their faces on the container box. Their necks are stiff from keeping their eyes on the scope.

If they rest, there is less of a burden if battle starts.

“I’ll have to rest too.”

Tung!

Park Jin Hyuk laid on his stomach comfortably as well. If it becomes noisy outside, there will be a signal from under them. He will last longer if he starts abusing his neck from then.

Shashak!

“Who’s been playing around since before?”

Someone is grinding his teeth and blowing into the air. It is bothering him.

“Uh.....?”

He turned his head again and his thoughts became paralyzed.

He could not tell if what he is seeing is a dream or if it is real. A monster one and a half times the size of a Crawlion was sticking its tongue out.

Spat!

Ugh!

It was just a short moment of 1 second. Park Jin Hyuk fell off of the container box as he tried to avoid the tongue from reaching his neck.

Shoong!

He did not fall without doing anything. He threw any of the grenades that he could get his hands on. He was not able to check the type. He did not have the time to do that.

Bang!

As the impact grenade went off, the container box was crushed. The force members' attention went to the source of the explosion. Then they saw the mutant's body leaping to the side.

“It's a Spectre!”

It is 3 to 4 times the size of a human, has long malformed arms and legs, 12 rake-like nails, and it is as fast as a Slayer.

[Groups 1 and 2, check the passage. Group 3, fall back and face the Spectre!]

Chun Myung Ik determined the situation as the master of a large guild should. He did not know what had happened, but it had come in already. They need to end it before the situation worsens.

Pew pew pew pew!

Dozens of Lifers brandished SMGs. The Spectre climbed the ceiling and walls to avoid the shower of bullets. It moves like a ghost.

Then it disappeared among hundreds of container boxes. They failed.

-[Put on your vision goggles!]

All of the force members wore their vision goggles. They would not perform to the fullest because of the thickness and number of container boxes, but they had to put them on.

Zing!

The sensor could not get past 2 of them and got stuck on the way.

-[Sniper, sniper respond.]

-[Everyone will have died. I think I was the last.]

Park Jin Hyuk spoke. The Spectre had been going for his neck to break it.

It seems like what he thought had been the sound of teeth grinding was the sound of a neck breaking.

If he had not been able to detect the Spectre's movement with his senses enhanced through body modification, he would have fallen to the same fate as the other snipers.

‘Where did it come from?’

The Spectre made a round in the next passage. It had tracked the body odor of the force to come through the ceiling of the cargo lift.

It had not made any sounds because it cut through it carefully with its nails.

Everyone had been moving busily. Even if there had been a sound, the force would not have been able to hear it unless it was loud because it was so far away.

The Spectre handled the easy targets first. That was the snipers.

The reason why it left its nails and used its tongue to break their necks? It wanted to avoid having the other Lifers detect the smell

of blood.

-[It might go through the passage after creating confusion, so.....  
Huk!]

Sukukuk!

Chun Myung Ik and Oh Min Ho got flat on the ground. Another Spectre appeared out of nowhere and waved its nails.

Kuhuk!

Kyah!

Its long arms and nails swung around a 7 meter radius. Excluding the 2 who had reflexively gotten on the floor, 3 Lifers got caught on the nails and were ripped into pieces.

‘Hocheon is going to attempt a level D, too? Give some advice, not interference. Stay focused if you don’t want to be wiped out. It is completely different from level E.’

Chun Myung Ik suddenly remembered what he said a few days before launching the mission.

‘Do you think it’s pathetic that 50 people die at a time? Try going. You’ll know if you go.’

29 people died already. But the danger had not passed. Rather, it is getting worse as they go. Annihilation? This is not a dream.

# Chapter 48

---

Kihik!

The Spectre that made a fuss in the middle of the force fled the spot without delay. It wanted to escape without getting greedy.

Somehow, it escaped to the spot where Park Jin Hyuk was standing. He was clenching his teeth and holding an automatic crossbow. His rifle is on the container box.

“Hey, what are you going to do with that? Get down!”

Seuk!

Pang!

Park Jin Hyuk quickly bent over. Cha Jun Sung appeared from behind and jumped a few meters into the air. He pulled the sword from his belt and brandished it.

Cheng!

The Spectre swished its nails and blocked the sword. The repulsive force was great even though its muscular strength is incredible. However, it did not back down.

Chechecheng!



Cha Jun Sung fought with the Spectre. The force could not shoot. They were moving around so much that they could hit him by accident.

Klunk!

While Cha Jun Sung bought time, Park Jin Hyuk climbed up the container box and retrieved his rifle. He did not go back down. He aimed at the Spectre right away.

Bang bang!

“Mutants entered the passage!”

“Diversion tactic?”

The iron door was torn off. A mutant that looked as if it was wearing iron armor all over its body, walked into the passage. Just by looking at it, it was clear it had the role of a tank.

Pipipiping!

Bullets bounce off of its body. The Tanker covered its face with both arms and it was as though a barricade was coming through.

It is a species that had not been seen in the virtual version. The nest could identify the force's weapons and style to create new

mutants to take them on.

It is pushing through. Guns do not work. They need to raise their fire power.

Kwang!

The Claymore went off. The Spectre's defense must not work against a bomb, because its arm fell off. They had no time to suspect that it was dead.

“Keep setting them off! Throw bombs too! Grenades too! They're coming at us in a line!”

There was not just 1 Tanker. Excluding the one that is dead, there were 7 of them.

The Tankers did not advance together. If the Claymore goes off, they would all feel the impact. They came in sequentially, a few meters apart.

Impact and shot grenades only buy a bit of time. Shot grenades had less effect in particular because are for noise rather than destruction.

Pupupupung!

They were through the Claymores they had installed ahead of

time. It is dangerous, but they even threw them and then clicked the switch. They need to block the advance in any way they can.

“Push forward!”

“I’ll wrap it up!”

After killing without thought, only 1 Tanker was was left. It would be over with 2 grenades. They could kill the Crawlion outside with a gun.

The Lifer who was about to throw the grenade felt pain in his neck and touched it. Blood was flowing out. He lost strength and fell to the ground.

Kikik!

Kya kya!

A Snatcher cut the Lifer’s neck and immediately changed its target. It is a level 2 mutant as small as a Kawod, but with blades like scythes on its elbows.

Ack!

Ack!

There are 10 of them. It used its speed to fly around the area.

The Snatchers followed the path the Spectre had taken. Since the Tankers and Crawlions cannot climb walls, they had the role of diverting attention.

The nest's diversion tactic created chaos in the warehouse.

Kung!

When the Snatchers' entry halted the attack, the 8 Crawlions that had been waiting got through the passage while wielding their muscles. They had started battle.

The defensive ring that they had thought to be sturdy, had easily come apart.

Pew pew!

Puk puk!

2 shots that had been waiting punctured holes in the head of one Snatcher that was climbing on top of a Lifer. It flailed and died.

Kiak!

Pat pat.

As the Snatchers scattered, they figured out the source of the bullets. There is an enemy aiming at them from a high position. They need to get rid of the bothersome enemies first.

“Tsk!”

Tak!

Park Jin Hyuk put his gun down and jumped to another container box. Aiming at such a fast and continuously moving target is useless.

Pat!

He moved a distance of 5 to 6 meters in one go. He fell back and had his automatic crossbow ready for attack. The Snatchers hid their bodies at the siege of arrows.

They run on the sides and ceilings of container boxes to chase after Park Jin Hyuk. Even with his body modification, they caught up to him quickly because it is a limited distance.

Seureung!

“You think I’ll lose to guys smaller than me? You little kids!”

Park Jin Hyuk went at them with a dagger in his left hand and an

automatic crossbow in his right. With his current senses, he could detect the Snatchers' movements.

Snatchers are really nothing if he is just careful with their speed and the blades on their elbows. They have poor stamina, so the situation is over with one arrow.

\*\*\*

Jjung!

Keuk!

Cha Jun Sung took a few steps backwards. He was dizzy from the Spectre's attack. It went for all parts of his body – if he avoided its nails, he had to watch out for its tongue.

Its tongue changes shape freely. Long to try and catch him, sharp to stab him, and blunt to hit him. It used various methods to bother Cha Jun Sung.

He yielded his sword multiple times, but it bounced off like it is rubber and he did not even leave a wound. It is also so strong that he almost had his sword taken away.

Hab!

Cha Jun Sung shouted and ran at the Spectre. He matched the

speed he was running at and cut horizontally with his sword.

The Spectre's lower body pressed to the ground. It hit the side of the container box, stuck to the wall, and hit Cha Jun Sung's back with its tongue.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung fell. It felt like he had been beaten with a club.

It would be easier to handle if he could just incapacitate its tongue, but it provides him with a physical challenge when it can reach a distance of over 5 meters.

'If only I had the blade!'

The blade has the strength to cut through cement. If he incapacitates the Spectre's tongue and nails, all that is left is its physical ability.

If there is too much of a difference in the level of the mutant that he needs to face, it will not be able to handle even with good gear. However, he could take on a Spectre.

Pew pew!

His red fire drew a line on the wall that the Spectre is stuck to. Even when he identifies its movements and fires in the expected

direction, it moves to avoid all of the shots.

Kik!

The Spectre was also annoyed. Its instinct is at work, telling it not to lose the prey it had focused on. But that prey is stronger than it thought it would be.

Tatang!

“Over there! Chase it!”

“Catch it!”

The Lifers corner the Spectre. As there are so many of them, the Spectre had small wounds every time it killed a Lifer.

Park Jin Hyuk is in a bloody battle with 8 Snatchers from the top of a container box. And the passage is chaotic because of the Crawlion.

Kiang!

The Spectre that Cha Jun Sung was fighting with requested help from its brother.

If it leaves this prey and goes, there will be problems. It is not



systematic thought, but it just felt that way.

“Where are you trying to go?”

Cha Jun Sung smirked. If its thoughts are elsewhere, it cannot focus on what it needs to do.

That is the same for humans and mutants. The Spectre was already conflicted between its instinct to kill Cha Jun Sung and the thought that it needs to save its brother.

Kyah!

The Spectre that the Lifers had cornered, expressed its pain. If it stays in one place for even a moment, dozens of bullets follow it. It needs to move without resting.

The Lifers beat the Spectre in a fight of volume. Unless it is extremely strong, it cannot underestimate the difference in numbers.

Twang!

The Spectre made up its mind and got on the wall to go to its brother.

“I won’t let you go!”

Cha Jun Sung stepped on the container box and went up. He cannot ride the walls or ceiling like mutants can, but it is possible for him to chase it with the current state of his body.

Pew pew!

He used his red fire to make it go in the direction that he wanted it to go in. A few bullets hit it, but it did not penetrate the muscle because the fire power is weak.

Kyak!

“There’s another Spectre!”

“Even the one that was running away is coming back!”

The Spectre that Cha Jun Sung is chasing swiped at the side of the Lifers. To make matters worse, the one that had been running away changed its course and came down.

The troops are collapsing under the Spectres. It is normally a power that they can cope with, but the Lifers were stopped under an attack while they had their guard down.

“It’s here!”

Cha Jun Sung had his sword held inverted and jumped from a container box. The Spectre that had been fighting with him saw

him and moved to avoid him. It knows that he is dangerous.

However, the other Spectre was drunk on slaughter and instead of moving, it scratched with its nail.

Cha Jun Sung turned in the air, avoided the nail, and stuck the sword in the Spectre's head. It is its fault for mistaking Cha Jun Sung as an average human.

Kyak!

The Spectre's brain had been penetrated, and it screamed and flailed to try to remove the sword. It was no use. Even if it got the sword out, the wound is there. It will die.

# Chapter 49

---

Clunk!

The 3 meter body of the Spectre lost strength and fell to the ground. The floor rang under the weight.

-[You have acquired 1800 points.]

“You’re giving a lot.”

Every level jumps by 10 times the points before, so level 1 is 10 to 20, level 2 is 100 to 200.

Points are separated into 5 stages, and one can confirm the level of a mutant he catches by getting 200. It means that Spectres are top level.

The Lifers could not take their eyes off of Cha Jun Sung. Even though it is a surprise attack, he killed a level 3. The way he moved before that was extraordinary as well.

Kyak!

The angry Spectre glared at Cha Jun Sung. Its brother had died of an error in judgement.

“You regret it, right?”

Puk!

Cha Jun Sung recovered his sword from the dead Spectre's head and shook the blood off. He wanted to end that one too, but he had something to do.

If he killed one, he had done his duty. He would leave the rest to the other Lifers.

“You kill them.”

“Help us! We ask you respectfully! It's taking a toll on us!”

The Lifers beg Cha Jun Sung. 5 people died while chasing the Spectres. With the members now, a few more will die.

“I'm sorry, but I have a friend. His safety is priority.”

He had discovered Park Jin Hyuk while crossing the container boxes. He was fighting Snatchers from a corner. Support? He was alone.

Park Jin Hyuk is weak in a melee. He can hold out now, but he will soon reach his last. He needs to get to him as quickly as possible. He cannot waste time here.

Cha Jun Sung squinted at the Spectre and moved. It is a problem

if it follows him. Fortunately, it did not follow him. The Lifers bothered the Spectre as well.

Kwakwang!

A dark heat comes in from the passage. There are no level 3 mutants and it is dense with the most powerful of the force. There is less and less noise.

It must be the end.

Tu tu!

Battle with the Spectre begins again as well. He was sorry, but he only has one body. Cha Jun Sung aimed his red fire at the Snatchers.

Pew!

The Snatcher's body plunges and hits under the container box. No matter how fast they are, they cannot avoid the shots unless they have eyes on the back of their heads.

Pew pew!

“You're here?”

“How many are you fighting?”

“8.”

“I saw 5, I killed 1, so you killed 3?”

Blood covered Park Jin Hyuk’s gear. It is a mix of the Snatchers’ blood and his own. He has a lot of wounds where he was ripped and stabbed. They are signs of struggle.

Kik!

4 Snatchers are wary of Cha Jun Sung. He looks larger and stronger than Park Jin Hyuk. They get farther away from him if he even scares them a little.

“Rest. I’ll take care of it.”

“Oy!”

Park Jin Hyuk sat on the floor. It is not a joke. He had spoken like he was joking, but he really is tired. What would have happened if Cha Jun Sung had been late?

Kyak!

They are just 4 Snatchers. There is nothing they could do against

Cha Jun Sung with his sword and gun. If they try anything, they die? Their intestines were cleaned up.

\*\*\*

Bang!

The Crawlion's chest was split open after he was hit by the grenade launcher, and fell over.

The Lifers look at the passage with hope. Please stop coming!

Following level 2 and 3 mutants, level 1 mutants came out to bother the Lifers. Even if runts come at them, they are on the brink of insanity because it is so chaotic.

“It's, it's over!”

“Wow!”

“The nest stopped producing!”

Mutants do not come in anymore. It seems it has consumed all of the nutrients and cells necessary for production. In the end, the Lifers had won.

Among the celebrating Lifers, Chun Myung Ik looked



uncomfortable. He had expected for there to be casualties before progressing with the mission.

But he had not calculated this much. They had built a tight defensive ring in the warehouse. The mutants had taken it apart completely.

Groups 1, 2, and 4 of 60 people had been focused on the passage. Group 4 was made up of the Lifers who had accepted Hocheon guild's invitation.

Since group 3 was put up against the Spectres, they could see the damage situation upon their return.

“How many people died?”

“9 people from group 1, 2 from group 8, 6 from group 4. Group 4 includes the snipers. It seems a lot of them survived because their skill and equipment are at the level of raid leaders.”

Oh Min Ho looked haggard as he gave his report. 23 people died in 3 groups. It is not what they had expected, but it is better than failing the mission.

-[Master, we handled the Spectres.]

-[Losses?]

-[..... 1 raid leader, 3 guild members, and 6 external members died.]

That is 10 people.

Then combining 20, 23, 10 people, there were a total of 53 dead.

47 survivors. He almost laughed out of disbelief. They can consider the first 20 as people they had sacrificed with consideration for the future.

33 people! His warning that it could be annihilation if they let their guards down, was real.

-[What's left?]

There is nothing. Since they took care of the passage, they had killed all mutants that the nest had produced. Now if they kill the nest and cross through the rest area, the mission is complete.

-[Did you figure out how they got in?]

-[They ripped through the ceiling of the cargo lifts we came in.]

This experience made the large guild understand how it had met a strong opponent and had suffered such severe damages in their first attempt.

If they had known that the mutants would go around the warehouse to come in, they would have distributed the power instead of focusing it at the passage. If they had done that, the mutants would not have gotten through.

‘I’m confident we can reduce the losses to under 20 in the next challenge.’

Information is power that is not visible. If large guilds that had completed the mission before Hocheon, had shared this information, they would have gone through it comparatively easily.

-[Who killed the Spectre?]

-[The chief killed one and number 617 killed the other.]

-[Number 617?]

-[Yes. And he and number 429 took care of 10 Snatchers.]

2 people taking on that many mutants? Chun Myung Ik remembered seeing Cha Jun Sung fighting the Spectre with his sword before he moved away.

-[Uh..... Master.]

-[Speak.]

-[I think number 617 went through body modification.]

-[I know that much too. You think it would be his bare body when he is running at a Spectre?]

He had gone at a level 3 mutant with cutlery. He is either brave or crazy. But neither are applicable. It has to be body modification.

-[I believe it is the 2nd stage.]

-[What?]

The raid leader gave his explanation with a mix of what he saw and his personal opinion.

Cha Jun Sung jumped from a 7 meter high, 3 story container box and while avoiding the Spectre's attack, stabbed it in the head with his sword.

‘There's someone other than that guy who's gone through the 2nd stage of body modification?’

From what Chun Myung Ik knows, there is only 1 other person who has gone through the 2nd stage of body modification. There could be other Lifers, but it was hard for him to believe that.

-[Alright.]

They are holding on for now. They need to complete the mission first. As the situation became stabilized, the scattered Lifers gathered in the passage. They all looked battered.

There were a lot of injured. They take medicine out from their packs and space compression bag to treat their wounds. Unfortunately, none of the Lifers have medical equipment.

“Not even a large guild has a medic.”

“It was a unique profession even in the virtual version. If you do that, you get sick from anger.”

A medic is a non-combat job specializing in treatment, but its ability to attack is terrible.

In the virtual version, they are at the lowest ranking. It is a time when points push back money. Is there a Lifer willing to purchase expensive medical equipment to give free services?

They need to save all of the points they would have used on weapons and equipment to be able to purchase middle standard medical equipment from level D. It is not easy even with help from a large guild.

-[The injured rest, and everyone else will go to kill the nest. It's tired. The only mutants it'll be able to produce are level 1 or 2.]

The nest does not produce on nutrients alone. As it is a hermaphrodite, it needs the cells corresponding with the level. If it is freshly evolved, 2 mutants is its limit.

-[Let's end it. This mission.]

The force follows Chun Myung Ik. The time to end it is approaching.

# Chapter 50

---

The nest died uneventfully. It consumed all of its nutrients and cells and there was not much of a fight. After that, they arrived at the completion area without problems.

Ding.

There are moments when the annoying helper seems lovable. It is when the heavenly voice whispers to them after they have been waiting for it.

If they complete a mission, they gather points. With it, even a lucky box. They can only receive the lucky box in the briefing room. They can check it later.

“I guess it’s a surprise.”

“I want to hurry up and open it.”

It is a reward given to Lifers with the completion of a level D mission and points.

If they are unlucky, it is worth 1 point and if they are lucky, gear worth thousands of points could come out. That is why it is a surprise of luck.

The probabilities are terrible. In the countless comments

regarding the box, there are very few Lifers who received boxes with gear that is of any use to them.

As it is possible to deals, there are many Lifers who hoard them.

-[I will purchase lucky boxes for \$100,000 each. Does anyone have intentions to sell theirs?]

Chun Myung Ik looked at the Lifers as he spoke. A few people raised their hands to say that they would sell theirs. Cha Jun Sung did not respond. He is geared toward thrill more than money.

Just as people's personalities are different, their values are all different. If not, would he have used everything on the ultimate Hades blade?

The Lifers who said that they would sell, were not doing it because they need the money. They would rather ensure getting \$100,000 out of this gamble instead of ending up with nothing.

-[Daeho Group has prepared a small banquet for you all. We hope everyone will attend as we intend to offer the best services.]

Cha Jun Sung was thinking of returning home. What banquet when he is so tired, he is on the verge of collapsing? The people who would attend are Hocheon guild members and the Lifers who want to join.

They had been stuck together for a week. You stick with your



people, not others. This is visible just in the way that Hocheon handles Lifers.

-[Alright, let's return to Hocheon's auditorium.....]

Kyak!

Chun Myung Ik could not finish his words. As he was about to finish, an ear-splitting high tone shriek swept over the 47 Lifers like a wave.

The location of the shriek? It is to the side of the direction that they are standing in. It is blocked by an iron door that leads to the second half.

It seems a mutant is excited because it smelled the Lifers and heard them talking. It seems to be a level 4. If it comes out at them, it is annihilation for the force.

Bang bang!

Kyak!

The iron door shakes as if it is going to come crashing down. It did not break down easily because it looked as though it would hold up against a truck.

“I, I want to go back!”

“Me too!”

Zing!

The Lifers start to return. If they are caught while hesitating, they die even after completing the mission. They do not want to be in that situation.

“The door is stable.”

“If it were to come down easily, it would not have been a 5000 point mission in the first place. It could come out any time it wants and make a fuss.”

They could not know what type of mutant it is, but it is blocking the door to go outside. Or it is not a size that allows it to go out.

‘If I can figure out its identity, I can prepare for it, won’t I?’

Woong!

Cha Jun Sung turned on his recording function. If you know your enemy, you can win every battle.

There are countless mutants in different ways on his blog. He thought there would be results if he could compare them to reduce the deaths.

‘Forget it if not.’

Not all mutants are there. If he cannot find them, he cannot find them.

Seureuk!

Did it tire itself out while making a fuss? The sound of it was getting farther away from the iron door.

“It took everything.”

“What?”

Clues come from the small things. It took everything. This is important.

“Let’s go back. I need to dig through the blog.”

“Unlock it. I want to see it too.”

“Alright. I’ll go and add a friend to it.”

“Woo!”

When he told Park Jin Hyuk who Campbell is, he had revealed that he is Overload. He was surprised at first, but he is now used to it.

Woong!

Since they returned as though running away, there were not even 10 people left. Most are in Hocheon.

“Number 617? Mr. Ch Jun Sung?”

“Do you need something?”

Chun Myung Ik approached him. When the Lifer registration system was formed, helper names became useless. The Lifer registration card had replaced citizen registration cards.

“Are you attending the banquet?”

“No.”

Attend? Do they think he will? He is satisfied with having participated in a level D mission. He is totally against anything bothersome. He needs to rest at home and there are a few things he needs to take care of.

“It’s not something to discuss here. Can we go somewhere to talk?”

“Sorry. I don’t want to get involved with a large guild in any way. I have nothing to give and nothing to get. I’ll be leaving first.”

Syuk!

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk returned home. If they are going to cut them off, they need to do it for sure. It becomes a problem if they leave it up for question.

Chun Myung Ik and Hocheon did not move as if they were nailed to the spot. As it happened so suddenly, it took them some time to understand the situation.

Chun Myung Ik grinded his teeth. He had been rejected unilaterally. Why are people so full of themselves? Cha Jun Sung and that guy had their noses up to the sky.

“Should I go catch them?”

“Leave them. We’ll calm the guild down first.”

He was about to agree with Oh Min Ho’s expression, but settled his anger first. There are a lot of damages. They need to clean up the mess and advertise their mission completion.

“This is Hocheon’s jurisdiction. Let’s gather strength for a few months and make an attempt.”

Since there is no name to the mission, they would have had nothing to say if they had been cut in line. However, level D missions surpass level E by a lot.

There is almost no probability in overlapping unless they seek out the biology institute on purpose. As much as missions reduce with completions, they are regenerated.

‘His name is Cha Jun Sung.’

He had met someone similar to him. He is not someone he can forget even if he tried.

\*\*\*

Inside the biology institute. A lot of things were created at the same time including food storage, hospital, warehouse, and a summons gate. One of the bunch comes out from that place.

“The gate closes after 3 hours. We need to move the material in there.”

“Okay!”

There is food and medicine for hundreds of people. They can rip off the container box put the materials past the gate. He seems like a Lifer, but there is something different.

He can even lightly lift a 300kg piece of metal. He has the power of 100 people.

The speed at which they move the material is fast because there are a lot of people, but it still took them 2 hours and 50 minutes to finish the job.

“Whew! I was wondering how long we would have to do this for.”

A middle-aged man who looked to be the leader, put out his cigarette. It is a bore.

Smoke comes out and scatters. It feels like a life in vain. If the time to slack for Lifers is short, it is 3 years, 5 if it is long.

“Time is almost over!”

“Alright.”

The man puts his cigarette out. They need to return to that awful place. Hundreds of people went through the gate. The warehouse became busy.

# Chapter 51

---

Han Chang Jin mobilized the network he had built in the virtual version to find Ghost Gun.

There is nothing he could do about the people he had met in passing, but there are a few Lifers he had exchanged contact information with. He rode them over and over again.

He was able to find out Ghost Gun's identity in a matter of 3 months, and they are facing each other now. He had one thought after finding Ghost.

Ghost Gun is in the dark. He is hard to find. Han Chang Jin and Ghost Gun are not personal acquaintances, but he is someone so famous that everyone in Korea knows who he is.

He is a good looking man with a gentle smile. He prepared coffee pods as though they are from a luxurious drip.

Strangely, it was like watching a scene from a commercial he appears in.

Ghost Gun is Lim Si Hyun. One of the top 5 actors in Korea and the master of a large guild sponsored by Chilsung Group.

Maybe because the master is an actor, they have their fair share of celebrities.



Lim Si Hyun is a distant nephew of the owner of Chilsung. There is not a tremendous reason why this distant cousin became master of the guild above other linear relatives.

None of the Chairman's relatives showed excellence as a Lifer. Since he could not leave it to someone else, he had put Lim Si Hyun in the position.

As it was nearing the end of his exclusive contract, he did not say no. His life as an actor is fun too, but it is nothing compared to his life as a Lifer.

“It's a pleasure to meet you. I'm Han Chang Jin.”

“I'm Lim Si Hyun, leading the 7 Stars.”

They introduced themselves to each other. They know the basic information on each other, but it is courtesy to give formal introductions.

Not too long ago, Lim Si Hyun heard rumors that someone was looking for him. When he heard that the person he would have to meet is Iron King, he allowed for the meeting.

Iron King is a fellow Korean and has a good reputation. He is also a soldier. It is fitting for his reputation as someone with a rigid personality.

“I got here after going through 4 of China's ports for the first

time.”

“I heard from Nuclear. Since the 36 rankers keep to themselves, I heard the rumor that you were looking for me.”

The virtual world map has a 1:1 ratio with the earth. Because of this, the 36 rankers have no way of meeting unless they operate in the same region.

“It has become a complicated world. I needed to meet you no matter what.”

“Let’s get to the point.”

Lim Si Hyun’s tone became serious. Judging by Han Chang Jin’s attitude, it did not seem like he had ulterior motives. His profession is also ordinary.

Is the government on the move? He had thought that it had been strangely quiet. It is a thought that anyone could have unless they are dumb.

“Lim Si Hyun, there are 2 reasons why I came looking for you on behalf of the nation.”

“So it is the government. Is it the President?”

“Yes.”

“I’ll listen.”

“Sorry, but I have one question first. I can complete a 3000 point level E mission by myself. Are you able to do that as well?”

“Can I think of this as your way to judge whether or not I am of value?”

Han Chang Jin bunched his lips. He had pointed it out correctly. He had the feeling that the situation is, ‘I did come looking for you, but I’m going to turn around now if you have no value.’

“I’ll tell you. As of now, I can complete it by myself in 5 days.”

Han Chang Jin’s expression became prudent. It is as he had expected. The 36 rankers are using what they know from the virtual version to advance faster than others.

Reality and virtual are different? It is true. Could someone who was not able to stand above others in the virtual version, be able to do so in reality?

He got to the conclusion.

Never!

It is impossible.

“I apologize if I offended you.”

“It’s nothing. It is true I’m offended that I’m being judged, but it’s something to be happy about to be recognized by someone of the same class.”

Lim Si Hyung laughed. He has a refreshing personality. He was not snobby and was easy unlike the rich. He is worthy of leading 7 Stars.

“What I saw from now on is a national secret, so only you need to know this.”

“I’m nervous.”

Han Chang Jin started speaking. A Lifer organization operated by nations all over the world has been created, and it is nearly completed.

Anything could become a reason for it, but the main purpose is world peace.

If they want to live as they did before the real version appeared, the government needs to hold the power. If it loses the power, it is the return of the Dark Ages.

Nations that normally have close relationships share information

and show signs of forming alliances.

“In just the exposed part, 7 of the 36 rankers are included.”

“Are you talking about a mutual aid?”

“What do you think if the most powerful of each country link together to complete missions?”

They are each famous players in the virtual version. There are 5 Lifers who have the best equipment in level E and D, and have gone through the 2nd stage of body modifications?

Level D where level 4 mutants appear will be difficult, but they could do whatever they wanted in those lower. Since their professions are all different, they could anticipate the synergy.

There is a turbo engine on their speed in advancing, and they could reach level C in a short amount of time. This is incredible information.

“Are you telling me to commit myself to the government or register in the alliance?”

“You said mutual aid, right? If you need us or we need you, we can help each other according to the situation.”

As it is not just the government, but a worldwide gathering, it

surpasses the category of the powerful. In a small scale, it is 7 Stars. Large, it is bringing Chilsung to the world.

“So you’re trying to subsume me. Are there other Lifers who received this proposal?”

“There is a Lifer who will hear it, but you are the first. And that is the 2nd reason why I came looking for you.”

“The 2nd reason?”

“Are you able to get in contact with Overload? There’s no way to find him.”

“Overload..... I see. He existed. I had forgotten.”

By name, he is 1st in the Life Mission ranking. He is a legend in the virtual version as the only Lifer who succeeded in the level 9 Evil Queen raid. Lim Si Hyun had been forgetting because his daily life was so busy.

“I’m sorry, but I don’t have contact with him either. He’s a Lifer focused on solo plays..... Oh right. Doesn’t he run a blog?”

Lim Si Hyun had also enjoyed looking up information on the blog. A lot of what they knew overlapped, but the videos were as fun as watching a movie.

“We would be able to find him if we track the IP address, but we believe that might just be counterproductive.”

“Even if you find him through normal means, I don’t think he’ll join the federation. He resisted the seduction of all large guilds in the virtual version as well.”

Han Chang Jin knew that aspect well. He wanted to give advice if he could.

If they maintain a friendly relationship, he might be able to request aid at a later time. Creating ties is the primary goal.

There is nothing to lose in creating friendly ties with any of the 36 rankers, excluding a few crazy people. They will become reliable reinforcements.

“What do you think about sending a note on the blog? He’ll read it.”

“It’s of no use.”

He tried sending notes several times. Each time, there was no response. Cha Jun Sung was either reading and ignoring them, or putting them in Trash because he could not be bothered with reading them.

“We cannot even put up a notice that we are looking for Overload because we could run into trouble regarding personal privacy

issues. This is very frustrating.”

Lim Si Hyun scratched his forehead.

Han Chang Jin was awkward in embarrassment. Truthfully, he had not put that much effort into looking for Cha Jun Sung. He was only pretending to look.

“He’ll meet with you if you tell him that you’re Iron King.”

“Will he?”

The Cha Jun Sung that Lim Si Hyun knew was not so stiff. He is rather open. He is like any other Lifer, it is just that he prefers to play solo/

“If the 3 people in Korea get together, we could complete a level D mission as a party.”

The government had its eyes set on 10,000 points. 7 Stars will be similar. The level D advance mission is 20,000 points. With 10,000 points, a level 4 mutant could come out.

“7 Stars is trying to gather talent with 9000 points on the fringe.”

“Likewise for the government.”



Solo missions are impossible in level D. The level 4 mutants are too strong for someone to take them on alone. It is a suicide mission even with class D gear.

A small group could take it on if the mission is under 10,000 points, but filling all 100 spots for anything above that gives them a better chance at surviving.

They had a long conversation. They spoke for a few hours before coming to a close.

“Since I cannot decide this easily, I will consider this issue of registration.”

“I’ll hope for good results.”

Lim Si Hyun asked for contact information, saying that he would notify him of his decision within a few days. Han Chang Jin left his information happily.

Though he had not been able to find Overload, it is fortunate that Lim Si Hyun’s reaction was so positive. Certainty is better than uncertainty.

# Chapter 52

---

Knock knock!

As soon as Han Chang Jin left the office, a Lifer came in.

“Master, Hocheon completed the biology institute mission and returned.”

“Did Chun Myung Ik do well?”

“Other than his selfishness, he is alright but they suffered a lot of damages because the mutants attacked them from behind. I almost died as well.”

This Lifer who had applied to participate in Hocheon’s force was planted as a monitor. It was not for ill intentions. The intention was to see if they did well or not.

The Lifer explained the process. Lim Si Hyun nodded. A lot of people died. It is worse than the average. At any rate, Chun Myung Ik will not do.

“That guy thinks he’s a fox when he’s really just a dog.”

He is in the dog species, but falls short. To be selfish in a mission that he is risking his life for. It is behavior that is not appropriate for the head of a large guild.

“And I discovered a Lifer who stood out during the mission.”

“Tell me.”

“Lifers were being devastated by a level 3 Spectre when he started a battle with just a sword. He did get pushed back, but it was impressive.”

The Spectre had underestimated him and put its guard down, but he had stuck a sword in its head.

“A Spectre?”

“Yes.”

A level 3 with just one sword? Not even Lim Si Hyun had that kind of confidence.

“Wait! Did you just say sword? Do you know his name or anything?”

“Cha Jun Sung? He was number 617.”

“Well..... I don't really want to, but I guess I'll have to meet with loser Chun Myung Ik.”

To become connected like this. Strange things happen in the world.

The reason why Han Chang Jin came looking for him. The Lifer in question who killed a Spectre with a sword. Overload's weapon? A sword. Doesn't everything seem to fit together?

“You did well. We'll do 10,000 points for you as a prize.”

“Thank you!”

The Lifer's face brightened. If he keeps stacking results, he will be promoted.

Lim Si Hyun is fair. If someone is skilled and devotes himself to the guild, he is given a position even if he is a low employee. There had actually been a few cases where that happened.

“I want to get to know him. While Iron King sends notes, shall I see his face?”

He could not be sure if he would be able to meet Cha Jun Sung or not, but he would be able to get simple information if he plays Chun Myung Ik gently.

He will have to reveal a tiny bit of know-how for level D missions in exchange.

\*\*\*

Kung!

Woah!

Cha Jun Sung locked himself in his room and went through the blog he had run for 10 years. He replayed his videos of battles with level 4 mutants.

It isn't there!

There is no mutant whose sound overlaps with what he recorded in the biology institute. There are similar ones, but they walked around fine.

He recalled what he heard before returning. He is sure it slid on the ground.

Slid? It crawls. It cannot have legs. There is no reason for something to crawl unless it is crippled!

[Lifers, what type of level 4 mutant has a high tone shriek and goes around without legs?]

Cha Jun Sung posted on Lifer World. 99 out of 100 people post insane comments, but 1 of those people is bound to put up a proper post.

[Haze Ghost?] [Haze Ghost has a pretty husky voice. It's a Blood Plant.] [Is the person above me retarded? Blood Plant can't move at all!] [A Saman Viper or Hermit Ear!] [I agree. If you hear a Saman Viper's roar, your eardrums burst.]

All kinds of bizarre mutants are appearing. They are all types that he does not know about because they do not exist in Cha Jun Sung's homeground, South America.

He searched the mutants mentioned in the comments. There was a little information.

It is not the Blood Plant. The great man-eating flower has the attacking power of a level 5 but as a botanical, it cannot move from the ground where it has its roots.

That is why it is ranked a level 4. It cannot be caught with ordinary equipment, but it is just a decorative plant if you do not go 30m near it.

He looked up the Haze Ghost and Hermit Ear as well. These do not seem to be it either. The Lifers opened up a heated debate, but he got a few things out of it.

“Saman Viper?”

It is a large wild viper with 3 eyes. It is as long as the anaconda that appeared in a movie created dozens of years ago, and twice the thickness.

It is a snake, but rips its prey apart to eat it. It has great vision and is fast. It compresses its muscle and brings the instant velocity of a bullet.

“No, there’s no reason for a snake to be in the lab. I’ll look into it slowly.”

The link mission that appeared when they completed the biology institute is a 12,000 point sample takeover. Unless they go in fully prepared, they are on a train to hell.

[You have a message.]

Click.

Cha Jun Sung ignored the message. Hundreds of them came in everyday. It is a bother to read through each one, so he gathers them to delete them all at once.

The 12th message that Han Chang Jin sent was sent to the trash. Another note from a far away country was buried without knowledge.

\*\*\*

A bunch of Caucasian people walked out of the entry gates at Seoul Airport.

They moved with 2 people in the center. A beautiful woman with a cold charm stole everyone's attention.

One is a man with complaints written on his face. The rest are bodyguards.

“Why do I have to come to a country like this? Hey girl? Say something.”

The man is pestering the woman. She did not even respond. This man is normally ill mannered.

“Where shall we go first?”

“Iron King.”

A delicate voice. They had come to someone else's land with impure intentions.

They need to reveal their purpose by the Union Federation. Complex steps are burdensome. If they speak with Iron King, they will be taken to the top naturally.

“Oh! Iron King, we've fought before. He's like a wild boar. He's ignorant.”

The man speaks frivolously. He can become any color. He changes his personality to fit the situation like a chameleon.



“Just be careful from the front.”

“Yeah yeah.”

The man speaks drily. It is obvious that he hears it as nagging.

The woman said it herself, but did not expect much. She needs to get this man to his knees to control him, but she does not have the confidence to do that.

“Ms. Irina, Mr. Burke. The car is ready.”

“Thank you.”

The woman walked away with her long legs in high heels.

Ice Queen Irina Headley.

Boom Busker Burke Petross.

Each have a spot among the 36 rankers and are 2 of the 7 Lifers who have overwhelming support of the American people.

# Chapter 53

---

Han Chang Jin had an unexpected visitor while he was working. Ice Queen and Boom Busker are part of the Federation that will be organized by the American government soon.

Han Chang Jin, these two, and a few others will belong to the Federation.

“Long time no see, Iron King?”

“It has been a while. You haven’t changed at all. You’re exactly the same as you were before.”

Boom Busker is the same as he was in the virtual version with his snobby tone and arrogant behavior. It is inevitable since reality is a mirror of the virtual version.

Why are they in Korea?

Travelling?

That cannot be why. It could be true for Ice Queen, but Boom Busker shows that he was forced to come here. He is engaging in an implicit protest.

“We came because of the subsumption.”

“Subsumption!”

Ice Queen threw a blow. America had made a move after it had been quiet. Which Lifer did they want to subsume that they even sent 2 rankers?

“I’ll reveal our purpose ahead of time so that we can meet Ghost Gun and Overload.”

“Kuk!”

There is a lot of land in America. The population is large as well. The powers had remained quiet until now in order to gather strength while calming their homelands.

They could not afford reach out to other nations. In this aspect, smaller countries are faster than the powers. The stronger they are, the more difficult it is to absorb.

“Are you giving me notice?”

“Because we could not go against the treaty. If you can block it, you can do so.”

How could he block it? No matter how much Lifers have become free of material matters with the increased value of points, one is bound to be seduced by the benefits that a powerful country like America could offer.

Han Chang Jin also had a basic idea that they cannot match up. They are things that cannot be offered even if a few nations like Korea were combined.

Subsumption as a Lifer of another country is left entirely up to the Lifer's will. If the other country reveals its intention to subsume, they cannot do anything to retract it.

“Have you figured out their identities?”

“Yes.”

“How did you do it?”

“I asked Nuclear for Ghost Gun's information, since they have always been in contact.”

Ice Queen only spoke about Lim Si Hyun. Han Chang Jin was sure that the people in the U.S. had not figured out who Cha Jun Sung is.

“I met Mr. Lim Si Hyun a few days ago. I was not able to meet Overload, Mr. Cha Jun Sung, however. Do you really think it is because I can't meet him?”

It is easy to pressure the blog company or to track the IP address.

But he had not done it. If the 1st button is done wrong, nothing changes even if the 2nd is done properly. Human relations are not as simple as clothing.

“Will a man be such a sissy that he gets upset over a bit of hacking?”

Upset? Whose standards is this on? If all people are the same, those are robots. Boom Busker is measuring others purely on his personal standards.

Han Chang Jin ignored him and waited for Ice Queen to speak. America had sent her as a scout. Burke is just baggage.

“I don’t care.”

“You don’t care?”

“I was not part of the cause or process that created the issue. I just need to deliver the message that America wants to give them.”

Even if Cha Jun Sung seems uncomfortable, it is something that the U.S. created. Her duty is done with delivering the message.

Ice Queen got up from her seat. She had revealed her purpose to Han Chang Jin. It is a waste of time to stay any longer. Boom Busker complains that it is a bother.

“I’ll ask just in case. Do you have any thoughts of coming into America?”

“I would go if I were alone, but I have friends and family here along with everything I have worked for so far. I can’t just throw it all away. I’ll just accept the goodwill.”

Ice Queen nodded and did not linger on it. It was an impromptu question. Iron King would not leave Korea, but he had not been included in the candidates for subsumption anyway.

“How long are you thinking of staying here?”

“We’ll stay until we would like to leave or until we are called back by the U.S.”

She does not know the deadline. She intends to stay as long as she can before returning.

\*\*\*

“Who are you to tell me to go up there?”

Vroom.

Cha Jun Sung is heading to Hocheon headquarters in his car. He had received a call to the cellphone he had left as his contact while applying for the force. They are asking him to come just once.

He had told them that he does not want to get involved with them before returning. He was going to block their calls, but decided to go because they said they would no longer bother him if he listened to them this one time.

He arrived. He parked his car in the lot and entered the building. Personnel waiting in advance escorted Cha Jun Sung. It feels like he has become a VIP member.

Where could they be going? Are they going to Chun Myung Ik? The path was new because he had never seen the inside. If he followed them, they would reach the destination.

“This is it.”

“Thank you.”

The personnel brought Cha Jun Sung in front of a luxurious door. It looks too comfortable to be used as an office.

Knock knock!

“Bring him in.”

The personnel opened the door for him. The hospitality is excessive. What are they aiming at?

Cha Jun Sung walked awkwardly into the room. The spaciousness and interior is comparable to the luxury hotels he stayed at when he went on the occasional trip abroad.

“Welcome. I was waiting.”

“Oh?”

Cha Jun Sung pointed to the man and looked surprised.

‘He recognizes me.’

He needs to give the other a good impression. Lim Si Hyun’s celebrity life is clean. There are no scandals or corruption because it had all been managed carefully.

“Who are you again?”

“Um!”

Lim Si Hyun was taken aback. Cha Jun Sung’s behavior is that of someone who was trying to remember but could not. He was weak in his knowledge on the media because he had been living buried in the game.

“I’m Lim Si Hyun.”



“The actor Lim Si Hyun? Master of 7 Stars? Are you the person who was looking for me?”

The best guild in Korea, 7 Stars. There is no link for it to look for him through Hocheon. Did word of his actions in the mission get out? Aha! This is a contact.

He could guess what is happening. In the virtual version, he had been contacted constantly to join guilds. It is just a surprise that the proposal is from 7 Stars and not Hocheon.

“I am Ghost Gun.”

Cha Jun Sung froze. He had not heard incorrectly. Lim Si Hyun is Ghost Gun? Is this not a guild proposal? He will need to hear him out.

# Chapter 54

---

“I think we met for the first time while catching Medusa in South America?”

Level 8 Medusa.

It is the top mutant in the snake line. Its appearance in the myth and ability to turn living creatures into stone are all different, but its poison is incredible.

Hundreds of people could die because of one drop of Medusa's blood. It has a lot of meaning. It means that Lim Si Hyun is guessing that he is Overload.

“You really are.”

“Lies are caught quickly.”

“How did you find me?”

The only Lifer he still spoke with is that woman and he had not given her his contact information. It is said that a tail is stepped on if it is long. Is that the situation he is finding himself in?

Lim Si Hyun motioned Cha Jun Sung to a seat. He sat without suspicion. It felt like the conversation would get long. There must be no misunderstanding.

Lim Si Hyun had looked for Cha Jun Sung because he wants to befriend him.

“Do you know that the world is moving?”

“I am expecting it, but I don’t know much about it because I am ignoring the situation.”

“I met Iron King a few days ago.”

“Iron King?”

He is the representative Lifer of Korea. Cha Jun Sung knew that name as well.

Lim Si Hyun took out the main point and spoke. Han Chang Jin had trusted him and revealed a top secret. He cannot ignore a gesture shown by another.

Cha Jun Sung listened to Lim Si Hyun and understood how he had been found. Lim Si Hyun had guessed and hoped for the best, and he had been caught in that.

“Iron King for me?”

“Yes. He thought about hacking your blog, but said he did not do it because he thought it would be counterproductive. What do you

think about meeting him? He's a good man."

His impression of Han Chang Jin increased. He considers the other person's stance.

It is not difficult to meet up if it is a good person. There is nothing to lose in forming allies with other Lifers as they had done in the virtual version.

"I have his contact information but if you feel strange about calling him first, shall I set up a meeting?"

Cha Jun Sung's first impression of Lim Si Hyun is aggressive. He clearly shows if he likes something or not. He does not seem to be someone who would do him wrong.

"I am busy at the moment, but I can meet him later."

"Then can I tell this to Mr. Han Chang Jin? He'll be happy if he hears about this. He said that he sent you a message everyday, but you never responded."

Message?

He must be referring to the mail that comes through the blog, though 99% of it is spam. He put it all in the trash everyday, but had not thought that there would be a message from Han Chang Jin in there.

It is still in the trash and has not been erased. He will need to go home and take a look at it.

“I didn’t read them because they were a bother.”

“You don’t seem to be the type to recklessly ignore; you would say you don’t like it outright.”

“You as well?”

“Yes. There are hundreds of instances where you need to swallow your words in the celebrity world, but there are times when you need to be straightforward so you don’t suffer damages.”

“We have similar personalities.”

“What do you think of the occasional mission together just for fun? I won’t bother you about it if you don’t want to do it.”

They do not need to go around together now but when confronted with the level D advance mission, they will become a great source of aid to each other.

Pushing through with numbers is the only way to take on a level 4 with D class gear. Experts are needed, not people who die with one blow.

If rabbits get involved to catch a tiger, they will have no effect no matter how many of them there are. However, if dozens of wolves run in, it is possible for them to rip it apart.

Ring!

“Apologies.”

Lim Si Hyun excused himself from Cha Jun Sung and picked up his call. They had disobeyed his order not to bother him for a few hours. It must be urgent.

[Hello.] [Master, you have a visitor from America. I’ll put them on the phone.]

There was a short silence while the phone was passed from person to person.

[Hi, Ghost!] [Who are you?]

Lim Si Hyun spoke in English. He is fluent as someone of a rich family should be. Only a few people beyond his family and the guild know that he is Ghost Gun.

[Me? I’m Boom Busker. Hold on, I want to talk to him!] [Sorry. We went to 7 Stars headquarters but you were missing, so we called. My name is Irina Headley, I’m Ice Queen.]

He could not understand the situation. It felt like work he had pushed back was suddenly exploding. Ice Queen and Boom Busker – why are they in Korea?

[Tell me why you're here.] [We need to tell you in person. When will you have time?] [I'll go now. I'll tell the guild members to arrange a place for you to rest.]

His head hurts. Just as Han Chang Jin came looking for him, it seems the U.S. is trying to subsume famous Lifers. They had sent Ice Queen. He must be right.

“Ice Queen and Boom Busker from America came looking for 7 Stars.”

“Those are nostalgic titles.”

Various categories of rankers. When all 36 people were active at the same time, it was an age of prestige for each.

“Seeing as how they came looking for me, there is a great chance they'll go to you as well.”

“Do you think they'll know who I am and where I live?”

“It'll be hacking.”

“They must be crazy.”

“I'll arrange for a meeting with Mr. Han Chang Jin soon. I hope you won't turn it down.”

Lim Si Hyun went back to 7 Stars. Cha Jun Sung could feel that

his life would become twisted with this. He cannot hope for it to be quiet forever.

Something is bound to jump out at him with an awl in its pocket.



# Chapter 55

---

Early in the morning, a call came from Park Jin Hyuk. He was not sleeping because he called at the right time. There was regret in his voice.

-[Have you opened the lucky box?]

-[You opened yours?]

Cha Jun Sung has not even gone to the briefing room yet. He has not seen the lucky box yet, much less opened it. He had left it alone since it will not run away.

-[There's nothing. I should have sold it and bought a gaming device. You know what came out?]

-[What is it?]

-[Ramen! Ramen came out!]

Ha ha!

Cha Jun Sung held his stomach. \$100,000 was disguised as 1 point. Park Jin Hyuk voiced his anger.

-[I can't even sell it and it's weird to open it.]

-[Enjoy it.]

There is nothing as naive as dreaming for riches through gamble. Whatever the reward is, it is best without disappointment. There is more disappointment with higher expectations.

-[Anyway, you're saying you didn't open yours?]

-[Yeah.]

-[Hit jackpot on my behalf too. But when do we do our next mission?]

-[How many points are left for Head Hunter?]

-[A lot.]

-[Focus on solo missions. It's hard to match our times together every time anyway.]

Head Hunter is a private item sniper rifle that explodes the target.

It is a weapon specialized in sniping and genocide. Its use becomes different by purpose. If even a level 3 is hit legitimately, it could be killed with one shot.

An explosive bomb is pretty expensive, but its power is comparable to that of a grenade. It is worth the investment and they can handle that amount of points without problem.

Unless it is a difficult mission, the points they earn from solo missions are useful.

-[Alright. I think I just need 10 days. I'll get the Head Hunter and call you.]

-[Okay.]

They ended the radio. It would take around that much time for Cha Jun Sung as well. If he completes 7 or 8 1500 point missions, the Wolf Blade is his.

He is thinking of applying for a piecewise force to see how they perform. A piecewise force is when several parties overlap in one force to go into a mission together.

It is as though the 100 people who enter the mission area are all strangers. It is perfect to go into with Park Jin Hyuk. The disadvantage is that they cannot guarantee safety.

Since there was no focus on matching the members, there was no proportion for the level of skill and gear.

It is a group perfect for mediocre players to linger in. There is a famous rumor that only 2 survivors emerged from a 100-person piecewise force.

Was it mission completion? Of course they had quit. There is a reason why Lifers want to go into forces in large guilds. There is a huge difference in the chance of survival.

Currently, piecewise forces are not very active due to the dangerous aspect. There are places that have fairly strict recruitment, but they are all the same.

“Lucky box, should I open mine too?”

Park Jin Hyuk lifted his vision goggles and he looked full of interest. They will receive energy from the morning sun, open the box, and contribute it to purchasing the Wolf Blade.

\*\*\*

It is a rectangular box the size of a person’s head. A gold pattern is splendidly mixed on a white background. It looks to be expensive just by its appearance.

-[The lucky box is disposable and though it is small, the inside follows a principle similar to the space compression bag. Inside, there is an item.]

“That means if you’re lucky enough, you could even get a tank

worths tens of thousands of points?”

-[You must be very lucky.]

“I can sense emotion in your words.”

Odin did not respond. He becomes silent if something is not in his favor. He is called artificial intelligence, but he is sly like a fox.

“You’re saying I just need to push this button.”

When he pressed a slightly raised, half round button, all sides of the box disappeared. There is no tremendous effect. As it opened, the item came out.

“Is it a stick?”

It is a black bar. Poking at it, it is hard. He guessed it is made of iron or an alloy. It is heavy compared to its length and thickness.

-[That is quite a feat. You have received a black iron alloy. It seems you are not a man of misfortune.]

“Just explain it to me.”

-[It is a material items sold in the level B store. Its strength and resiliency is a few times that of steel, so it raises the quality of the

gear it is mixed into.]

“Is it expensive?”

-[2 million for 10 tied together. To calculate for 1, it would be 200,000 points.]

“Wow!”

Cha Jun Sung showed his happiness on hitting jackpot. He would need to live in a mission for a month to get 2 million points. He had gotten that much at once by chance.

“Wait.”

Cha Jun Sung calmed down and thought of the stick's usage.

Where should he use it? He could not sell it to the store or to a Lifer. He would not even brandish it as a weapon instead of his sword.

-[You can only synthesize or produce items with the black iron alloy.]

“Make gear with this?”

-[Since the material is B class, you might succeed in creating an

item that you can use in level C. Shall I show you a list of items it is possible to synthesize or produce?]

“Show me.”

A hologram that is clearer and larger than the PDA appeared in front of Cha Jun Sung. There were over hundreds of items on the list, but he only took care of the useless ones.

[I would not recommend that you create armor with the amount that you own. I will recommend strengthening your arms.]

It is 1 stick. He would have been able to create metal armor if he had 4 more.

Iron armor covers the entire body and can be used until the battle shoot. In the chance that he is hit, it can even block a 7.62mm.

“Is it just the sword?”

-[If you use the black iron alloy as a foundation and create a sword, you will be able to create a weapon better than the Wolf Blade.]

There are 2 ways to purchase the Wolf Blade. Either buy the completed product, or create it with materials. There is a 20% discount on the latter.

Cha Jun Sung is wary of creating goods. If something goes wrong

while producing it, it will not live up to the completed product or it malfunctions. That is a waste of points.

“Are you going to make it well for me?”

-[You cannot interfere in the production of items. You will have to put trust in your luck.]

“You’re just supposed to say you’ll make it well. It’s not like you’re selling something for the first time.”

Cha Jun Sung contemplated for a short time and purchased the materials that go into production by item. He just hoped that there would not be any malfunctions even if its performance fell short.

Various assembly pieces like the vibration engine and energy core scraped up the 240,000 points that Cha Jun Sung had worked like an ant for a few months to gather.

Clunk!

He took his materials and went into a production room in the briefing room. It looks like a small factory. The machine worktable was set to Wolf Blade.

Wiing!

The machine changes. It is adjusting the deployment status to



meet the production of the weapon. There are as many shapes to the machine as there are types of weapons.

-[Please place the suitable material in the position the hologram indicates, and choose the functions that you want. It will take 3 days until completion.]

Beep beep!

Even when he was active as Overload in the virtual version, he had preferred the sword. It is because regardless of the appearance, weight adjustment is possible as long as he has the materials.

However, weight exists in reality. A sword needs to have a heavy feeling to it.

If he makes it as it appears in the virtual, it would feel as light as cotton with his body modification and increased muscular strength.

“I’ll do this one.”

The shape he chose is a straight line like a sword. The thickest part of the blade is 1cm, the point is 10cm long, and the length of the entire blade is 1.5m. The weight is 30kg.

Woong!

He decided to mix titanium with the remaining parts to make a dagger. After starting the production, the black iron alloy disappeared.

He finally had his first private weapon. The weapons he had possessed until now are just toys.

The machine does the direct production, but he had to pay close attention to the small details to match his battle style. He will have a stronger attachment to this weapon than anything else.

“I’ll be back in 3 days.”

He had butterflies in his stomach thinking about the weapon that would be born. He will love it dearly.

# Chapter 56

---

When Cha Jun Sung returned home, he went through the messages on his blog. Before meeting Lim Si Hyun, he had dragged them into the trash all together.

He had read a few at first, but hundreds of spam mail come in everyday. As they piled and piled, they reached over 10,000 like it is a joke.

Spam dealers became better by the day, so they got through all of the filters. At some point, he just had a resigned state of mind where he did not pay attention to them.

“Ah..... So this is how he sent it.”

There are 12 messages that Han Chang Jin sent. It took a few days to find all of them.

E-mail has a search function. It looks for particular words that are searched. Regretfully, there is no message. He needs to look through each of them individually.

Searching through a sea of spam is hard work. He took his time with it since Lim Si Hyun said that he would handle arranging a meeting for what they discussed a few days ago.

He does not have to find the messages, but there is the effort that Han Chang Jin had put in to sending them. He should read them at

least.

-[Overload, I have something I must tell you on behalf of the government. Please contact me when you see this message. We need you.]

They were similar to this message. His writing is stiff, fitting for a soldier. He still did not feel rejection toward it. His image is good.

“Hm?”

As he was about to close the window after finishing his work, a title caught Cha Jun Sung’s eye. It is in Japanese.

It does not look like spam. Even if he cannot read it because it is in a different language, he could tell if it is spam or not just by looking it over. He put the PDA to his computer and turned on the translator.

Wiing!

-[The scan has begun. Decoding complete. Please check the content.]

The translation is written on the PDA. Cha Jun Sung read it without any thought.

-[Pails, are you doing well? This is Koharu. The world is changing

so much that I did not have time to get in touch.]

Cha Jun Sung sat up straight in his chair and focused on the translated text on his PDA. How could this be! That woman contacted him!

Overload is a title that people had given him, but Pails is Cha Jun Sung's character name. This woman is the only person who calls him that so amicably.

-[Pails, you entered level D as well, haven't you? There is less need for parties in level E, but I really felt that solo missions are impossible from now on.]

-[It is full of people I can't trust. Ambition has shaken people's humanity. I am going through a lot because I am a woman.]

Because she is a woman? There are an increasing number of cases where women are included in parties as long as they are powerful. Their purpose is to serve as a soother

There is nothing that can be done about this because it is done by agreement. Rape and murder are also frequent. The government cannot take responsibility for what happens inside the missions.

Evidence is needed to prove a crime. Collecting data in a mission? It does not make sense. A crime cannot be established on testimony alone.

-[Thankfully, nothing very bad has happened to me. Honestly Pails, I can't even trust you 100%. I do trust you enough to put my expectations on you.]

Whew!

He sighed in relief because his friend is safe. It is upsetting that she does not think of him as completely trustworthy, but he could understand. The world is going insane.

-[I am looking for a fixed party. The members are my little sister and myself. A tyrant proposed a party, but we rejected. We can't trust him.]

The tyrant is Murayama Tanaka. He and Koharu are the only 2 Japanese rankers. He is a hot-blooded maverick who does whatever he wants.

He has a bad relationship with Cha Jun Sung and had a bad reputation in the virtual version. If Campbell garnered an evil reputation as PK, Tanaka is a wrongdoer.

-[I'm sure it hasn't changed?]

Mizuki Koharu. It would become a great strength to the party if Cha Jun Sung as an assassination tracker and Koharu as an expert in 쌍단도술 come together.

“Of course not.”

He gives trust to the person who trusts him. That is Cha Jun Sung. That was it for the content in the message. Looking at the incoming date, it is 6 days ago.

Cha Jun Sung input a response in his PDA and translated it into Japanese.

It is a courtesy to make it easy to read. He copied it into an e-mail and sent it. The PDA works freely with all computer networks.

He asked Odin once. What would happen if scientists took the items helpers give Lifers and take them apart to reinvent them? To this, Odin said,

-[If a primitive man were given a cellphone, would he be able to understand the principle of it?]

Cha Jun Sung was irked but he took it that he was saying it is of such a higher science that he it could not be understood with current knowledge.

“Good!”

He would stay quiet until the weapon came out. Once Park Jin Hyuk gets his Head Hunter and his Wolf Blade comes out a few days later, they would go in right away.

3 days went by so slowly and Cha Jun Sung had his watch on him everyday. He was full of anticipation and waiting.

Seureung!

It is beautiful. He can feel the black metal hidden in the blade.

Excluding the make-up, it is similar to a common sword but beyond being satisfied, Cha Jun Sung fell in love at first sight.

It is heavy. He had to use his muscles to lift 30kg with one hand. If he brandishes this with power, the weight will be increased.

-[The vibration function can be adjusted with the switch on/off. In the on state, access is prohibited in all aspects other than the hilt.]

Weapons are inanimate. They do not discriminate between foes. If it goes at someone in a vibrating state, it either breaks or cuts.

-[The production method followed the Wolf Blade, but a new weapon was born with the black iron alloy as its basic foundation.]

-[The D class energy core and vibration engine are flaws, but it is a great incorporation.]

The foundation is B class but the components are D class. It is because the materials are mixed. The inside of vibrating weapons



are full of complex machinery.

If the core and engine were C class, he would use it until level B missions.

-[I will engrave your name on it as a courtesy. Is there something you had in mind?]

Name? He had never thought of it before. Excluding the use of the black iron alloy, the manufacturing process followed exactly that of the Wolf Blade. He was going to call it that as well.

“Contemplating the name for a long time will only make my head hurt. What do you think of Wolf Kill?”

-[Killing wolves?]

“According to your explanation, it’s somewhere between level D or C? What if it’s mocking but better than a wolf? It’s killing the wolf if it’s overwhelmed.”

-[Wolf Kill, confirmed. I will embed it right away. It will only take 1 minute.]

Zing!

A high-density laser embeds the name Wolf Kill in English. It did not bother him because it was subtle.

“You’re like a double personality artificial intelligence.”

-[What does that mean?]

“You’re serious when you’re serious, but when you joke, you get to the point where I want to beat you up.”

-[With a great A.I. like me, you must differentiate between personal and professional feelings.]

Cha Jun Sung put the Wolf Kill on his hip. It did not drag on the floor because he is tall. A short Lifer would need to put it on his back.

“Well your shit is thick (Korean saying to say someone is arrogant).”

-[I do not go to the bathroom as an A.I. Where are you going?]

Odin was serious and had a conservative tone at first, but he got more annoying as they spent more time together. But Odin is still completely on his side, his helper.

“Just as I did after the body modification, I’m going into a mission to test the new weapon.”

-[Wolf Kill’s power is similar to existing products, but it does not

compare to the strength and elasticity of others and could blow a rock to pieces.]

“Thanks.”

-[It's nothing.]

Woong.

Cha Jun Sung entered a mission. It is a 3000 point solo mission. It was a matter of life or death before, but it is now a suitable test site.

# Chapter 57

---

“Fresh air!”

He stroked the Wolf Kill. All he had done was to purchase a weapon, but he felt reassured.

If he gets an item like the battle shoot later, would it feel like he has the whole world? It could, but his heart would not flutter as much as it did the first time.

Cha Jun Sung whistled and entered an area covered in housing.

This is a small village with a population of 20,000. The mission goal is annihilation. He just has to sweep them. His Wolf Kill and red fire hung from either side of his hip.

A gun is absolutely necessary unless it is a mission far below standards. Lifers who are part of a melee like Cha Jun Sung have restrictions to how much of their ability is shown.

Even with Park Jin Hyuk, he can do his worth as a sniper as long as he has a rifle.

However, an attack group could go wrong if a move is even slightly off. Gear makes the difference to go up against mutants. That is why they hold guns.

There is no way to get rid of these tiring restrictions other than to go through the 4th stage of body modifications and use the battle shoot. Until then, he must always be careful.

Keureuk!

“Stop waiting around and come out. I came to go to war.”

A mass of mutants holding crude weapons walked out from a shaded area. There were only a few level 2 mutants and the rest are level 1.

“Walkers.”

The transition of the A virus is decided in the first infected tribe. Just as an infected human cannot become an infected plant, the reverse is also impossible.

Walkers, cannibals, Crawlions and Spectres all started as humans.

Hatcheries are very rare, but it is known as having come from a cell like an amoeba in the virtual version. It is not a human victory, but a cell victory.

Walkers come gathering in. Their physical ability is somewhere in middle to top of level 1.

They use tools to support their lack of physical ability, but there are more humanoid mutants that use weapons than those that do not.

“After playing with Spectres, you guys are frustrating.”

Pang!

Cha Jun Sung approached the Walkers within moments. He had been about 60m away, but he moved that distance within 5 seconds.

If the weight of the gear on his body is all combined, it is that of a person. If it had been his bare body, it would not have even taken 4 seconds. That speed is running 100m in 6 seconds.

Seureung!

Cha Jun Sung leapt with a running force and slashed down his Wolf Kill. A Walker raised a metal pipe and covered its head. It is a reflex action.

As the metal pipe cut, the Walker was broken into pieces. There was leftover power and he stabbed down to the ground. He had not even turned on the vibration function. It is a tremendous cutting force.

Cha Jun Sung rotated his body and swept the Wolf Kill 360 degrees. Walkers coming at him from all directions were cut up

and squirmed in pain.

“on.”

The Wolf Kill's blade is electric. A weak vibration rang through his hand. In that state, he stabbed a Walker and brought it up. Nothing was blocked.

“Huh?”

Cutting tofu with a knife? Slashing through water? Bones and muscle did not get caught. It was over if the blade touched it ever so slightly. The offensive power increased abnormally.

A Walker hit the back of Cha Jun Sung's head with a stick. He was okay because he was protected by a helmet. Even without the helmet, he would not have been wounded.

His current skeletal strength is almost that of steel. His muscle is also as firm as rubber. He is not in a state where he can be brought down so easily with a few hits.

Cha Jun Sung brandished the Wolf Kill diagonally at the Walker that hit him. It hit the wall behind it and left a mark.

Once he hit the whole wall, the mounting antagonism was felt.

The Walkers were surprised and stepped away from Cha Jun

Sung. Dozens of them died. He is too strong. He is fine even if he is hit, and he did not even get tired.

“I guess they’ll die even if I throw them slightly.”

Cha Jun Sung took the pin off of the grenade. When one fights with many, the advantage is that he only needs to watch himself. Other than that, everything is a disadvantage.

The grenade went off in the middle of the Walkers. Their flesh scatters. Since they are all gathered together, he did not need to put in much strength to get rid of them all at once.

Ha ha!

Cha Jun Sung’s eye became red. He had gone slightly crazy. Lifers who went through body modification always work to keep their sanity under control.

It is an unofficial aftereffect, so it becomes nothing if it is not focused on. It is not difficult since they only need to pay a little attention to it.

The problem is the building stress. They need to release it occasionally. That is why Cha Jun Sung does as he wants when he goes into a solo mission.

If he leaves his body to the madness, the offensiveness to killing mutants disappears.



He is becoming a killing machine. In a militant aspect, it is more effective to go crazy than to try to maintain sanity. The only this is that it is only useful when alone.

They need to go crazy while seeing the state of the party or force. Whatever they can see in front of their eyes is an obstacle. In this regard, there are bad cases with Lifers.

He has not completely lost himself to the madness. There is still some sanity left.

Usually, it takes 5 days to complete a 3000 point mission. At this rate, it could be shortened to 3 days. It is record-breaking. He gives this honor to the Wolf Kill.

# Chapter 58

---

“I got ramen, but you got something like this! It’s not fair!”

Park Jin Hyuk looked all over the Wolf Kill and complained. He had told Cha Jun Sung to get his worth as well, but he is now speaking differently.

“It’s not like the Wolf Kill came out. I used 250,000 points to produce it.”

“Since the black iron alloy gave birth to this guy, it’s your fortune.”

Hearing it, it is so. Without the black iron alloy, the Wolf Kill would not have existed.

“How many points is this worth?”

“I didn’t ask how much it is. Odin, how much is it if you calculate it by points?”

-[Since the materials are not constant, it is not sold as a completed product. If you need to calculate, 450,000 points is appropriate.]

450,000. Just as Odin expected, it is a weapon that could be used until level C missions. For now, he only needs to focus on

upgrading basic gear.

Park Jin Hyuk scratched the side of the building with the Wolf Kill. A line forms.

Since he switched the on function, it dug in deeply. It would not be a problem to cut not only level 3 mutants, but also level 4 if they are unprotected.

“What do you think?”

Seuk.

Park Jin Hyuk drew a line across his neck with his hand. It is a certain gesture.

The way he looked at it, getting caught on the Wolf Kill means death. The more minor mutants will be done with just a slight cut. It is the legendary Excalibur sword.

Cha Jun Sung did a time attack of 3 days in the experimental mission for the Wolf Kill. After killing and killing, the place had turned bleak.

“The Head Hunter looks stupid.”

“Let me see it for a second.”

Park Jin Hyuk handed him the Head Hunter. It is twice as heavy as the Wolf Kill.

It is 2m long and weighs 60kg. It looks like a grenade launcher with a muzzler. It is clunky.

“It’s heavy, so I can’t snipe with it while on the move.”

“Hm.”

Sniping on the go needs a clean shot. Forget the weight, the rebound is severe. The average person cannot lift it and it could break a shoulder when shot.

“I’m going to try shooting it.”

“Sure.”

This is the first mission they are going in together in 10 days, but they are only playing with their weapons.

A shot fires from the Head Hunter. Even a target 2km away is captured in the scope, and has the power to kill through a steel sheet.

“It hurts. Someone wouldn’t even be able to shoot it if you gave it to them.”

He only fired one shot and his shoulder is stiff. Rest is needed every time a shot is fired.

Cha Jun Sung aimed at a nearby building. He wants to see the strength of the explosive bomb. The purpose of purchasing the Head Hunter is for the explosive bomb, capable of mass destruction.

Something resembling a k4 grenade flew out and reduced the building's outer wall to ashes. The rebound was worse than that of the bullet, but it is comparable to a grenade as the description had said.

“You’ll have to be careful when you shoot it. With the wrong move, you could kill your allies.”

“Input complete!”

There is always danger in using weapons. It would not be a weapon if it is safe. A weapon is a weapon. They must keep that in mind. With this, they ended their personal maintenance.

“When do we meet the new candidates for a party?”

“Soon.”

There is no contact from Koharu yet. Cha Jun Sung worries that something may have happened.

He only received her message 6 days after she had sent it. He had seen it too late. Since he sent his response 10 days ago, it has been 16 days.

“Is her sibling also a woman?”

“Yeah.”

Hee hee!

Park Jin Hyuk smiled widely. He had not shown it, but it was a drag to always be going around with a man. They will be revitalized if there is a flower in their team.

Woo woo!

A mutant heard the explosion and is approaching them. They prepared for battle.

“It’s coming.”

“I want to hurry up and meet the new party members.”

Cha Jun Sung admitted it. He fully trusted Park Jin Hyuk. He is pickier than anyone else. If he does not like them, they cannot enter their party.

‘I am waiting.’

Mizuki Koharu, what are you doing that you are not responding?

A mistake? Letting their guard down? They had been unlucky. They had gone into the wrong path during the mission. The result was that they had invaded the habitat of level 3 mutants, which had nothing to do with their mission.

It only took moments for the reward points to increase from 5000 to 8000.

If it had been a formal force operated by a large guild, they would have been able to retaliate in some way. However, the limitations to a piecewise force are clear.

Tatat!

Mizuki Koharu took her sister, Kyoko, by the hand and ran away.

13 Lifers are following behind her. They cannot quit the mission because they are being tracked. They need to get away from the mutants or kill them.

It is a mutant that is impossible to kill with the current members' skills and equipment. Even the mutants in the original mission were scared of these.

“Ko, Koharu!”

“Run! We’re dead if we stop!”

Koharu held tightly to Kyoko’s hand. Even with the 2nd stage of body modifications, the female body is weak. They do not receive the effects that healthy men get.

The escape lasted for 1 week. They cannot help but tire out in this environment.

After wandering around the same place, they retreated to the area where they were first summoned. It is a prison where hundreds are held. As the outside is blocked, they have an advantage in defense.

They hunted the Lifers one at a time. Very slowly. Even though it is a piecewise party, 100 people was reduced to 15.

They had been massacred without even being able to go through with the mission that they needed to do in the first place. The more surprising part was that they had not fallen to adults, but 2 babies.

Koharu stayed alive until now because of her skill and because 85 people died before her. The order of killings was decided randomly.



“It’s the prison!”

At that cry, the Lifers brought up the remainder of their strength to speed up.

They can see a building on top of a secluded mountain. The exact destination is a special facility that imprisons criminals. Other than the entrance, everything is closed in.

“Ah! We survived! Let’s all take a break and figure out how to kill them!”

The Lifers had been devastated while taking advantage of the features.

They were in a rush to run away, so they did not have the chance to think about it. Since they have some of their basic necessities, they need to plot how they will get rid of the crazy monsters.

A few seconds passed since they yelled that they are alive. A crescent-shaped blade the length of half of a human penetrated and came out through the waist.

Ack!

The Lifers’ faces went blue at the painful groan.

They had been mistaken in thinking that they had gotten away.

They were moving similarly. They had been playing into the mutants' hands in the first place.

A mutant 2m tall slices up the Lifer. It is big, but it does not look to be an adult. The way it uses the knife on its arm is also awkward.

Behind the baby, 3 mutants dropped down from the trees. 2 of them are complete adults and 1 is about two heads shorter because it is still developing.

The 2 adults looked at the baby with pleased expressions. It is inexperienced, but its hunting skills are advancing. It just needs to work a little bit harder.

It would have been nothing for the adults to hunt and slaughter the Lifers, but they had left them as practice for their babies. They only wanted to get involved when it is dangerous.

Koharu went into the prison and turned her head back. She saw a Lifer who had been ripped into a rag and the mutants standing still and looking at them.

“Slayer.....”

The strongest level 3. Slayers, which are gifted in hunting, are the culprits that had killed 86 of the Lifers. The other 14 lives would be the same.

The male Slayer said something to the larger child. At that, it chased the Lifers with the small child. The adults watched without moving.

# Chapter 59

---

-[The tracking has faded. For 5 minutes, 3 people can quit.]

With the helper's notice Koharu, Kyoko, and the other Lifers' eyes widened. There are 14 members, but only 3 people can quit the mission?

One Lifer who was looking around at the others requested to quit the mission.

It would not take more than 5 seconds to return, but a Lifer next to him pushed him.

As their locations were twisted, the return was canceled. They are both requesting return. Time to discuss? There is none. At this rate, all 3 opportunities will disappear.

“Kyoko! Listen to me! I'll buy you time. Quit in that time!”

“I don't want to!”

Koharu took her twin daggers and blocked Kyoko from the front. A few Lifers drove their attention to her. If they want to live, they need to block her return.

“I'll stay. Just give one spot to my sister. Don't come.”

The Lifers witnessed Koharu's skills as they were running away to the prison.

She had never fought an adult, but she is strong enough to battle a child one-on-one. If she goes at it blindly, she could die before the return happens.

With a mutual agreement, they handed one spot over. It is better to go after 2 certain spots instead of 1 uncertain spot. Then they fought again.

“Why aren't you going back!”

“I'm going with you!”

She cannot go back no matter what. One of the two need to go back, but Kyoko cannot drag out time in battle as a medic. She needs to be the one to stay.

She completely forgot about the special facilities, which had been her goal. While the Lifers were fighting each other to go back, the baby Slayers had caught up to them.

The Slayers ran around and hung upside down from the ceiling. The Lifers did not get themselves together until then and started fighting amongst themselves.

“Hurry!”

Kyoko cried as she requested to quit. Neither the Lifers nor the Slayers stopped her. To do that, they would need to get through Koharu first.

Woong!

Kyoko gradually began to fade. It was right before her return.

“Live strong.”

The tears that Koharu had been holding back, spilled down her face. There was no transition. She was already sad that she was dying, but also sad to be separating from her sister.

‘I love you.’

‘Me too.’

Kyoko returned to reality. She wanted to at least hold Koharu’s hand for the last time, but the return becomes canceled if she moves. She could only express her feelings with her eyes.

-[The time to quit the mission is over. It is no longer allowed.]

“No!”

“2 more people could have lived but couldn’t because of you guys!”

The Lifers blamed each other. It is not an issue to argue over blame. There was not one person who had not been selfish with the requests to quit.

Koharu had also turned a blind eye to what they were doing for Kyoko’s return.

‘It’s dangerous here.’

The Slayers watched the spectacle below them and did not attack. The adults did not act either.

Koharu was watching the situation and went into the special facility. Even if she dies, she would die while doing what she could. She would not just stay still.

\*\*\*

The atmosphere in the special facility is like that of a funeral home. She did come in, but could not exit. The prison had become the Slayers’ new habitat.

Including Koharu, there are 13 Lifers. Even if they put together a plan, there was not enough power to take on 4 Slayers.

“Let’s forget the scene from before. We showed shameful behavior because of survival.”

Hm hm!

The Lifers who had just tried to return even if it meant killing others, were busy apologizing. Is this sincere? If they are given another chance, they would do the same.

Mutants also have the duplicity that humans have. There is nothing to gain from showing their true selves in an enclosed state, so they are just hiding their inner feelings.

“I’m sorry, but I’ll speak for everyone. We need to gather all of our goods together. If they wait it out, another force might enter.”

The Lifers looked at the man negatively. 8 people have space compression bags. 5 have their packs but it seems he lost his as he was running away.

Gathering their necessities together meant giving to the people who do not have. Why do they have to share? If they keep everything to themselves, they can stay alive longer.

“I don’t want to.”

“Excuse me?”



A short Lifer revealed his rejection. It does not make sense. If even 30 days worth is shared, it becomes 15 days. Is he crazy to do this?

“Seeing as how you have a pack as well, shouldn’t you agree?”

“That’s right.”

“How did you think of coming into a level D mission without a space compression bag? Take responsibility for it if you came in without knowing your state.”

He criticized the Lifers who went into a top mission when they do not have the skills to do so.

The owners of space compression bags discussed and put distance between themselves and the Lifers without bags. If they try to come take the bags, they would put their strength together to fight back.

“We fall short of food and supplies to use in battle.”

“So?”

“People need to help each other more in times are difficulty.”

“How are you saying that we must help each other when you

tried to prevent others from returning?”

The people who wanted to share and those who did not continued to argue. Koharu did not get involved, but she felt negative.

If they wait it out, would they be able to live?

Would she be able to see Kyoko again?

If they share their necessities, they need to also share that hope. If they eat sparingly, they can last 2 months. The important thing are the supplies for battle.

As they had basically had a shootout while running away until now, they could not guess how much they have left before opening it. It could all be gone.

Keureung!

“Ack!”

“Slayer!”

While the Lifers had been arguing for a while, a Slayers eye was looking around through the bulletproof window of the facility.

The facility's purpose is to imprison criminals. Even though the door is sturdy, the entrance would be opened if the Slayer uses its knife or kicks it down.

The Slayer looked over the Lifers and hid itself. Since they can be hunted and killed at anytime, there is no reason to rush.

Koharu watched a few Lifers and hardened her expression. The fact that their sanities have been compromised because of fear are displayed. It is a bad sign.

‘They’re in a bad state mentally.’

It is a Lifer who does not have a space compression bag. He is a ticking time bomb. There is no way of knowing what could happen in an extreme situation.

They are facing 2 problems. Getting past the problem regarding the Slayers, they need to figure out the 5 Lifers who would not be able to last long without supplies.

What if they pull out their guns? They’ll die from internal fighting before the Slayers could even get to them. Koharu was also against sharing supplies, but she was running out of options.

‘Be straightforward.’

Koharu thought about it calmly. It is difficult to claim supplies in this closed off situation even if she purchased them with her own

points.

If they want to stretch their days of survival, they need to work in harmony.

“Let’s split it in half.”

“What?”

“Who are you to say that!”

“Should we die amongst ourselves while fighting over supplies? Look at those 2 people. They are having trouble accepting this situation with their weak mentality.”

The people with space compression bags looked at the Lifers that Koharu pointed out. Just by looking at them, they could tell that the two are in a bad state. It is the perfect state to create a ruckus.

“This place is lawless. There’s no use in distinguishing between what’s yours and mine.”

The Lifers wavered. The people with bags clenched their teeth and faced reality, while the people without felt shame at these words meant to reduce their worth.

“Fuck! These assholes! Don’t you guys have any shame? You should have just kept playing in level E. Why did you crawl into

level D? If you don't have the skills, build them!"

He spits out a lot of offensive rhetoric. His chest feels like it is on fire.

No one stopped him and no one refuted him either. He did not say anything wrong. They were not prepared and were only full of will. Lifers who are at no fault have to work harder.

"Save the resentment for when you die. If you live, make sure you repay the favor."

Knock knock!

The Lifers took their supplies out bitterly.

Koharu helped. Whatever it is, the mediator needs to go as well. Even if you cannot take the high road, you should not shortcut yourself. The 5 people without bags broke this completely.

They are nuisances, but they need to all be fit to fight the Slayer.

# Chapter 60

---

Meanwhile, Kyoko returned and weeped with her hands to her face.

The guilt of leaving Koharu in that hell broke her heart. But she did not just cry without doing anything. She thought about how to rescue her.

“What do I do? Re-entry by myself is impossible. It became an 8000 point mission. It’ll become deleted from Lifers’ mission lists.”

While choosing a mission, there is an extensive list that is dizzying. Beyond a certain number of points, they are private.

To do 8000 points when people are iffy about going into 6000 point missions.

She is running out of options. The mission names show what types of mutants might be appearing. If she tries to recruit a force, no one would apply and people would say that she is crazy.

She needs a full force with the complete 100 people, but she does not have the ability to find all of those people.

“Ask him for a favor? No! Koharu told me never to get involved with him.”

Of the current large guilds in Japan, there are only a few that would make an attempt at an 8000 point mission. Of those, the best is Anger.

Anger's master is among the 36 rankers and called Tyrant – Murayama Tanakada. He is a roughneck who acts without plans, but his abilities are real.

His personal link to Koharu is that they went to middle and high school together. He showed bad behavior when he was young, and that became worse as he grew older.

He likes Koharu. Pure intentions? It is obsession and possessiveness.

It is the exclusiveness that differentiates from the average person. Koharu is a famous model in Japan. Men love her for her attractive body and face.

Tanaka might grant it if she asks him to rescue Koharu. The only thing is that Koharu or Kyoko would have to pay the corresponding exchange.

“Koharu didn't save it either.”

She looked through Koharu's phone left on top of her desk. Tanaka gave his contact information to the both of them, but they had erased it after pretending they saved it.

Kyoko turned on the computer and went onto the Anger homepage. She has no choice but to find the guild's contact to work up to Tanaka.

If she reveals her real name, Mizuki Kyoko, a few times, she will get in direct contact. The Anger guild members also know who the sisters are.

It is obvious that around now, Koharu and the Lifers will have gone into the facility to buy time. There is no room to hesitate. Time is urgent.

She wrote the number on a piece of paper. It is naive to put all of her trust in Tanaka. Before calling him, she needs to get a few trustworthy Lifers together.

-[How, how many points did you say? Are you telling me to commit suicide right now?]

-[I'm sorry.]

-[Are you going with the elite of the Anger guild? Excuse me? You're saying I'm the first?]

She called Lifers she had maintained relationships with in order.

They get scared and reject. Kyoko could understand them. It is the same as her saying that they need to put their lives on the line in saving Koharu, not for the mission itself.



People who risk their lives for others' danger are only moralists who appear in books.

-[How about Anger?]

-[Aren't you friendly with Mr. Tanaka of Anger? Try asking him.]

Looking for Anger guild conspicuously. Tanaka had let the bomb go off on a broadcasting station that he went to school with Koharu, is her fan, and loves her.

For a few days, Koharu's phone did not stop vibrating. Tanaka does not care about others' personal lives more than he does of his own opinions.

Lifers got excited and thought that Anger would go into the mission because Tanaka explicitly expressed interest, but fell back once they realized that they are not confirmed to go in.

Kyoko looked at the phone number on her paper and hesitated. All types of thoughts passed through his mind. Is this right? Is there no one but him?

Kyoko went into Koharu's blog before calling. It is limited to private, so anyone who is not close with Koharu will only see a basic window.

It is full of photos of the two sisters. Koharu has a minor hobby. She likes to take pictures and upload them to her blog.

“I need to save her.”

She made up her mind. She will go to Tanaka for the favor. She'll give him whatever he wants.

When Kyoko made up her mind and was about to call Anger guild, the message window blinked brightly. She subconsciously clicked on the window.

She saw a few spam messages. There are very few because there are few visitors on the blog. However, there was a strange message in the midst.

-[Koharu, this is Pails. I received your message. I'm answering very late, aren't I?]

-[I ignored it, thinking that it was spam. I'll give you my response first. I would welcome you as a fixed party. It's just the 2 of us here, my close friend and myself.]

-[After checking, send me a message. If you get in contact through my helper's name Odin, I'll respond right away. We were short on members as it is!]

“Pails? Pails, I heard that name before.”

Kyoko also played Life Mission. She is not the standard of a ranker, but she made her name known as a medic. It is an unpopular profession, so more respected.

She opened the sent window and read what Koharu wrote. She left some distance while seeming extremely friendly and going past acquaintances.

‘I think we’ll be gaining a good colleague.’

‘Who is it?’

‘Pails! Think about it. You know him too. Maybe you don’t remember because you only know him by his alias?’

Kyoko’s eyes shook. She remembered who Pails is.

“O, Overload!”

Once she recalled who it is, she remembered everything Koharu had said about him. Kyoko had also hunted as a party with him.

She crumpled up the phone number for Anger guild. She needs to contact Overload.

If it is him, he would rescue Koharu without conditions. He is her only hope.

Kyoko sent a message to Cha Jun Sung and requested to speak with Odin. It could not be missed since the PDA is on their wrists as if it is a watch.

-[Connecting.]

-[Odin has accepted Aphrodite's request to speak.]

Kyoko clenched her fists. She got through the first obstacle. What follows is important.

-[Ms. Koharu?]

-[Do you remember me? I'm her little sister, Kyoko! Please, save my sister!]

The conversation started.

# Chapter 61

---

Cha Jun Sung's expression is dark. It is ever since he picked up Kyoko's call. He saw the mission written on his PDA and started worrying.

-[Level D Mission: Slayer's Prison] [Goal: Annihilation]

-[Content: Slayers who became involved in crimes beat Lifers to death. A section survived, so they ran away to the prison but the Slayers followed them there and occupied it. Annihilate the Slayers and return the mission to its original state.]

-[Reward: 8000 points]

Annihilate the Slayers. According to Kyoko's explanation, there are 4 Slayers.

It is unbelievable. There are 2 adults and 2 children, and the large child is about 2.5m large. Its attacking power would fit on the weak side of level 3.

“Even after ignoring the small child, there are 3 others. Are the heavens testing me?”

He had not known it would be so difficult to put trustworthy party members together.

If he accepts this request, he would go in alone or maybe have Park Jin Hyuk follow him in. It is a dangerous mission.

If Cha Jun Sung himself had been involved, he would have used his connection to ask Lim Si Hyun. He can just repay as much as he receives.

Strictly speaking, Koharu is an outsider. It is impossible to drag them into it when he himself is deciding whether or not he will accept.

Tick tock tick tock!

The second, minute, and hour hands moved. 2 hours passed as he contemplated.

He asked Kyoko to give him time to think about it. It may feel like she is being dried out by the second, but he could not act as if he is choosing from a menu at a restaurant.

“Kyoko will know the spot, right? If they’re alive, we can join them.”

There are 13 survivors including Koharu. If they join, there is added power. The goal is to quit and leave the mission rather than complete it.

“What do I do about Jin Hyuk?”

He searched Zephyrus in the PDA list. Should he tell him? If he has the Head Hunter, he could kill a Slayer in one go. He had seen the power for himself.

-[What are you up to?]

-[Playing a game. When do we go into a level D mission? Regular life is boring.]

Good. Should he tell Park Jin Hyuk that the candidates to join their party are stuck in a mission and ask if he would like to go into an 8000 point mission to kill 4 Slayers?

He could not get himself to ask. The level is too high. Saying it is giving him a burden. He does not want to use this method, but he needs to get an idea of Park Jin Hyuk's thoughts.

-[A party candidate is stuck in a mission. Her sister barely got out.]

-[We need to save her!]

-[It's 8000 points. The mutant that comes out is the Slayer. I'm going to say no.]

He is not speaking. It is a natural reaction. The difficulty of the

mission can be guessed from the reward points and mutant name. Cha Jun Sung was also speechless.

-[How trustworthy is the person?]

-[Do you know why I liked solo plays more than parties in the virtual version?]

-[Because it's more comfortable?]

-[As you know, the game is where troublemakers hang out. They do all kinds of things with things we can't see. Lying and backstabbing are common.]

Cha Jun Sung is the respected Overload, but his network is weak.

The people he meets just pass by him. He did not contact anyone in the reality version and put in the legwork to find Park Jin Hyuk.

He does not have light friendships where he exchanges light chatter. Koharu is the only friend who he thought he would be able to trust in reality.

-[But I can't risk my life for that.]

-[Let's go.]



Park Jin Hyuk accepted the mission. He is not saying it recklessly.

-[We could die.]

-[You said she's trustworthy. As long as we're in Life Mission, we're risking our lives whether it's a 5000 point mission or 8000 points.]

The number of points judges the difficulty, but they could get unlucky. Life and death is decided upon entering.

-[You were just testing me, right? You said we shouldn't go but were going to go by yourself?]

-[Hey.]

Park Jin Hyuk's answer is 60 points. 40 points were really that he did not want to go in.

-[Is it the 2 of us?]

-[There's a Japanese woman, Kyoko, who will also be going with us. She is that rare medic. I think I remember hearing that she goes to medical school.]

-[Her level?]

-[I didn't ask. But she is Amhu's little sister, so you think it'll be low? She'll have at least a few pieces of medical equipment from the level D store.]

Types of medical equipment are categorized as external, internal, and trauma injuries.

Of course, trauma injuries are expensive. How much was it? 400,000? 450,000? All intermediate procedures are possible without visiting the briefing room.

Arms and legs could be attached again if cut off. A medic cannot help but be respected.

What is more is that she is a medical student. If a doctor is a medic, he is led by a lot more medical knowledge than the average medic is.

-[Thanks.]

-[She's a candidate to join our party. Since she's my successor, she's worth saving.]

Reward points 8000, mission name is Slayer's Prison, Cha Jun Sung created a party. As soon as he created it, Park Jin Hyuk applied.

Woong!

Cha Jun Sung told Kyoko that they accepted. She was so happy she could jump, but was shocked that only 3 people including herself would be entering the mission.

However, it would take too much time to get in contact with Tanaka to get Anger's guild together. They would need to go like this.

-[Ms. Kyoko, can you hear me?]

-[Yes!]

They are tied as a party. Park Jin Hyuk and Kyoko could hear him.

-[Leave the mutants to us and lead us through the fastest way possible. Since you've gone in before, our chance of survival increases if all goes well.]

They will enter the mission, work out their operation, and move.

-[We apply.]

-[Application complete. You are being sent to level D mission Slayer's Prison. Mission start.]

Cha Jun Sung looked around him. There is nothing special.

There are stairs going upstairs to lead outside at the end. It looks to be a subway station.

He went toward the stairs. It is a 1m rectangular iron door. It is a warehouse or bunker.

It is frustrating because all of the summons areas, indicated by the helpers, are blocked. They must think that completely closed areas are perfect.

Creak!

The door must be rusty because it creaked no matter how carefully he opened the door. It is enclosed in silence, so it rang far.

‘Is it a factory?’

Warm sunlight coming through a broken window shed light on machines that are used to cut through metal. It is covered in spiderwebs. It is evidence that they had been left for a long time.

Cha Jun Sung closed the iron door and went back to the people he was with. The moment he goes out, it is a fight for survival. They need to know what Kyoko knows.

“What do you think?”

“I looked over it roughly, but I think it’s a waste plant. I don’t sense any mutants.”

“Waste, waste plant?”

Kyoko stammered. Her eyes are full of fear. It is not hot, but there is a cold sweat on her forehead and she was anxious in fear.

“Kyoko, what’s wrong?”

“Including the waste plant, this entire area is the Slayers’ habitat.”

The force was passing this place when they were identified as intruders and were hunted.

When they were taking care of mutants here and there while moving, the Slayers killed Lifers in order on the outside. They avoided facing them cunningly.

“There’s no way the helper would have summoned Lifers to the mutants’ living room. This place is safe.”

The Slayers moved their habitat to the prison. What had been the most dangerous place is now the safest.

Mutants living in the vicinity will still think that Slayers live in the waste plant. They do not have a concept of moving like

humans do.

“The mission purpose is in annihilation, but our goal is to save Koharu.”

To come up with an appropriate plan for their mission goal, it is important to identify the situation.

If they kill the 4 Slayers, they can complete the mission and rescue Koharu. However, the burden is large and the possibility is low.

It takes 1000 points to quit a level D mission. There is no disadvantage to quitting, so they need to end it as quickly as possible.

There is nothing to gain from being greedy in trying to catch the Slayers. If it becomes a situation where they need to kill, they will catch the Slayers.

It is the same for Koharu and the 12 Lifers who are hiding in the facility. He feels bad for them, but he will say it emphatically. He will not take care of them.

If they can keep up, they will live. If they cannot, they will die. He needs to keep in mind that they received someone's request to save someone.

As the iron door opened, the entrance was completely opened.

The outside is still peaceful. Kyoko's anxiety did not go away and she hid amongst the people she came in with.

“Let's go out. Jin Hyuk, guard Ms. Kyoko well. I'll be the only one to act alone.”

If there is a reason to move alone, he will go around by himself. If there is no one to take care of, he is confident that he will not pull back if the situation calls for it.

The Wolf Kill hit their necks. Even if dozens of mutants come at him, they cannot overtake Cha Jun Sung. It is the limitation to a level 1.

Park Jin Hyuk helped him with the automatic crossbow. They refrained from using guns. It feels bad to use them, and they are not in enough trouble to use them.

A dog as large as a wolf pulled its tail down and ran away. It is its way of surviving.

50 to 55 of them came running, but the situation was handled within 10 minutes. He did not go after them to get a few dozen points.

He will kill them if they come at him, but he will let them go if they run away. They were attacked 5 times on the way to the prison. Each time, they gratefully took the points provided.

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk took all of the mutants. If something made it out of the attack, they left it to Kyoko to handle. She shot them to death with her mild eyes.

“It’s almost the prison.”

“Yeah.”

They are following an open road in the mountains. Both sides are mountains, so they could not see but it is good because the road is wide for attack.

If they go about 10km from here, there is a forked road. It is not far. If they choose the one on the right side, they can go up to the prison.

“Let’s turn.”

“You want to go in the opposite direction?”

“If you go through the front door, do you think they’ll welcome us warmly?”

As they walked, Kyoko explained the configuration of the inside of the prison. The difference between hearing about it and seeing it for themselves is the difference between heaven and earth.

They need to stand from a distance and take it all in. They need



to scope out and memorize suitable locations for battle and places to retreat to.

Zing!

Park Jin Hyuk used his vision goggles and Cha Jun Sung did not. If they are within range, they can identify the mutants 100% of the time but it is better to see the outside for themselves.

Kyoko held the SMG and went with Park Jin Hyuk around as a pair.

Before the forked road came out, they got over the safety net and entered the mountains. If the sun goes down, night will come for them. The atmosphere went down with the sun.

“Wait.”

“Be careful.”

Cha Jun Sung went to the front. He needs to examine the dynamics of the prison. Humans have worse vision at night than mutants do. They are at a disadvantage to make a move right now.

‘It’s dark.’

There was complete darkness. The prison looked like it had lost its vigor like a dead building. There are 4 Slayers and 13 Lifers in

there.

Zing!

They changed the vision goggles to night mode. Detecting life form is not easy, but their sight became bright as if it is daylight. It is appropriate to check the prison.

The prison is 4 floors above ground and 1 below. The purpose of creating the building was to confine criminals, so the layout is different from an ordinary building.

It is separated into floors, but there is a layer. No matter what floor they look down from, they can see the 1st floor.

The facility is at the end of the basement. If they just get inside, defense is easy.

The key is how to get in. They would like to get in without the Slayers knowing, but that seems difficult and there is no reason why the Lifers would come out to greet them.

“Odin.”

He does not answer. If they go into the mission, there is limited functionality to the PDA.

Without the installed function, it is basically just a watch. But if

the helper connects them to a Lifer in the facility? It is game out.

“Can’t you help me just once? You guys are god here.”

“Odin?”

“Asshole.”

Cha Jun Sung mumbled and cursed out Odin. Odin was listening.

Once becomes twice. He did not help because he knows that.

If the rumor spreads, it becomes lawless. They need to guard what they need to. Even though Cha Jun Sung is a great Lifer, it is unfair to give him preferential treatment.

“Just tell me if she’s alive or dead.”

Phew! How consistent! He keeps his mouth shut until the end. Cha Jun Sung gave up. He will need to find out on his own.

# Chapter 62

---

The day is bright. The prison is clearly visible. It is the same, without a single change. They watched for a few hours, but a Slayer did not come out.

Park Jin Hyuk had installed the Head Hunter in a bush and aimed at the prison. Going in blindly is a suicide mission. They need to clean up the base.

Originally, Cha Jun Sung was going to handle capturing the Slayers. However, they could not find a way to get inside without reducing their numbers.

He will ignore the children and kill the adults if they come out with the explosive bomb. If that happens, the number of cases will increase. No matter how good the small child is, it can only be level 2.

The adults are scary, the baby is not. They are sure the large child is weaker than a Spectre. They can take on that much with the Wolf Kill.

If all 4 come out and go somewhere, that is an opportunity.

‘Jun Sung.’

‘Sh!’

Something jumped down from the 3rd floor window of the prison. 2 Slayers.

A female with its breasts sticking out and its reproductive organs inside, and a male that is 2 heads shorter. There is no way that can be the baby, and it must be the large child.

‘You guys are living beings too. I’m sure you don’t want to stay inside to wait for death.’

It seems each child has an adult sticking to it. The large child has the female, the baby has the male. They are distributing their attacking power.

With most mutants, the males are stronger than the females. That is why the male is paired with the inexperienced baby. The large child could take care of itself.

‘Look how intimidating.’

Park Jin Hyuk briefly assessed his first impression of the female Slayer. Kyoko put her head down and got on her stomach as soon as she saw the Slayer.

‘What kinds of blades are that big?’

‘Those aren’t used only for attack. It also acts as a shield.’

The female's blade is large enough to cover Park Jin Hyuk. It is 3cm thick, but it is used to shield an attack in addition to killing enemies.

‘The adult won't do. I can definitely kill the large child.’

If he just hits the female, the Slayers' power will be reduced by 30%..

‘Shall I shoot?’

‘Do you think you can hit it?’

If they just move as they are doing now, he can hit it 100%. The problem when that the Slayers hear something and react. The silencer cannot be installed for the explosive bomb.

‘Give me a sniper rifle too. I'll shoot the large child. You shoot the female.’

‘Wow!’

Park Jin Hyuk was pleased with Cha Jun Sung's suggestion, and pulled a sniper rifle out of the space compression bag. It is what he used until he bought the Head Hunter.

‘Don't breathe when you shoot. Your aim moves. Pull the trigger slowly.’

Park Jin Hyuk told him the basic methods. Cha Jun Sung laid next to him and aimed at the child. If they kill 2, they could even fight the rest face-to-face.

Of course, it is not really going to happen like that. Are they crazy to go running to a fully grown male?

‘Jun Sung, give me the signal.’

‘Hang on.’

Park Jin Hyuk is ready to shoot at any time. The Slayers were getting fresh air on the lawn of the prison. Their movement is extremely limited.

‘3, 2, 1. Shoot!’

Tang!

Pung!

The bullet and explosive bomb fired and flew hundreds of meters.

The bullet is faster than its sound. The Slayer’s instincts awakened and realized that something is coming at them. They scattered to the sides.

Kiak!

Cha Jun Sung's bullet penetrated the child's chest. He had aimed for its head, but the aim moved when he pulled the trigger. He still hit a vital spot.

The nature of a bullet is to rotate, so it will not be able to survive.

“No way!”

Park Jin Hyuk's voice grew louder. The female brandished its blades in the direction of the explosive bomb. The bomb flew up at the sky.

Bang!

It blew up in the air. No matter how much it is slower than a bullet, it is unbelievable that it could bat at it like a baseball player to hit a homerun.

It was like watching a circus act. The female adult was not safe either. Its blade was broken, the white bone showed through, and blood was flowing out.

Just as there are failures in item production, there are bomb misfires. They had been unlucky and got caught in that percentage. If not, the bomb would have gone off the second it



touched the blade.

A window broke and the male and baby jumped down. Cha Jun Sung and the others quickly packed up their gear. Their location will have been identified. They need to get away.

The female points to the mountain where they are hiding. The male goes running at an incredibly fast speed. It would not even take 10 seconds to go hundreds of meters.

The female goes toward the large child. It is staying alive out of its tough nature, but it is dying because its chest has been ripped apart.

Eventually, it died. The female let out a sad roar and became angry.

It fixed the wobbling blade with the other. It cannot cannot fix it, but can stick it back on with its resilient nature so it does not drop off.

As its blood boils, the blade sticks. The female's muscle shrinks back.

It has enough nutrients for this. Even if it cannot use the blades right now, it can move. The baby is prowling next to the large child.

There is an understanding of family even among mutants. This is

one of the things that they have in common with people.

The female repaired its blade and followed the male with the baby. Only the large child's corpse was left on the prison lawn.

While Cha Jun Sung was making noise outside, the surviving Lifers inside the facility realized that they had help.

\*\*\*

-[The mutant tracking has halted. It is possible to quit the mission.]

The 4 Slayers had left the prison. The adults and baby were out for revenge for the death of their older child.

When their attention went elsewhere, the lock holding the Lifers was undone.

“Is this for real?”

“Has a new force entered? Then this is our chance to quit!”

It was short, but they heard the gun, bomb explosion, and Slayers' roar. Their saviors had appeared after a few days trapped in the facility.

“I’m leaving!”

“I don’t want to be here anymore!”

The 2 Lifers who had shown anxiety quickly requested to quit.

This annoyed Koharu and she held her dagger to them.

“You’re saying it’s okay to abandon the force that’s here to save you so you can save yourself?”

“You said they’re here to save us? How do you know that! It’s 8000 points! I don’t need to see to realize that it’s a large guild coming in for a high level mission!”

Do these idiots think? Fortunately, the other Lifers were able to think, and understood what Koharu was saying.

“It makes sense but it’s only been 2 days since this happened. If we do it by hour, about 50? To find a prison on top of a mountain in that time?”

They did not know where the summons area is, but they were abnormally quick in finding them. It is as though someone escorted them here.

“I’m sure you remember that my little sister quit the mission 2 days ago?”

“You don’t think!”

The Lifers drew a picture of the situation. If she were to put a force together, it is possible that it would take her 2 days to come back.

“Don’t be stupid! Is your sister that great? Is she part of some great guild or something?”

“I’m Mizuki Koharu. I’m sure you know that Tyrant of Anger is a huge fan of mine..... Do you get the gist of who is outside?”

100 people entered. Though 86 people died, not one of those people did not recognize model Koharu.

“Anger is here!”

“Tyrant Tanaka!” “You think they’ll be happy about it if they came all the way here to save us and we just went back?”

Koharu was pressuring them with power, but her heart was sinking. Kyoko had gone to Tanaka for help in rescuing her.

What will he ask for in exchange? She could guess his sinister intentions.

These Lifers would be benefiting from Kyoko and her sacrifice.

She could not let them go this easily.

She will hang on to them until the mission is handled. Even if she has to use force to do so.

Tang tang!

Chuchuk!

While the Lifers were giving their opinions on the situation, someone knocked on the door. Everyone held their weapons and put their guards up.

# Chapter 63

---

Koharu!

She heard a voice she is familiar with. Koharu carefully went to the door. Beyond the bulletproof window was Kyoko with tears in her eyes.

Koharu opened the door. Her sister had really come to rescue her.

“Koharu!”

“Kyoko!”

They hugged each other. They had only been apart for 2 days, but time was not important. They had thought that they would never get to see each other again.

“Why are you here!”

“What do you mean why! I came to save you!”

“Ahem! Sorry to cut you both off, but where are Anger’s elite?”

“Elite?”

“Hasn’t Tyrant of Anger come to save Ms. Koharu? We’ll help if we can to kill the Slayers.”

Kyoko realized what he is saying. Koharu and the Lifers are mistaken in thinking that the Anger guild is here to save them. They will be surprised if she tells them the truth.

“Tyrant isn’t here! I was going to ask him first, but the heavens helped! Koharu, you know who came to save you?”

“Who is it? I don’t know another guild that would come to help me.”

“Overload!”

“Huh?”

“Pails! Overload came into the mission to save you!”

Koharu’s eyes were full of emotion. She had gone into a mission because she had not received a response. But he had come here to rescue her.

Whispers.

The Lifers could not understand what is going on. Overload came instead of Tyrant? Is that the same person from Life Mission?

What relationship does he have with Koharu? They could not get any information out of the sisters' conversation. They had not even realized that Amhu is next to them.

Tanaka invaded Koharu's private life but did not reveal the fact that she is Amhu. He wants to have the secret to himself.

"Pails killed the large child and is luring the adults and baby away!"

"How many people came?"

"3 people including me! We need to hurry up and help them! They need you!"

Koharu thought that it is like Cha Jun Sung. He does not like for things to be cumbersome, so he does not use his influence. Nothing is still impossible for him.

"Wh, what? 3 people?"

"Since you're here, you're saying that 2 people are holding the Slayers?"

The Lifers looked shocked. Killing the large child is impressive. But what are they going to do about the adults? It will be difficult with these members.



“The female Slayer is wounded as well! Only the male is healthy!”

If they can lure the Slayers away, they may not be able to complete the mission but they would be able to quit. They just need to help out a little.

“Bring me to them!”

“Okay!”

Koharu hesitated as she was leaving. The Lifers are not moving. They did not move at all as if their feet are nailed down to the ground.

“You’re not going?”

“Including the 2 people outside, we’re just 16 people! Those guys killed 86 of us!”

“Going out is basically suicide!”

“You can go help him!”

Koharu’s expression became dreary. Cha Jun Sung came to save her, but they were being rescued as well. Had they forgotten?

“If they hadn’t lured the Slayers away, we would still be trapped without being able to quit the mission. Is that how you take someone’s grace?”

“That, we’re thankful for that but they came in to rescue Koharu in the first place!”

“Then that means you should stay here since he only came to save me?”

The Lifers shut their mouths. They know that they are indebted to Cha Jun Sung but it does not feel right to go out and help. It is a selfish instinct.

“Who will help?”

“Me.”

“I’ll go as well.”

“I can’t live with a debt.”

3 people willingly volunteered. The other 9 put their heads down and avoided Koharu’s eyes.

“I’ll keep your names and helper names in mind. I hope I never see you in a mission again. I won’t leave you alone.”

Koharu is certain in the ties she makes and cuts. She treats her people well but shows no mercy to her enemies.

There is a reason why she is called Amhu. There is a reason for everything.

“Let’s go.”

Papat!

The 5 Lifers including the sisters, left the facility. The remaining 9 people were ashamed, but showed happiness at having survived.

Boom!

“What’s that sound?”

“How should I know?”

“Let’s just request to quit. I’m going to go back and catch up on sleep.”

They could hear a heavy object fall down, but the 9 people ignored it. They had not returned yet because they were caught up in the conversation. They just want to hurry up and get back.

A Lifer who was going to request to quit, unintentionally turned

his head. There are times when people get the strange feeling that someone is looking at them.

“Ack!”

“Slayer!”

As his throat was slit, blood poured out. The Lifers were stunned and took steps backwards. The female Slayer entered the facility.

It had followed Cha Jun Sung, but realized that it needs more nutrients because of its broken blade. The male went anyway, so they will be dead.

Hunting as it wandered around had not been feasible because it was in bad condition.

It decided to catch and eat the prey locked up in the facility. The security is normally thorough, so it is difficult to get inside.

However, it is now wide open. On its way here, it had seen 5 prey leaving. It was going to kill them, but left them alone.

There is a fairly strong female amongst them. If they fight, its wound will get worse. Why would it leave the weak prey and go for the strong ones?

“Shoot it!”

“Die!”

Tutututu!

Papat!

The female’s wide and thick blade protected its upper and lower body while it was waved around the inside of the facility. It was so fast that the shape was faded.

The bullets could not hit the target. Even if they hit, they were blocked by the blade.

The surprised Lifers kept firing their guns. The facility is narrow. Since they are shooting in a place like that, it is inevitable that they hit allies.

Their limbs were cut off and their guts spilled out. The tranquil room had become a slaughterhouse. The Lifers’ dreams of going back came crashing down.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk had the invisibility screen over them and did not even breathe.

They used the odorless spray but it only gets rid of the smell. If they want to deceive all of the Slayers' senses, they need to be careful with their breath as well. They spared their conversation too.

If they whisper, the sound of their speech will go out. They refrained from PDA chatting. They needed to avoid even grazing their bodies. They need to stay still as if they are corpses.

Kung!

The male is waving his blades around randomly from a distance about 10m away.

A tree that both of a person's arms can wrap around, was cut through. It is a monster with incredible cutting force that makes them speechless.

‘It is much stronger than the Spectre.’

It is stronger than the female Spectre. It repelled an unexploded bomb.

An explosive bomb really is slower than a bullet. There is still no

reason for it to be easy to reflect the bomb. The female's ability to deflect the bomb was half luck.

However, it is proof that the Slayer's reflexes are outstanding.

It is as though it hit a fly that was flying around in its face. In the case of a human, there would be no luck and he would have died as soon as the bomb was shot at him.

'This mission has become 8000 points because of the male. The culprit is him!'

It looks large even from afar, but it looks to be about 3.5m up close. In that state, it could fight with a level 4.

The only disadvantage that the Slayer has is its stamina. If they sustain that, all of their specifications are similar.

'It's good the female went back.'

The male sniffed around and changed its direction to go back down to the prison. It is a language that they cannot understand. It is good if they can reduce the numbers that they need to fight.

This is Cha Jun Sung's misunderstanding. The female is out of the picture, but there is no answer. The male has the strength of 2 Spectres by itself.

If he hits that blade with the Wolf Kill, he could cut it but his arm would be destroyed at the impact. The strength of a weapon and arm are completely different.

The male could not find Cha Jun Sung and hollered loudly. It did not see, smell, or hear him. Among mutants, there are those that identify heartbeat sounds.

Slayers are on the side of having better hearing, but it is not good enough for that.

The male that was looking for Cha Jun Sung pricked his ears. It could hear something from the bottom of the mountain. There was still no smell, but he could hear it.

The male took the baby and went to the top of a tree. It is to check the identity.

She got a view and looked down. There is prey looking up at the mountain from a wide opening. Cha Jun Sung thought, 'Why is he doing that?'

Koharu and her group wanted to go up the mountain, but there are bushes everywhere. They hesitate because it is an unfavorable environment. It is perfect for the Slayers to ambush them.

If they fight, an open space is perfect. They would not suffer a surprise attack.



The male considered going down. It could tell by instinct. Those people are not the ones that killed the child. But they are of the same class.

His consideration did not go for very long. This is a sinister place where the large child died. It would need to organize the situation here and move its location to the original place where it was quiet.

# Chapter 64

---

-[Pails?]

Kyoko radioed in a few times but there was no response from Cha Jun Sung. The radio function on the PDA is delivered through the helmet, so there is no need to worry that it leaks out.

He needs to speak in order to respond, but he could be detected by the male. He can hear it. It is just a situation where he cannot respond.

“There’s no response.”

“It’s okay. He won’t be able to respond because the Slayer is nearby.”

If they had started battling in the mountains, they would have heard noise. This quiet atmosphere would not have lasted. It seems they are hiding.

The sisters and the Lifers assigned each person a direction to create a lookout for where the Slayers might come from. They are prone to surprise attacks. They need to stay alert.

Their view is clear, so they can prepare for any approaching danger.

They will be strengthened if they combine with Cha Jun Sung, but they do not have the nerve to enter. Nature is an unfriendly environment for people who are used to civilization.

A massive body weighing hundreds of kg is stepping on the ground. The heavy footsteps make noise. The Lifers all looked to one direction.

Their mouths go dry. They could see the male clearly. They are about 60 to 70m apart, and it does not come any closer.

The male drew a circle around the Lifers. It seems to be calculating something in its head.

“It’s measuring the distance.”

“Distance?”

“Since it followed the force, it’ll have seen a lot of guns and know what it’s like!”

The Slayer’s intellect is that of an elementary school student’s. A bullet goes through trees, rocks, and the ground. It makes anything in its radius a mess.

It understands that it cannot get hit. It cannot see the bullet, but it has the ability to detect the direction of the muzzle.

Slayer is more about the body, so it is the type that wins with speed rather than strength.

The male was going around in circles and stopped moving with its back to the prison.

“Our place to retreat is blocked.”

“The Slayer in the front, mountains in the back? Is it trying to stifle us?”

The prison is blocked. If they are pushed back in battle, the only place they can go is the mountains. The moment they go in, it is the male’s world. It had thrown them far out.

Another change happened. It is an unwelcome change for the Lifers.

The female walks out of the prison, covered in blood. On its blade is a Lifer from the prison.

“Save..... Me.”

The Lifer struggled to put his hand out. Unfortunately, they cannot take the hand.

Chills ran down the spine of Lifers who followed Koharu. It is a

terrible situation as it is, but they would have already been dead if they had remained in the facility.

The blade came out. The Lifer's eyes rolled back as he went lifeless.

The female recovered its ability to fight after eating meat and regaining the nutrients it had lost. It had gone back to its original state.

The only weapons they can trust are their guns. The male went farther away in order to avoid the bullets. It is a distance at which they can guard themselves from the Lifers.

It is impossible to take on both adults between 5 people. They cannot expect to live. Even Kyoko and Koharu who had gone through the 2nd stage of body modifications cannot last more than a few minutes.

The sisters' physical ability is half that of Cha Jun Sung. Aspects like their muscles, bone structure, height, and weight are significantly inferior to that of men. It is a woman's limit.

Their abilities were proportionately converted in the virtual version, so men and women were equal. But this is reality. There is a difference.

There is no need to think of it being unfair. Just as mutants and humans are different, men and women are different. Women

cannot catch up to men in regards to their bodies.

The female speaks to the male. The male looks from the Lifers to the mountains. Then it protected its vital spots with both of its blades.

An object came flying from a distance to go through the large child, and broke the female's blade. They relayed this to each other in their own language.

The baby that was hiding in the trees, could not endure the frustration and came down. The young ones never listen to their parents.

“Shoot that one first!”

A Lifer looking in the direction of the baby, held his gun. They cannot avoid battle. Then they will have to kill the baby and reduce their numbers.

When the Lifer was about to shoot the baby, the male ran towards it as though flying, while the female went at the Lifers.

The male covered the front of the baby and raised its blades diagonally.

The bullets bounced off the blade and started flinging out. It is an awkward angle to shoot at, so they only left a few scrapes. They were just letting the powerful attack flow past.

The baby listened to the male and ran away to the prison. The male blocked its back so it would not be attacked. The baby needs to go away so they can properly fight.

The female's blade scratches the surface. Their skin rips and scars form if they are hit. Koharu, Kyoko, and the shooting Lifers rolled on the floor.

It is not an attack that they can easily avoid. They cannot even see the swinging blade. If they feel like it is coming, they need to throw their bodies out of the way.

It is trying to rip them apart. The purpose is to reduce their fire power.

If it focuses on 1 person, he or she would be easy to kill. But that means that the other Lifers would have room to act, making it possible to be attacked.

Mutants do not lay out a great scheme to fight. They are born with an instinct to fight that humans do not have.

Koharu avoided the blade and cut through the female's thigh with her twin daggers.

A slight trace – weapons like daggers cannot leave much of a wound because of its thick flesh and muscles.

The female paid more attention to the powerful Koharu than it did to the other Lifers.

It is sleek and tricky. The blades aim for her neck. As they grew close, she put her head down to avoid them. A piece of her hair was cut and fell to the floor.

The male escaped the shower of bullets and went to help the female. Since they have scattered the prey, they just have to go and catch them.

Papat!

Pew pew!

The male ran away before reaching the Lifers when it received a signal of danger. A bullet came from the direction it was going to move in.

It came from the mountains. Park Jin Hyuk's fire support. The Slayers were wary of the mountains. They will not fall to the same trap twice.

Pew!

Papat!

A few more shots fired, but the male put more distance between



the mountain and itself to identify the direction of the bullets. It only needs 0.1 seconds to react.

“It’s a scam. How does it get out of the way?”

“It’s not looking to avoid the shots. It knows that it’s the target, so it’s moving its body to avoid the flow. It’s like a reflex.”

That is also why it is putting more distance. If it is close, it cannot react. It gets hit before it can. It needs to maintain the minimum distance in order to respond.

“Keep shooting?”

“It can’t attack the Lifers because you’re supporting them. If we weren’t here, I’m sure they would have been ripped apart already.”

It is difficult to detect the Slayer’s movement with the inferior senses of humans. People would die without knowing where the attack was coming from.

Cha Jun Sung put the Wolf Kill to his hand. Park Jin Hyuk is enough for the diversion. With the greatest amount of power, he must go out and work his body.

“Let’s just make them go back.”

It is important to show that they are not easy prey. Even if they

cannot kill the Slayers, they could quit the mission.

# Chapter 65

---

“Hurry up and go rescue them.”

“I was going to go.”

Cha Jun Sung ran down the mountain. The slope is steep, but he ran as though on flat ground. His lower body strength can take the shock.

He landed on the ground and went at the male with the Wolf Kill. The vibration function was on and it caught solid.

“Hey!”

He held the Wolf Kill with both of his hands and twisted his body to swing it. There is screaming in the wind. The male blocked it with its blades.

About  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the blade cut off as it collided with the Wolf Kill, and blood poured out. The Wolf Kill stopped in the middle due to a lack of power, but it kept cutting because of the vibration.

The male did not take the Wolf Kill out, and lifted its blade the way it was. Cha Jun Sung's body lifted into the air and struck out in that state.

“Huk!”

Pat!

Cha Jun Sung let go of the Wolf Kill and tumbled to the floor. Fortunately, the Wolf Kill had come out and fallen as well with the force.

“Pails!”

“It’s been a while.”

When Koharu approached, Cha Jun Sung greeted her. How long has it been since they had seen each other? The last time was a few months before the virtual version was halted, so it must be about 9 months.

A bubble formed on the male’s blade as it had for the female, to heal its wound.

It ripped and ate the Lifer that the female had killed. The female may not have brought him for this purpose, but he had come in to good use.

“Is that a weapon with vibrating function?”

“Yes.”

“Of course! I thought Pails would be ahead of the rankers!”

Koharu had given all of the points to Kyoko while going through missions, so she had not gathered enough to buy a vibrating blade.

On the other hand, a medic like Kyoko made it so that she could recover most injuries without going through the briefing room. There is no reason to use points on treatment.

As she does not fall too short on points, she will be able to buy a vibrating weapon soon if she works on missions diligently. To use her twin daggers, she needs 2 of everything.

Pew!

The male fell back when he was about to attack Cha Jun Sung. It was due to Park Jin Hyuk's timely defense. Since he shot from far away, it must be very annoyed.

But what could he do? He did not want to go into the Slayer's stomach.

"You three there. If we put a sniper on you, will you be able to take on the female?"

Just by appearances, they can tell that he had gone through the 1st stage of body modifications. They need to distribute the power. He cannot fight the male alone. He must fight it with Koharu.

“We’ll try it.”

-[Jin Hyuk, shoot only the female. Ms. Koharu and I will hold the male.]

-[Roger!]

Park Jin Hyuk turned the muzzle of the gun to the female and shot 1 as a fire risk.

The female ran around. It looked at the mountains and shrieked. The male could pay no mind because it was fighting with the 2 powerful prey.

Should they send the baby? They cannot do that. If the prey on top of the mountain is strong, the baby will be killed.

The female made up its mind. As long as it covers the vital spots, it will not from a few shots.

It will kill the 4 prey, go into the mountains, and kill the rest. If the male kills those 2 before then, the situation becomes even better.

“Oh, it’s coming!”

Tatang!

The female tried to take over the Lifers at a fast speed.

It is faster than a cheetah. Even if they shoot at it, they hit the place it passed. If they could get the shot, it deflected it with its blade. Kyoko also helped the Lifers.

She takes on the fight against Slayers as much as she can. There is nothing to gain from not doing anything.

Pew pew!

Park Jin Hyuk stops the female's approach. Because he is there, it's movement becomes complicated.

On the other side, Cha Jun Sung and Koharu put their strength together to fight the male. Even though they are fighting it from the front and back, it is taking them on. It is even pushing them back.

“We need to chase them away.”

From the way the Slayers are acting, they are so angry that they will not fall back until they get to the conclusion of this fight.

He thought as he fired. It is avoiding all of the shots while pressuring the Lifers. He needs to find its weakness. Weakness..... Weakness? The baby! How do they get to the baby?

He he.

Park Jin Hyuk smiled sneakily and installed an explosive bomb in the Head Hunter. He took dozens of explosive bombs from the space compression bag and placed them next to him.

“I’ll make the prison collapse. Let’s see if you guys don’t leave and stick it out.”

It is as powerful as a grenade. He will need to take the outer wall down bit by bit.

He cannot kill the baby. If he does that, it is obvious that they will go crazy. He needs to make them feel the danger. ‘If you don’t go, your adorable baby will die.’

“Am I a genius?”

Pang!

The first shot is fired. This action is the starting point of extreme fear for the opponent as well as a way to let them know that there is a new system.

Pang!

The female Slayer was more surprised than the Lifers were by the deafening noise of the explosive bomb.



It could avoid the blast somehow, but it could feel the danger in its body. It had been surprised when the object flung into the air had exploded.

Judging from the tremor in the air, it would die if hit without protection.

The female yelled to warn the male, and put as much distance between itself and the Lifers as quickly as it could. If the Lifers come at it, it could just move to avoid them.

However, the attack did not come to the male and female. This series of events had occurred within seconds, and the explosive bombs were going off in a strange place.

Bang!

Pung pung!

The prison entrance exploded. The following bomb blew up a place where the baby could come out of. The female realized its prey's intentions.

Kiak!

The baby is howling. It is looking for its parents, saying it is scared and asking where they are.

# Volume 3

# Chapter 66

---

Bang bang!

Explosive bombs came flying without an end. Park Jin Hyuk created a scenario in his mind. The baby is easily scared. If it feels threatened, it will try to run away.

But if running away is not feasible? Then it will likely withdraw. He will aim at the entrance a few times and show that it is dangerous.

Since it could go out through the window as it had done before, he will destroy the prison wall.

There is more space for it to run away if the walls come down, but it will already be after the scared baby is deeply convinced of the danger.

He once saw an experiment done on animals on TV. He is applying it to mutants. If it works, it is a success. If it fails, he can keep doing what he was doing before.

His scheme worked. The baby hid in the corner, shaking in fear.

An adult would have seen right through the sleazy tricks, but even a newborn tiger is indistinguishable between a tiger and a cat.

Kung!

The male was taken aback and tried to go to the baby. Cha Jun Sung and Koharu stuck to it. The Lifers also blocked the female's actions to try to rescue the baby.

Keureung!

Kung!

The female roared and took action. It is only up to here. It wants the Lifers to go where they please, just leave the family alone.

There are various and complicated reasons mixed in. Cha Jun Sung and the Lifers gathered to one place. The Slayers were showing signs of retreat.

The male cleared the debris, went into the prison, and brought the baby out.

It shook so much its muscles flapped. It is not a fitting appearance, but it is still a baby. As soon as it saw its parents, it stuck to them and would not separate.

The female took the baby and went to the mountain on the opposite side. The male kept awareness of Cha Jun Sung's group and followed. As the distance between them grew, the alarm sounded.

[The Slayers are giving up on battle in order to ensure the baby's safety. It is possible to quit the mission. Please halt your attack and wait.]

A helper mediated the fight and urged quitting the mission. The Lifers could not fight and win against the Slayers.

Park Jin Hyuk heard the alarm, stopped shooting, and observed the Slayers. It is impossible to communicate with them. They must not let down their guards until the very end.

Papat!

Sure enough, the male showed unexpected behavior. It suddenly changed its course and ran in the direction of the prison. Cha Jun Sung's group misunderstood it as an attack.

Pung!

Park Jin Hyuk had been watching all of this, and launched his last explosive bomb. If he aims to hit it, it will just avoid the shot. He aimed where he thought it would move.

Park Jin Hyuk had made a big mistake. He should have left the male alone.

Animals are different from humans in that once they make up their minds, they follow them foolishly.

Mutants are similar to animals in that sense. They are not all like that, but Slayers do not change their minds for the most part.

The baby's life is at risk. If it had decided to retreat, it would have retreated. The male had gone back to the prison because it wanted to retrieve the body of the older child.

But Park Jin Hyuk had fired an explosive bomb. It can understand up to here. It is normal for weak prey to try to defend itself.

The explosion came with a multitude of fragments and dust.

The male was resentful, but looked past it. The wounds from fragments embedded in its skin would heal in a few hours. More important is the body of the older child.

The dust cleared up. The male thought something was wrong with his sight. The body of the older child had been intact, but was now a mess like the meat it used to eat.

The last bomb that Park Jin Hyuk set off had taken half of the body and the rest was splattered on the prison wall.

Kung!

The angry male goes in a craze. It acts like a person who does not

know what to do. It even starts drooling as it glares at Cha Jun Sung and the Lifers.

-[Warning!]

-[The male Slayer's A virus has passed the limit.]

When the Lifers heard the helper's alarm, the male had a strange feeling as though being cut off from consciousness. It is like its sanity is disappearing.

It's skin ripped to sprout new skin. The scratches and wounds Cha Jun Sung had given it, all healed.

3.5m body blew up to almost 5m. A new body is configured to fit the new size. It is no longer a level 3. It has developed beyond its species.

-[The adult Slayer has developed into a level 4 Destroyer. A special mission has been activated and the compensation has gone from 8000 to 20,000 points.]

-[The points have been increased to 20,000, promoting this to a level D advance mission.]

-[Special missions have been imposed twice. According to Life Mission regulations, an advanced cyborg will be summoned for the Lifers' safety.]

One special mission in conjunction is activated by the fault of the Lifers but the second can be seen as bad luck, so the helpers intervene.

There is no risk of exploiting fear because Lifers' abilities and deliberation are calculated.

-[There are 30 seconds left until the advanced cyborg is summoned. Quit the mission before the adult Slayer evolves into a Destroyer.]

There was chaos. Since Cha Jun Sung had started the reality version, he had never heard so many notices. This is the same for the other Lifers.

“Goodness, level 4!”

“There’s no reason to hang on any longer! We will give up!”

The Lifers requested to quit. Cha Jun Sung and Koharu did not stop them. These Lifers had given their best. They had been as loyal as they had been rescued.

Their breathing becomes rough. The Slayer’s process is bothering the Lifers. It would be pushed back by the Caicus, but their skin crawls.



“Koharu and Kyoko, quit the mission.”

“What are you going to do?”

“I’m going to quit as well of course. I’ll go with my friend, so go back first.”

Cha Jun Sung told them that he would get in contact with them later and decided to meet in another mission. Koharu agreed, took Kyoko’s hand, and requested to quit.

Woong!

When they were disappearing, a gate formed with a resonating sound.

The gate formed near Cha Jun Sung, and a cyborg with a large physique appeared. It looks strong even at first glance.

It resembles the human form and is over 2m large.

-[What are you doing? Why aren’t you quitting?]

“You disappear when I ask for help, and now you’re chirping like a bird?”

-[I am following the rules.]

“Stop nagging and answer my questions. This is an advancing mission, right? Is it considered complete if we kill the Destroyer with the cyborg?”

-[Are you crazy? All I did was summon inferior goods to buy you time.]

-[There is no reason for helpers to perform missions as complete cyborgs in the first place. Stop talking nonsense and quit.]

“Just tell me.”

-[It is considered complete.]

“Great.”

-[What, what is that?]

Odin's words went through Cha Jun Sung's ear and out the other. He will not fight blindly. He needs to check the cyborg's attack power.

# Chapter 67

---

Kung!

A pair of blades are sprouting from the area of the male's armpits. They are shaped for carving.

Woong!

The cyborg looked at Cha Jun Sung. It is artificial intelligence, but it did not interfere regarding quitting the mission. It does not care if he wants to die.

-[Enemy confirmed! External armor reinforced! Closed in mode! Vibrating weapons, buster mounted!]

Zing!

A sturdy metal armor covers the cyborg. Its left and right hands changed into a vibrating weapon and a buster that generates shockwaves.

The level 4 Destroyer looks up toward the top of the mountain. The prey over there is what made it so that he could not even retrieve his older child.

With one jump, it advances dozens of meters. It would arrive at Park Jin Hyuk in a few steps and a few seconds, but they would not

sit back and watch.

The cyborg approached at high speed and launched the buster at the male's side. The male's flesh pushed back at the great shockwave.

Bang!

The ground shook as though a boulder had fallen. The male acted as if it felt nothing, brushed off its side, and got up from the ground.

-[If we kill it, level C opens up.]

-[Since it takes 5 seconds to return, shall we run away if the cyborg gets pushed back? I know because I've played a lot of games, but you need to take it when the opportunity comes.]

Pew!

Park Jin Hyuk held up the Head Hunter. The male sensed movement in the air and blocks it with the blades. The bullet is unable to penetrate the blades and becomes embedded on the surface.

The 3cm blade became twice as thick and is like a steel wall.

The cyborg and male face off. It is completely different from

fighting with Cha Jun Sung. He cannot even participate as it is a complete war of monsters.

He would be killed by even one hit from either of them.

“You said inferior goods?”

There could be defects with the weapons or the cyborg itself. He does not know when it might be disposed of. It is risky to get involved once the cyborg is disadvantaged. He needs to go in now.

-[Kill the female and baby.]

-[You’re going to create an opportunity? I’m aiming at them now anyway.]

The female and baby are puzzled by the male’s change. It must be hard for even a mutant to understand. There is a way to create a huge blow.

-[Kill the female first.]

Puk!

A bullet from the Head Hunter goes through the female’s head. He had always been too late when the Slayers were aware of the bullets. Letting their guard down is the downfall for mutants and humans alike.

Kyak!

Kuh?

The baby is wandering confused. The male's attention goes to the baby. It sees the female fall over. It had lost the female as well as the older child.

Kyak!

Bang!

The cyborg's kick hit the back of the male's knees.

It lost its balance because it had not been paying attention, and fell back. So it would not be able to get up, the cyborg shot a series of shockwaves at its chest with the buster.

“Now!”

Pat!

Cha Jun Sung kicked off from the ground. He remembered what Park Jin Hyuk had said. Once they step into a mission, the possibility is the difference and they are at the crossroads of life and death.

It is wise. They are always risking their lives. To advance farther than others? Then they need to risk more.

What if they quit, go into a force, and perform a 20,000 point advance mission? They need more than 100 people to take on something like the Destroyer.

With the appearance of the advanced cyborg, they had acquired information on the mission and the chance to complete the mission with reinforcements.

[Shoot the baby too!]

Pew!

They do not consider the baby as a powerful force either. It is a weakness with which to distract the male.

Kyak!

The baby follows the female. The male looks devastated. He feels empty. In the course of a day, his entire family has been killed and he is all alone in the world.

Tatatat!

Cha Jun Sung went behind the male fallen on the ground, stepped on its shoulder, and bound it. At the feeling of someone

stepping on its shoulder, the male waved its blade around.

“Ack! Die!”

He avoided the first blade, but the second cut Cha Jun Sung’s right arm off. He clenched his teeth and did not loosen his hold on the Wolf Kill with his left hand.

He can be treated in the briefing room. He cannot quit now after coming all the way here.

Puk!

The Wolf Kill penetrated the male’s head and went through its brains. Cha Jun Sung stuck it in and jumped down. Blood is seeping out. He feels dizzy.

-[Jun Sung!]

Park Jin Hyuk was surprised and came down from the mountain. It is the first injury in their mission.

Kuh!

Bang bang!

The cyborg keeps attacking the male. It will only stop once it



stops breathing.

The male cannot find balance between of the pain in its head and the attacks, and flails. It has incredible vitality as it can move even after having its brain penetrated.

-[You have earned 20,000 points.]

It must be at the top of level 4 mutants because they earned 10 times what they would for a level 3.

-[You have cleared Slayer's Prison with 2 conjunction special missions nested inside. Level C missions and store have been opened.]

Ha ha ha ha!

It is a huge success. Level C missions and store have been opened. As long as they have the points, they can go through the 4th stage of body modifications and purchase the battle shoot.

-[Cha Jun Sung... How could you...]

There is shock in Odin's voice. Rather than the mission completion, he is more surprised by how Cha Jun Sung had risked his life. It is not easy as it means throwing oneself away.

The start was foolhardy, but the end paid off. He is so ecstatic, he

cannot express it. There is nothing he can do if he is called insane, but what can they do?

“Are you okay?”

“Yeah.”

“Ugh! Look at the blood!”

Park Jin Hyuk looked at Cha Jun Sung with admiration. It felt like he could get through arduous adversity as long as it was with Cha Jun Sung.

-[What are you going to do about the cyborg?]

“What about it?”

-[It is inferior goods that was sent to you to buy you time. Since it isn't worth recovering, it is disposable. It is also out of energy, so it's no longer of use to us.]

“I can keep it?”

-[That's what I'm telling you to do. We didn't know it would end like this.]

“Thanks.”

Cha Jun Sung touched the cyborg. It stopped when its target died.

[Were you not scared?]

“Of course I was. It’s terror. How could I not be scared when there’s a monster in front of me?”

He had not expressed it. He faced death several times. But he needs to advance. The day that he does not look up because a wall is high is the day it is all over.

“I’m going.”

-[It was a great play.]

He returned to the briefing room. There are a lot of things he gained in this mission.

# Chapter 68

---

Cha Jun Sung turned his right arm. It healed over 2 days. He had thought that it could be treated like other normal injuries by going into the healing capsule.

“You said it would have taken at least 1 week if I had left my arm there? Whew! How scary!”

2 days is considered fast. It had been a strange feeling when he picked up his arm but fortunately, there had been something he saw before that made him take it with him.

They said treatment was easy because the cut was clean. It was frustrating because he could not move one arm. It consumed several times what it normally took as well.

“Huh! I’ve been looking at it for 2 days straight but I don’t get sick of it. Why is there so much?”

While he was healing, he was lost in looking through the level C mission list and store.

Excluding a part of it, E-D class store is full of items that can be created with modern science. Starting with C class on the other hand, there is a mix of half.

Even the types of weapons exceed professional levels with guns. It is even possible to purchase a panzer, tank, or helicopter.

“There’s nothing easy in any of the missions either. My expectations were exactly right.”

As long as the effort is made in level E, it is possible to go up to level D. This is where the first test comes. He experienced 2 level Ds, but was promoted.

When fighting with something like the Destroyer, how many out of 100 people would survive?

There will be many Lifers who get stuck with level 4 and give up on advancing to level C. It is unnecessary to mention S through B because those are matters of the future.

The range for level C reward points is quite wide, from 10,000 to 2 million. It destroys the point system existing in levels D through E.

He can understand. The Caicus is a level 5. Could he guess what a level 6 is like?

The points do not increase just because of the mutant’s power. Missions become more complicated as the maps span more distance and there are more variables.

As the difficulty grows, it becomes harder for Lifers to advance. They need to pass this to go higher.

If D is a test, C will be a wall of despair.

“Now there are such things called achievement points.”

It is a system that did not exist in D and E. These achievement points are needed to purchase items from the class C store. But not all items require this.

Categories that are considered absolutely necessary to Lifers ask for a certain amount. It is a way to estimate the standard of activity in a mission.

If mediocre Lifers somehow make it to level C by hopping on the backs of others, they cannot purchase items even if they have a lot of points.

It is the helpers' early measures of blocking out indiscriminate promotions. Could killing mutants be the only way to earn achievement points?

The main method is to kill them, but the process is just as important. Did they kill it alone, was it with other people, did they just get help without putting in any effort of their own?

It is calculated in real-time by the helper that follows each Lifer. Levels C and D are the limits for bus Lifers, and level C is really half and half.

This makes no difference to talented Lifers like Cha Jun Sung.

The points will come in if they keep fighting as they had been.

“..... I’m losing motivation looking at this.”

Click!

Cha Jun Sung looked at an item on the hologram with fascination. Then he saw the points to purchase it and quickly became depressed.

-[Basic Type Battle Shoot: 10,000,000 points.]

-[Description: As the basic model of the battle shoot, it uses the helper’s artificial intelligence to create the best combat experience and attack power. Upgrades vary widely according to the style.]

“Ho ho!”

He could not help laughing. He was in a state of disbelief. Goodness! It is not 1 million, but 10 million points!

It would take several years to gather that much even if he earned thousands of points every day.

-[It is possible if you complete a 5000 point level D mission 140 times.]

Odin suddenly started talking. He says 140, but this is not made to buy. It means they do not mean to sell it. That is right. It is an ornament.

The number of mutants that appear changes according to the reward points. Calculated on standards of the Biology Institute, there could be over 70,000 points if handled alone.

“You guys have no conscience. Do you even want to sell the battle shoot?”

-[Tsk tsk! Do you even know what kind of item that is? If you go through the 4th stage of body modifications and have the battle shoot, you could take 20,000 points all by yourself.]

“How many points do you give me if I earn 20,000 points! You won’t give much.”

-[We give 400,000 to 450,000.]

That is a lot. If he gets 450,000 in one mission, it will be quick to save millions. But what good is that? That is possible on the grounds that he has the battle shoot.

“I guess the only thing that is of comfort is the body modification.”

Zing!



The store window changes. It goes from the battle shoot to body modification.

-[Body Modification, 3rd Stage, 100%: 400,000 points]

-[Body Modification, 4th Stage, 100%: 800,000 points]

-[It would be difficult to find level 4 with the 4th stage, but 3rd stage is enough. It will suffice for missions under 10,000.]

He needs 1.2 million points total. At this rate, he will not be able to escape the sea of points. But this is nothing compared to the battle shoot.

“Let’s go to the briefing room to take care of the junk you were about to dispose of.”

-[It will become useful if you just invest the points into it. Exert yourself more.]

“Alright alright. Send me.”

Woong!

The image Cha Jun Sung waving his hand to not be bothered was irksome.

# Chapter 69

---

Cha Jun Sung looked over the cyborg he had left in the briefing room. It looks fine on the outside, but its energy core has run out and cannot act.

The defects are on the good side. To compare it to a car? Its windows and bumper have been broken and its bodywork is dented, but there is no problem with its ability to run.

The internal defects are the serious ones. If the main parts including the engine are dysfunctional, it will be hard to fix and it would cost too much to replace the parts.

That is the state of the cyborg. Parts like the framework and metal armor are external matters that can be fixed immediately with an investment of a small amount of points.

The engine core, which acts as the heart, burned during battle with the Destroyer. It was more difficult to find parts that were intact rather than looking for the parts to fix.

“I did take it because it was free, but this is too much.”

-[It is cheaper to switch out a few parts than to purchase the finished product.]

“Is this just a few parts? I have to completely grind this thing out. I would’ve focused on body modification if you hadn’t given this

thing to me, but it keeps catching my eye!”

Although it was short, he had clearly seen the advanced cyborg’s ability to fight.

It has the ability to go into hand-to-hand combat and battle a level 4 Destroyer. If he can just fix this cyborg, there could not be a better companion.

-[Power Type Advanced Cyborg: 5,000,000 points]

-[Description: Tanker type cyborg configured of C class parts. With 30 times the strength of humans and a sturdy outer armor, it matches up against enemies without weakness.]

It may seem like a windfall just by looking at the point value, but the reality is not as bright.

Excluding a few parts, the rest would have to be replaced or repaired. Cha Jun Sung has 80,000 points. This will fall short by a lot.

The urgent part is the energy core. Without it, it cannot operate at all. He could manage somehow without the other parts, but the energy core would need to be replaced immediately.

“How am I supposed to buy something that costs 2 million points?”

-[Even if you can't buy a C class energy core, there is a way to quickly resolve it for now.]

“What is it?”

Cha Jun Sung is alert. The cyborg would be able to take on 100 alone. He did keep complaining, but he really did want to use it.

-[Temporarily take the energy core from the Wolf Kill and attach it to the cyborg.]

“This?”

Cha Jun Sung took the Wolf Kill out of his space compression bag. Dissect this?

“Won't it get messed up?”

-[You are just taking out the energy core. You can attach it again at any time.]

-[The output might be a little weak because it is D class but if you just make sure to check its arms well, it has the ability to take on 2 level 3 mutants.]

“It's tempting.”

With the cyborg next to him, it would be helpful in earning points and it would be reassuring.

The points that the cyborg earns goes to the owner. Achievement points come in as well, but a lot of points are taken off because the owner did not catch the mutant himself.

-[Most of the machinery in vibrating weapons and cyborg parts overlap.]

“So to put it simply, if we dismantle the Wolf Kill, we can make the cyborg run?”

-[Are you trying to get it for free? You also have to use the 80,000 points you’ve gathered.]

“Then how many times can it run?”

-[Calculating output rate..... Calculation complete. It is different according to the mission’s difficulty level. 5 times for 3000 points, 2 times for 5000 points.]

“Hey! The Wolf Kill is 450,000 points but we won’t make much by going in twice!”

-[You can charge the energy core as you do with a vibrating weapon. Even if it takes points, it’s just a few thousand. It comes

out to be cheap if you think about what you will earn.]

“Aha!”

Cha Jun Sung shouted in understanding. He has charged the Wolf Kill before and after using it once, it only took a few hundred points to recharge.

“Do I have a choice?”

He is desperate for an ally. For efficiency, it is better to repeatedly complete level E 3000 point missions. Level D 5000 points is not bad either.

But he does not feel like joining a force and it is impossible to get through a level D alone. The cyborg will be more helpful than the Wolf Kill.

He is sure because he has already seen its ability to fight. It would be dominant in levels E and D.

“Fix it.”

-[Alright.]

“It really won’t get messed up, right?”

Odin is not answering again. He went into the lab with the Wolf Kill and cyborg. He bought 80,000 points worth of parts on his PDA.

He is told it will take a few days. He put the shell of a Wolf Kill in the cyborg's hand. It needs something to fight with, doesn't it?

“It's my new one.”

Cha Jun Sung held the katana he used in the beginning. Until he earns the points he needs, he'll let the cyborg lead. He will not just stand back and be helped.

He will use it at a line where he does not lose his senses. It is not good to be excessive.

\*\*\*

-[With the Wolf Kill's energy core as the cyborg's power source, a few parts, and a deduction of 80,000 points, its basic battle power has been restored.]

-[We eliminated its weapon changing function and unified the attack mode. It has been adjusted to obey only orders from

artificial intelligence and is in a state where it has lost itself.]

-[The only equipment it possesses is the Wolf Kill shell, metal armor, and strong outer shell, but this makes it possible for it to battle one-on-one with level 3.]

-[Predictions for completion are 1 day for 3000 points and 5 days for 5000 points. Keep in mind that it can be dangerous to leave the battle up to the cyborg.]

-[Charging the minimum to maximum takes 4000 points.]

Cha Jun Sung listened to Odin's explanation and nodded with satisfaction.

“You're giving me predictions for completion and warning me about the dangers. Are you really Odin?”

-[Cha Jun Sung, you opened level C missions and have met certain conditions. You are able to receive more useful information from your helper than other Lifers can.]

“So you mean that as I go higher, you can share more of what you know?”

-[That is right.]

If he goes all the way to level S, it looks like he will get to know



all of the secrets of Life Mission.

“I guess I’ll get to know over time.”

Letting the cyborg lead, he will gather the points to go through body modification and to fix it. After, he will arm it and they will aim for the battle shoot.

Other than that, if he is to get everything he is thinking of including an expansion for the space compression bag, he needs about 20 million points.

It is not an amount to settle short term. It will be a long distance race.

# Chapter 70

---

In the few days that he left the cyborg for repair, he got 2 appointments. Koharu and Kyoko, and Ghost Gun Lim Si Hyun. He will be meeting the sisters soon.

He has gone into a 3000 point mission to test the cyborg. Park Jin Hyuk will be coming in as well. The time is coming for them to become a 4-person party.

They had not spoken after quitting the mission, so there will be a lot that they are wondering about. He was to meet with Lim Si Hyun the week after the next. There are 12 days left.

Han Chang Jin will also be coming out then. He will need to hear what Lim Si Hyun has to say, but his image is not bad. He can tell that the man is upright.

Lim Si Hyun had been active in North America as well, so they were in parties together and they had come face-to-face a few times, but he had never seen Han Chang Jin because he is in South America.

There are 13 of the 36 rankers that Cha Jun Sung has never seen before. Han Chang Jin is among those. That is how wide the continent is.

If they do not look for each other, it is harder than looking for a needle in a haystack. Whatever it is, he will be able to hear what Han Chang Jin is thinking when they meet in person.

“I’ll leave it to you.”

Cha Jun Sung shook off his thoughts and pat the cyborg’s shoulder. There is no reaction. Its artificial intelligence has been minimized.

Communication is done by inputting a few commands in adjustment. This was also barely settled with a part from the Wolf Kill and 80,000 points.

Woong!

Since they entered as soon as they formed the party, Cha Jun Sung’s summon was the fastest. How many minutes had passed? Koharu, Kyoko, and Park Jin Hyuk came in.

“Pails!”

“Welcome, Koharu, Kyoko.”

“Hello!”

The situation in Slayer’s Prison had not allowed them to properly meet.

“Female party members!”

Park Jin Hyuk smiles widely. It is such a dumb laugh that the sisters join in laughing as well. They know that it is out of pure intentions.

“Is that the cyborg you fixed?”

“My Wolf Kill is inside of that, so it’s been dismantled part by part.”

Park Jin Hyuk circled the cyborg and examined it carefully. If the metal armor is taken out of account, it is basically a pro-wrestler.

“How about its ability to fight?”

“It’s output of power falls short with its current state, so it’s similar to 1 or 2 level 3 mutants.”

1 strong one and 2 weak ones. The negative is that even though it is an advanced cyborg, the quality of the parts is low and it can only give an intermediate performance.

They have to be thankful if it even does that. Even a middle class goes for 1.5 million.

Cyborgs below levels 1 and 2 in power are more helpful in everyday life than they are in battle, and they are a waste of points. It would be better to buy weapons instead.

“If we ride this bus, I think we’ll gather points easily. There’s less danger too.”

Park Jin Hyuk is right, but they need to pay attention to achievement points too. If they raised all the points they need and fall short of achievement points, they are at a dead end.

“Pails, what are achievement points? And what’s this cyborg?”

Koharu intervened in the conversation. She and Kyoko quit and left the mission before the cyborg was summoned. They do not know anything about it.

Cha Jun Sung explained it. The women were told what happened after they left the mission as well as what achievement points are.

Cha Jun Sung did not leave out anything regarding the cyborg, level C mission, or store either.

“It was too dangerous! Why didn’t you let us participate?”

“Because it isn’t my life. I can’t ask others to risk their lives. That kid doesn’t matter because he isn’t scared of anything.”

Park Jin Hyuk smiled proudly and put up a V with his fingers.

He was far from the Destroyer, so he would have had time to quit

the mission in the worst case scenario.

“It’s a pity.”

“Since we’re a fixed party now, we’ll give a lot of help. Don’t regret it too much.”

It would become busy because they need to practice working together. Koharu asked everything she did not know about level C missions. Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk took care of a sister each.

The men did not act bothered by it. The women became surprised as they heard more. It was a new world.

“Question! What do I do? I can’t fight.”

“It’s okay.”

Kyoko is a medic. She cannot earn achievement points by killing mutants. Her mission is to follow Lifers around to treat them.

“Apparently at the end of missions, helpers show integrity and give points to medics appropriately. I think the distribution system is different for out of combat jobs than they are for combat work.”

This is what he heard from Odin. The helpers built a balanced system to keep everything fair. They do not miss anything.

“We’ll need to start by seeing the cyborg’s ability. If it is as useful as we think it is, we’ll be able to complete level D missions with these members.”

Whether 4 people can go into level D or not is dependent on the cyborg.

While going into 3000 point missions several times, they need to figure out how to communicate with the cyborg. They will go into level D if they are ready. They cannot ignore the atmosphere either.

“Mutant in the front.”

“Really?”

The cyborg speaks. It is a monotonous and prosaic voice. Its sensor must have captured a mutant. It is not able to detect the numbers of them though.

The cyborg’s battling power is middle class, but everything else is lower.

“Kill all of them.”

“Mission received! Annihilation!”

The cyborg took out the Wolf Kill and ran forward. Cha Jun Sung's group watched and ran after it in a relaxed state.

They wanted to see its skills.

\*\*\*

The cyborg showed force. It is not well armed, so it used its strength to kill the mutants by ripping them apart, crushing them, and twisted them.

Dozens of angry level 1 mutants join in the melee.

Not even attacks from level 2 mutants are able to penetrate its metal armor and outer shell. The cyborg rolled over the mutants and crushed them as if it were a tank.

“What a spectacle.”

“They get stuck at the metal armor.”

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk were not surprised because they had seen the cyborg fight before, but the Koharu sisters showed their shock.

“A fly's going to go into your mouths. That's pretty weak too. It was a few times stronger than this when it was fighting the Destroyer.”



It slaughters the mutants with the Wolf Kill as they approach it. It does not need the vibration function. It can slice them up with the cutting blade and its own strength.

-[You have earned 20 points and 2 achievement points.]

-[You have earned 20 points and 2 achievement points.]

Ring!

Point build up in Cha Jun Sung's PDA. The points only go to the owner of the cyborg that is killing the mutants. They were not distributed to the party members.

No one complained. They had come into this mission to test performance.

"It toys with level E."

"You said that the cyborg doesn't need points, but parts?"

"Right."

"Then I'll buy the parts you need and give them to you."

"Huh?"

“If we help it out, it’ll find its original features quickly.”

They are receiving aid. They would like to make deals with points but since they cannot do that, they are trying to give him parts. If the cyborg becomes stronger, it is beneficial for the party as well.

“We’ll help as well!”

“What do you need?”

# Chapter 71

---

Koharu and Kyoko also said that they would support with parts. If the 4 of them gather together, it will be much faster to get the parts than Cha Jun Sung working alone.

If the cyborg is returned to its original state and is equipped with the best gear, they could even go into a 10,000 point mission. The party can support it.

Cha Jun Sung figured something out while he was going through the Slayer's Prison.

This is something that Lifers have been saying for a while, but earning a high number of achievement points does not always mean that there are a lot of mutants.

The Destroyer's inherent strength brought the points up to 20,000. There were the female and baby as well, but most of the power was from the male.

Normally while playing the game, they fight with the little guys before facing the boss. But this mission skipped the step and went right to the boss.

If they look for missions like that, they can gather a lot of points. If they look through Lifer World, it is evident that these are not rare.

There would be as much danger as well, but they need to bear with it.

“The Biology Institute. You think the mutants will jump out as soon as we open it, right?”

“Yes. They were banging on the door. I don’t know how many were inside, but I think there are a few thousand.”

It was 12,000 points. They can make an attempt as soon as the cyborg is complete. However, there are steps to take and they need to go through the process.

“We can deal with the weapons later but let’s adjust the artificial intelligence and core first, and look at the parts.”

It is better to buy the expensive items first if they are going to buy them. If they purchase the cheaper parts first, they will look at the more expensive parts and think when they will be able to gather enough points.

The human psychology is simple. It is a kind of motivation.

The basics are important in whatever it is. When constructing a building, the ground and framework are the first focus.

They will raise its intellect with artificial intelligence and raise its power with an energy core fitting for an advanced cyborg. Then it will even be able to face off against a level 4 mutant.

“Moderately.”

Riding the bus is good too, but they cannot get into the habit of relying on the cyborg too much. They will invest moderately in the cyborg and invest in themselves.

“With body modifications and the necessary parts alone, it’ll be about 3 million points.”

Park Jin Hyuk’s eyes grew wide at Cha Jun Sung’s complaint. He thought of something incredible. If they do well, it could contribute greatly to gathering points.

“Let’s receive kickbacks of achievement points as well.”

“Kickbacks?”

“We won’t be able to get big parts, but I think it would be okay for small ones.”

No matter how they try to push the points to Cha Jun Sung, it would take months. If they receive bribes like large guilds do, they can reduce the time.

“I don’t really want to do it.”

“Just listen.”

Koharu and Kyoko listened carefully as well. Japanese guilds take bribes from Lifers as well. How is he trying to take them?

While everyone was concentrating on what Park Jin Hyuk was saying, the cyborg was taking on hundreds of mutants alone.

A strange situation was unfolding in the same place.

Click!

Cha Jun Sung opened up his blog again. He accepted Park Jin Hyuk's proposal. Bribes are the best way to gather millions of points within moments.

He opened the blog because he was going to use Overload's fame.

Say that he leaves a message on Lifer World that he is going to create a party with kickbacks. Why would people trust him to apply?

If people ask a large guild, they can complete missions safely. There is a high chance that they will have to give bribes, but that is directly related to the probability of surviving, so people accept it.

If Cha Jun Sung wants to enter the world of bribery, he needs to expect to put in a lot of effort. Since he does not have the time for that, he is going to take a shortcut.

“There’s no point in hiding when people are hacking into the blog to get my personal information anyway.”

He will use his helper’s name and cover his face with a helmet. But what if he is found out anyway? Then he is found out. He needs to be aware of that much danger.

The bulletin is going up. It is regarding the party operated by Overload.

[Hello. Is everyone well? It has been a long time. I am sure there will be people who look at this negatively, but I am thinking of creating a party with kickbacks.] [Kickbacks for reward points is limited to 20% and I will complete a 3000 point mission for you within a day. I promise this in Overload’s name.] [I put all of the details up on the bulletin, so please take a look at it.]

He hit enter. It is guaranteed to be popular. Cha Jun Sung did not think that he himself is great, but Overload is different.

“I’ll figure out my affairs myself. I can’t take from my party members.”

The party members will be acting separately until they gather a certain amount of points. They need to get their gear as well. He will have enough with just the kickbacks.

A herd of Lifers are waiting for a summon gate.

There are 9 people; Lifers who had seen the notice on Overload's blog. They are Cha Jun Sung's customers, passengers on his bus.

There are a few with exotic appearances. They are foreigners. Cha Jun Sung's blog is famous all over the world. It is not limited to Korea.

With that, they have a diverse party to work with.

Does he take just anyone? He focused on level 7 and 8 Lifers of the people who applied on his blog. There were only a couple hundred, but applicants came in.

Like a blog on Life Mission should, it separated Lifers into levels 1 through 9 as mutants are classified. Level 7s are fans who have been dedicated to Life Mission for over 5 years.

It is a pity but he needed to pledge the level 1 through 6 people for next time. There is nothing he can do. Cha Jun Sung was also more comfortable dealing with people who are hospitable to him.

Cha Jun Sung memorized the ID names of all 9 primary applicants. He does not know their faces, but they had communicated actively.

“To see Overload in real life!”

“I'm nervous!”



“It looks like his blog is more important abroad than it is in Korea.”

There are only 3 Korean people and the other 6 are foreigners. 4 level 7s, 5 level 8s; the blog owner is Korean but it is more popular abroad.

The Korean people were speaking and the rest were quiet. There are differences in nationality, but these Lifers are just here to ride the bus and did not even install translators.

They consider it more important to make money by selling points than purchasing gear.

“What do you think Overload’s gear will be like?”

# Chapter 72

---

“Since his main weapon is the sword, don’t you think he’ll definitely have a vibrating weapon?”

He did have one. Until he dismantled it to put it in the cyborg’s stomach.

Woong!

The summons gate opened. Cha Jun Sung is entering. If a party is formed and the members enter a mission, they cannot break up the group or quit.

Is that why? The Lifers did not worry about this aspect.

“Hello. I am Overload. I’m embarrassed to meet you all in real life.”

“Hello!”

When Cha Jun Sung gave his introduction first, the others greeted him.

Awkwardness is the first emotion that Cha Jun Sung feels. For him to be the operator of the bus feels like he is wearing clothes that are not his.

The Lifers look all over Cha Jun Sung's body. What could it be? They are examining his body to take a look at the famous Cha Jun Sung's gear.

They look confused. His gear is mediocre. It is okay, but it is the type that can easily be found among large guild executives.

It does not fit in with what they had imagined and wished for the famous Overload.

‘His gear is.....’

‘Is it because virtual and reality are different?’

‘Maybe his gear isn't much but he wins with control? It'll be possible with Overload.’

They did not express it, but they had negative thoughts. Cha Jun Sung noticed this. He does not care. They will soon be shocked.

The cyborg comes through the summons gate. The Lifers' eyes widened. The members entering the mission are a total of 10 including Cha Jun Sung.

“Huh? 11 people?”

“Overload, no Odin, who is that? Our party is full.”

The summons gate closed. The Lifers were more confused because it came out of the same gate that Cha Jun Sung did. How did 3 of them come from the same place?

“You were disappointed when you saw my gear? Let me give you an introduction. This is my cyborg, Hercules. It’s because I put all of my points into fixing this guy up.”

He had given the cyborg a name. Hercules, half god and half human son of Zeus and Alcmene. It is perfect for something that fights with strength.

“Wow!”

“Cyborg!”

The Lifers made a fuss, thinking ‘Of course! It’s Overload!’ Then they went to Hercules and started touching it.

It feels like steel or a rock. Not even a needle would penetrate it.

“It’ll be a lower cyborg since you opened level D, but will it be helpful?”

One Lifer threw a sharp question. The cyborg sold in level D is of a lower level. Even if it is well armed, it cannot take on more than a few level 2 mutants.

“It is of middle class. I was completing a mission when I was given the opportunity to get it.”

It is too early to say that he went into level C. There are chances of experiencing windfall in a mission, and he made sure to emphasize that point.

It is true that he did pick it up. He had taken something that was going to be disposed of.

“Wow! Middle class?”

“Then the abilities of a middle class?”

“After testing it, it seems to be able to take on a strong level 3 one-on-one.”

The Lifers did not have the energy to be surprised anymore, and their jaws were dropped. They have never seen a level 3 mutant because they are in level E missions. How strong does that mean it is?

A low class cyborg costs 150,000 points. Its efficiency is low compared to the price so even in the virtual version, it is only used as a shield or to carry the owner's gear.

Starting with the middle class however, it has a lot of uses. Its price is incredible as well.

“I guess it’s only sold in the level C store?”

“I guess so since it’s not in level D.”

“400,000 points went into just fixing it. I’m sure it will.”

Cha Jun Sung responded to the Lifers. It is better to release some information rather than trying to hide it all. Word of it will spread anyway while he goes through missions.

“We will go in now.”

“Good!”

The Lifers cheered. The storm surrounding Hercules was tremendous.

“Hercules, go out and kill all mutants within a 1km radius.”

“Mission confirmed!”

Hercules went outside the building. The Lifers did not need to follow. If they hang around safe spots, the mission will be over.

Attainment or escape is difficult for Hercules with its limited artificial intelligence. The order to kill resolves everything.

“I’ve never ridden a bus like this!”

“How could this be! If the cyborg takes care of all of the mutants, there’s nothing for us to do?”

Cha Jun Sung is used to level E missions. If they get past the regular radius, there is the chance for a special mission. They need to decide on a distance and play within it.

“Is there anyone here who is willing to ride the bus long term?”

“How are you going to operate long term?”

“I intend to go periodically once a day at a decided time.”

4 Lifers held up their hands. It is a bother even trying to look for another bus. The other 5 did not speak. They were just going to ride the bus a few times and rest for a while.

There is one reason why he wants fixed passengers. He can buy the cheaper parts with a couple hundred points, but they can go up to a few tens of thousands later.

If Cha Jun Sung takes this on all alone, there is no reason to let other people on his bus.

He could figure out a few tens of thousands, but he will need

external power beyond that. If he is to do that, he needs to find as many long term passengers as he can.

He is thinking of receiving a large part and letting them ride the bus a few times, or letting them ride a few times and then getting the large part. He is estimating that it will take 2 to 3 months to make 3 million.

It is a level E mission now, but if he gets back about half of Hercules' abilities, he will go into level D. The power he is aiming for is that of a weak level 4.

If it is at that level, it can be left out to go kill on its own. The limit of an advanced cyborg is level 4. Even if it is armed well, level 5 is asking for too much.

It could catch it if it self-destructs, but one goes for 5 million points. They need to act according to their own abilities. If they go beyond it, they are at a disadvantage.

“Do you all just ride the bus and not participate in the mission?”

“Because it's dangerous.”

“The points we have after kickbacks come out to the cost of an entire house.”

Hearing their reasoning, most do not have much ambition, are scared of the danger, or have families to take care of. They are the



typical bus Lifers.

Bus Lifers are separated into 2 categories. Those trying to make money, and those trying to advance quickly. There is nothing to be done about the first, but the latter is a misjudgment.

There is a clear difference between advancing with external forces and advancing through effort. Even if the outside is gold, it is all worth nothing if the inside is hollow. It is as bad as not doing anything at all.

-[You have earned 20 points and 2 achievement points.]

The points are coming in. Hercules had started to catch the mutants.

They need to wait a day. The mutants could approach them, so they need to set up booby traps. A few claymores will block all of the passageways.

“Would you like to hear a sermon?”

“Sermon?”

“Shall I say it’s a sermon regarding staying alive in the mission? It should work until you get to level D.”

Hercules will catch the mutants. It is a waste to throw away the

remaining time.

These are people who gave him strength for a long time while he was running the blog. They will go in starting with 300 points. He hopes it becomes a well-slicked foundation for them.

When there is free time, he teaches the Lifers how to survive in the reality version. Official figures say that there have been over 10 million deaths and people are still dying.

Once level C opens up, more people will die. They are on the ride now to make money, but they need to have some basic skills just in case they ever come across a solo mission.

“If you keep this in mind, you’ll reduce the threat of danger and you’ll be able to complete solo missions of low points. Then you won’t need to find a bus.”

“Aren’t you losing customers?”

“That’s right!”

Hah!

Losing customers? He does not care. He will not be operating the bus forever. Once he gathers the basic amount he needs, he will be doing this less and will attack a level C mission.

The Lifers listened up. It is what their idol, Overload, is saying. If they listen, it will all become flesh and blood.

It was only in the virtual but of these people, there is even a Lifer who reached a decent level.

“To survive in a mission.....”

The lecture proceeds.

\*\*\*

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung is pressing buttons on the calculator. He is calculating the points he earned with his bus. He had been expecting it, but the additional income is pretty good.

With the 3000 reward, 30,000 with taking all of the mutants and the 5400 points worth of parts and necessities from the Lifers, he had made close to 40,000.

It is not the exact 600 that he needs for Hercules. There are 540 and 550 as well. He used this for bullets.

If he gathers small parts to manufacture, they become a big part that is necessary to Hercules. He only purchases what cannot be produced.

“At this rate, I’ll fill the 3 million within 3 months. I’m sure it’ll be faster once we cross into level D. If I estimate with more time, I can even get the battle shoot.”

Accepting bribes in level E is 160,000 in 1 month. That’s 500,000 in 3 months. Personal reasons why he cannot go into missions can arise, but the estimate is that much.

It is an amount that cannot be underestimated. He could understand why large guilds go through so much trouble to take points. It does not mean that they are better off than Cha Jun Sung though.

Cha Jun Sung takes everything by himself, but large guilds need to take care of the master, vice master, cadres, and guild members. They leak through as much as they earn.

-[If everything goes favorably, you will be able to finish within the time you allotted.]

“Right?”

-[The thing that holds you back are achievement points. Even though you are the owner of the cyborg, the amount of achievement points you earn are low because you don’t lift a finger.]

Odin is not wrong. The achievement points needed to purchase

items it 20% of the price. If he catches mutants now, he only gets 10%.

If he leaves it the way it is, he could run into trouble at the very end.

“I know.”

-[Do you have a way to resolve it?]

“If I think too much into it, there’s no end. I’m going to use Hercules as a defense for a few months to get gear and go through the 4th stage of body modifications. Then, I’m going to start getting involved too.”

When he dismantled the vibrating function from the Wolf Kill, he had lost the will to fight.

Honestly, he is also tired from working so hard. Since his body will not be deteriorating from taking a break, he is going to rest and start the engine up again later.

-[Do as you please.]

Odin responded bluntly. Cha Jun Sung just went past it. That is his helper. Even if it talks like that, it is because it is worried about him.

“I should go in with my colleagues as a party too sometimes since they’re meaningful people to me.”

The reality version will become a level too high to complete as solo missions as time goes by. Points are important, but there is no point if he does not have a party.

\*\*\*

Today is Friday. As 9 days passed, he ran his bus 10 times. Including the mission he went in with his colleagues, he made about 400,000 points.

It is enough to get him through the 3rd stage of body modifications, but he is falling short in achievement points.

He invested greatly in Hercules. Thanks to this, defects in small aspects of it disappeared. Of course there are still a lot of places to work on in the bigger parts.

Cha Jun Sung will be taking a break from the bus for 1 day tomorrow. He has an important appointment.

It is the day he was supposed to meet with Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin. He is iffy about revealing his face, but they already knew enough about him and he felt like he would need to meet with them at least once.

# Chapter 73

---

The headquarters of Seven Stars was unlike other large guilds and had a strange atmosphere.

This is not in regards to how large or small the building is, or how modern or shabby it is. It is the best guild in Korea. It is much larger and more magnificent than Hocheon's.

Cha Jun Sung looks around him. His eyes move without rest. The people walking through the 1st floor lobby stare at him with interest.

Due to the nature of the guild, a large proportion is made up of celebrities. The master, Lim Si Hyun, was an actor as well.

‘She's pretty.’

Male celebrities do not even catch his eye. Cha Jun Sung focused only on the female celebrities. Normal people do not match up to them.

He is a person too. He cannot help but pay attention when he sees a pretty woman. There is a mix of natural and synthetic beauty.

Since Cha Jun Sung went through body modifications, he can sense even the most minute movement of his muscles. Somehow, the synthetic beauties are unnatural.

“I should go up since I’ve looked around enough.”

Cha Jun Sung is 30 minutes early. He had wanted to get here early to look around with time. Since he saw a lot of female celebrities, he is satisfied.

He walked toward the welcome desk. Lim Si Hyun had told him that he would let the front desk know, so all he would have to do is call up. Then, he would send someone down for him.

“I’m Cha Jun Sung. I have an appointment with the master, Lim Si Hyun.”

“Mr. Cha Jun Sung? Ah!”

The woman at the desk looks through the list. The first person on the list is Cha Jun Sung. It is in a clear color. He must be an important appointment.

“The master told me to escort you myself. I’ll take you up.”

“No, that’s okay.”

“Excuse me?”

“It looks like you’re busy. I’ll go by myself. Just tell me where to go.”



Truthfully, Cha Jun Sung is used to special treatment. When he travels or buys something expensive, the service is bound to follow the amount of money he pays.

However, this is burdensome. There is no such thing as a favor without reason in the world. Even when you give to a beggar on the street, it is because you feel bad for them. He will only take what he needs to.

The employee frowned and then told him where the master's room is. It is at the very top on the 15th floor. As it is not a distance he can walk up, he took the elevator.

“Wait a second!”

Right before the door closed, he saw a delicate woman running toward the elevator through the narrowing opening. Cha Jun Sung pressed the button and opened the doors.

The woman quickly got on the elevator. She steadied her breath and looked at Cha Jun Sung and nodded to him in thanks.

Cha Jun Sung accepted the nod as an expression of gratitude. He can sense a magnetism to her. The shape that her dress takes along the line of her body is amazing.

She does not seem synthetic either. It is proof that she is a natural beauty. The woman was looking at Cha Jun Sung and

thinking the same thing.

‘Where have I seen him?’

‘I’ve seen her before.’

Woong!

The elevator goes up. The woman was about to press the 15th floor when she stopped. It is already pressed. Since he cannot be an employee, he must be here to see Lim Si Hyun.

[15th floor.]

The door opens. Cha Jun Sung was about to get out when he was surprised. Lim Si Hyun was waiting for him. The front desk must have alerted him.

“Ha ha! Are you surprised? I came out because you said that you would go up by yourself.”

“I see.”

“Huh? You were in there too. Give me the report tomorrow. I have an important guest.”

Lim Si Hyun did not wait for her response and took Cha Jun Sung into the master’s room. The woman looked at his back and frowned.

Lim Si Hyun cleared his entire schedule for today saying that he has an appointment.

Is it because of the man who just followed him in? How important could he be that the reports are pushed back and his schedule has been cleared? And the weird thing is that he seems familiar.

The woman stood there for a while. If she has seen him somewhere, she will without a doubt remember him.

A decent face and tall height – they had not met for private reasons, but publicly. Excluding outsiders and thinking of the people who could satisfy those conditions from the past few months?

“Field of Meat!”

Jung Hye Ryung remembered the man who told her that he had completed a level E mission through body modifications while selling items to her.

Thanks to the useful information he gave her as an apology, Seven Stars was able to complete a 3000 point mission with minimal damage.

“Is that right? Alright.”

She called the front desk and asked for the man's name. It is Cha Jun Sung.

She does not have the authority to gain further information. Jung Hye Ryung had turned over to the part 6 master of Seven Stars from the virtual department of Chilsung Group.

It is the chairman's orders to learn guild management while supporting Lim Si Hyun.

“What could they be meeting about?”

Lim Si Hyun's tone was cautious. They could not be meeting to joke around. The master had made the move instead of the vice masters.

She will remain curious until Lim Si Hyun discusses it. If it is important, he will call the vice masters. Until then, she must wait.

\*\*\*

When they entered the master room, Han Chang Jin was already waiting for them.

As soon as he saw Cha Jun Sung, he got up from his seat. It is as difficult to meet him as it is to meet the President.

“I am Han Chang Jin.”

“I am Cha Jun Sung.”

It may have only been in the virtual version, but he had seen Lim Si Hyun several times. This is his first time meeting Han Chang Jin.

‘Is this Iron King?’

The names given to the 36 rankers comes from the abilities of their battle shoots. The basics are the same, but each has their own battle mode according to the conversions they make.

Cha Jun Sung’s special skill is bringing out the power of the over booster, past its limit. It is of the most dangerous abilities in the battle shoot.

Han Chang Jin made modifications for iron defense technology, and Lim Si Hyun created a step called shadow moving.

“The atmosphere is rigid. If someone else saw us, they would think that we were brought together under bad conditions.”

Lim Si Hyun is playing the mediator. As the informant who brought the two together, he is making an effort to make the flow smooth to create conversation.

Cha Jun Sung does not know exactly why he is here. If someone

needs to speak first, it needs to be Han Chang Jin.

Lim Si Hyun knew what was going on, but it is not his position to say it in his stead.

“I was thinking for too long. Sorry. I’ll get to the point.”

Cha Jun Sung listened to Han Chang Jin’s explanation. He will ask questions after. There is information on how the world is going around. The world is moving.

The explanation is long but to summarize, he is asking what he thinks of creating a government sector to take part in Life Mission together.

“Mr. Lim Si Hyun, have you made a decision?”

“I will not join, but I would like to create a cooperative relationship where we help each other when we need it. An alliance would be the correct term.”

Lim Si Hyun is the master of Seven Stars. He knows the strength of a group. If he forms an alliance instead of joining, there is more to earn than lost.

“I will say no to both.”

“Why?”

“I do not want to become a part of something by joining, and I do not have anything to give or take through an alliance.”

An alliance is also joining in some ways. Lim Si Hyun might be used to being in groups because he leads a guild, but Cha Jun Sung felt like something was pushing him down.

With the opening of level C, he has the confidence to get over any hardship and adversity with his party members. He does not want any help that is not natural.

“There’s nothing to give and take? I see it’s the freedom that someone with a middle class cyborg has.”

Lim Si Hyun began to speak. It has been a while since the rumor spread that he owns a cyborg. The bus Lifers had spread it eagerly.

“I won’t deny it. My party members and I can get to level C on our strength alone. Joining you or becoming part of an alliance will actually just become shackles.”

# Chapter 74

---

Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin heard the rumors through their subordinates and confirmed that it is true today. A middle class cyborg is an item that is not in level D.

“I see everyone is rejecting this.”

“Because there’s no merit.”

“Then can you just help us when there is an important mission?”

It is a request separate from joining. The large guilds are preparing to go into 10,000 point missions. This is the same for Seven Stars and the government.

These two groups will combine half of their strength to make an attempt. They decided to do this in a month. They need to reinforce power in order to do this.

“That’s.....”

If they enter a 10,000 mission, they need to rot inside the mission for at least 1 or 2 weeks. Then who will handle the points that need to be gathered during that time?

“I guess the fact that you’re operating a bus means that you are in that much need for points?”



“My Hercules isn’t fine, so there are a ton of parts that I need to buy. And I am falling short on points to buy my own gear with.”

It is true. Cha Jun Sung is struggling in a drought of points. Once he buys a few more parts, it will be time to work on gathering achievement points.

“If you lend us yours, the cyborg’s, and your party’s strength, we will give you all of the points you would need to gather during that time.”

These people? Do they know how many points he earns each time he operates the bus?

“Don’t you make around 40,000 points each day? I guess you fall just short.”

His calculation is fast because he leads a large guild. If the two groups help him, he will save on a lot of the points he needs for Hercules’ parts.

“If you help us, you can get 40,000, as many mutants as you need. We will give you the same treatment and conditions that guild executives are given.”

Lim Si Hyun is saying that he will make it so that he can buy the items he needs all at one time. It is really hard to reject.

If he has 3 level D artificial intelligences and 20,000 points, he can produce level C artificial intelligence. It uses up achievements, but the important thing is completing the large parts.

“If you accept this proposal, we could purchase it for you.”

Cha Jun Sung’s eyes wavered. Do they have more points than they need? The two groups have been operating buses since the very beginning. That has been saved and saved.

Of course tens of thousands of points is burdensome to them as well, but it is an investment for the future.

“Don’t you need to experience a 10,000 point mission anyway?”

Experience? He has done it before. He has done 20,000 points! They will probably not believe him if he says that he fought with a Destroyer. It is a monster that he wants to avoid until Hercules is complete.

‘Should I do it?’

If he stays in a mission for even 1 week, he will get 560,000 points worth of parts.

And large ones at that. If he combines the points that he earns before going in, he might be able to get rid of most of Hercules’ internal defects.

‘Let’s ask.’

He will need to hear what the party members think. He cannot swallow it all by himself. Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin did not rush Cha Jun Sung, and waited for his answer.

“I will discuss it with my party members.”

“If it’s not too much to ask... can we take a look at the cyborg?”

“Sure.”

He pressed the summons button on the PDA. It is so big that it does not even fit in the space compression bag and he does not want to leave it at home, so he is keeping it in the briefing room.

Woong

Every time he summons it, a couple hundred points are deducted. He is showing it to them for free as a service. With this much, it is okay to show it off.

Hercules came out of the summons gate. Because of all the points he poured into it, the inside is a mess but its appearance is shiny.

“Wow! It’s impressive. How on earth did you get this?”

Lim Si Hyun looks on in admiration. Seven Stars went around hundreds and thousands of missions to find missions that they can use, but they had never come across a jackpot.

How many points is a middle class cyborg? It will surpass 1 million. There is more value when they have the points but cannot purchase it.

“Is level 3 the limit like in the virtual version?”

“Since it’s middle class.”

“If you just arm it, it will be able to take on level 4 mutants on its own.”

It is categorized as middle class, but it is higher. It will bring shock if he reveals it, so he will hide it.

If he accepts the proposal and goes into a 10,000 point mission, they will find that out as well. Since he has not accepted it yet, he can think about it then.

\*\*\*

-[I have alerted Overload. Please search mission Black Island.]

A text message came in to Lim Si Hyun. It was right before her patience was running out.

Ice Queen searched Black Island on her PDA. An open room caught her eye. If they enter that, they can meet Overload.

-[Burke.]

-[Speak.]

-[Search Black Island and apply for the party. Overload is there.]

-[Yahoo!]

Boom Busker cheers. He is just as exhausted as Ice Queen. They waited weeks to meet Cha Jun Sung. This is all because of Lim Si Hyun.

‘When I got the contact, I was with Overload. He was extremely uncomfortable when he heard that you had gotten information on him through hacking.’

Ice Queen thought that it was too late for them to join forces now. All she has to do is tell them the results back in America, but first impressions were not good.

‘I will arrange a meeting since you do not have bad intentions. Please wait.’

Lim Si Hyun said that he would create a good atmosphere for them to speak, and asked for them to wait until he got in contact. They did not want to do it, but accepted.

There was no news even as weeks passed by. In America, they were urging for news as well. They were thinking of waiting just one more day, when Lim Si Hyun called.

-[Don’t goad him. Overload does not avoid provocations.]

-[Can’t I try taking him on? There are 8 rankers he brought down. Blood King of PK ranking is included there.]

-[Are you upset that you lost to Blood King? So much that you want to take it out on Overload?]

Boom Busker did not respond immediately. He lost to Blood King. But he wanted to go up against Overload because he had heard that

he had beat Blood King.

Ice Queen closed her eyes. Boom Busker wants to beat Overload who beat Blood King to get satisfaction.

Say he wins against Overload. Does it mean anything? Everyone is just starting out by struggling and crawling through it. At this point, it is pointless to try to see who is stronger.

This is reality. They are not even in the 9th stage of body modifications and they do not have battle shoots. Their weapons are crude as well. They have not filled even 1% of their abilities in the virtual version.

-[Do you have the confidence to beat him when he finds his ability again and freely uses the over booster? Do you think it's a joke that those 8 people lost?]

There is an order to the 36 rankers. Life Mission is not a level game.

It is an advancement system unlike the reality version in various aspects. The 36 rankers are all Lifers who have passed the final promotion. The conditions are the same.

The outcome is decided on control, body modification, and subtle differences in equipment, and 8 of the 14 who came within the top 20 rankings lost to him.

There are 2 people in the top 5 as well. Of those 2, one is Blood King.

-[We came to Korea on official business for America. Forget your personal emotions, or find Blood King and take it out with him.]

-[I can't win in a verbal fight with women.]

Boom Busker threw up a white flag. He had said it half joking, but she had taken it too seriously. If he had said one more thing, it looks like they would have gotten into a fight.

-[Odin accepted the party application. Will you enter?]

-[I will enter. Please get ready.]

-[Yes! Queen.]

Woong!

Ice Queen and Boom Busker's bodies disappeared from the hotel. When they opened their eyes again, they saw Overload leaning against a wall, waiting for them.



# Chapter 75

---

Cha Jun Sung thought about what had happened a few hours ago. It was when his conversation with Han Chang Jin was wrapping up. Lim Si Hyun spoke with a cautious tone.

‘They came from America. I said that I would arrange for you to meet. What do you think?’

Lim Si Hyun suggested meeting with them to tell them what he is thinking because they would go barging into Cha Jun Sung’s house if he had not offered to arrange it.

‘Deny.’

Since the party was formed and he had come into the mission, he would meet with them. It is just that he will turn down the proposal from America no matter what the conditions are. They were already off on the wrong foot in the way they had come looking for him.

He thought of Han Chang Jin’s wary face. He was apprehensive that Cha Jun Sung might go to America. That is how great the conditions would be.

Woong!

A summons gate formed in front of Cha Jun Sung. He left his

thoughts.

He has seen Ice Queen before, and this is the first time he is meeting Boom Busker. He does not have an evil inclination like Blood King, but the rumors are not good.

Let's be careful. Unpredictable people are more dangerous than the bad people. It is because you cannot predict what they are thinking.

“Overload?”

“It's been a year, Ice Queen.”

With a tone of confirmation, Cha Jun Sung took his helmet off. His identity had been revealed without his intention. There is not much of a difference between showing himself and hiding.

“Hey! Overload, it's nice to meet you. I'm Burke. Boom Busker. You know who I am, right?”

“Ha?”

There are no honorifics in English. But the translator relays the message with the person's accent, emotion, and thought process.

Ice Queen spoke respectfully to Cha Jun Sung, so it sounded like she was using honorifics, but it was not so for Boom Busker

because he was talking as though Cha Jun Sung is his neighborhood friend.

It is not a good feeling. He does not like to meet people who are disrespectful.

“Don’t drop the honorifics.”

“Honorifics? Aha! Does the translator relay the message without honorifics? That’s too narrow-minded.”

Boom Busker is provoking Cha Jun Sung. To think that he would get angry over something so insignificant.

Cha Jun Sung could be reacting sensitively. He would have gone past it like nothing normally, but he could not look kindly on them because of the hacking.

“I’ll speak. I am the person in charge of this subsumption.”

“Sheesh!”

Boom Busker fell back. It is true. He had just tagged along, but Ice Queen has all of the authority.

“I’m sorry. The government did the hacking. We had nothing to do with it.”

Cha Jun Sung looked relieved. Ice Queen does not lie. She is professional and she is cold and transparent like an ice queen should be.

“Let’s just say there’s nothing we can do about what’s already happened. Is it right that you’re here for a subsumption?”

“That’s right.”

“Then I will turn you down. I will not listen to the conditions. Please go back.”

He has enough of the corporeal. The reality is a different world. He does not think that the U.S. has overwhelming influence.

The only benefits they have are things that they can give in real life.

Money and citizenship, giving him different kinds of conveniences or giving him points? It will be incomparable to Korea, but it is all useless.

Ice Queen looked at Cha Jun Sung. He did not look away. She has clear eyes that are fitting for her beauty.

“Of course.”

“Huh?”

It is unexpected. Cha Jun Sung was surprised by this woman who had given up so easily.

“If it’s a no, it’s a no. This is not an issue that will change because we make an appeal.”

If his will is set, there is no need to waste effort trying to change his mind. All she needs to do is report the results back to America. Her own duty is over.

“Are you joking? This easily? You think we came this far for this?”

Boom Busker exploded in dissatisfaction of the situation. It is either he accepts or rejects their proposal, but this is not it.

“You could become a king if you come to America. Your salary will be millions of dollars, you’ll have a mansion, and they’ll push for 500,000 points for you. What do you think? Isn’t it tempting?”

Cha Jun Sung ignored Boom Busker and was going to go outside. As long as they have entered a mission, he might as well finish it instead of quitting.

“Stop! Ah, fine! Damn it! Since it won’t work out anyway, let’s fight!”

“Burke!”

“What good is there to fight when none of our systems are properly in place?”

Did he hear right? Cha Jun Sung spoke with his head half turned.

Boom Busker stopped. Cha Jun Sung is saying the same thing Ice Queen said. A ranker’s possibility is the know-how of building his character to the very top.

A level of fighting that is struggling in level D is just a pit.

“Get the battle shoot and come find me later. I’ll happily beat you then.”

Right now, they will throw a few hits and the person who throws one or two lucky punches will be the winner. The loser will feel empty for nothing.

“I don’t want to.”

Boom Busker took out his hand cannon and aimed it at Cha Jun Sung. It is an air cannon that explodes at once by compressing the air.

It is a strong weapon like the Wolf Kill and Head Hunter. It needs to be charged for 30 seconds every time it fires, so the rate of fire is

low but its power is tremendous.

“That’s funny. So you want to force a fight on someone who doesn’t want to get involved?”

“The subsumption ended so uneventfully after waiting weeks, so don’t you think I have to get something out of it? It looks bad for me to just leave.”

“Overload, we’ll quit the mission. Burke, quit the mission.”

Ice Queen mediated. She was frowning. Boom Busker did not listen. He was fully prepared.

“Are you scared? The Overload who beat Blood King and Dark Side?”

“Why are you mentioning them? I’m annoyed enough as it is because I lost to Blood King. Stop being immature and act like an adult if you’re an adult.”

His patience is running thin. Boom Busker is clinging.

Ice Queen and Boom Busker realized that Cha Jun Sung had met Blood King in real life. Boom Busker spoke,

“You met him in a mission?”

“Overload, please understand. Busker lost to him in the virtual version.”

“Irina!”

“He’s still going around doing PKs. No. Is it murder now? I don’t care whether you lost to him or not. If you have something to work out with him, take it out on him.”

The world is big, but there are no restrictions to rumors. What happens to the 36 rankers spreads faster than the wind through Lifers.

“Where is that asshole!”

“I don’t know.”

After losing him in Field of Meat, they had not seen each other again. Cha Jun Sung was going to post him as a PK, but saw that there were thousands and left it.

Now, it is more than tens of thousands. It has been a while since murdering through PK has been a method of earning points. He is also not sure if Campbell is his real name.

“Put the cannon down.”

“Pick up your sword!”



-[Hercules, come back. An enemy emerged.]

-[Enemy emergence!]

As soon as he entered, he sent Hercules out to scope out the danger.

Cha Jun Sung's gear is far inferior to that of Boom Busker's. It is obvious that he will lose with his titanium katana against Boom Busker's air cannon.

There is no need to go back too far. Hercules is also his gear.

Hercules broke through the wall to come in. Hearing that there is an enemy, it was taking the shortest route. There was no time to even open the door.

“Ack! Is that a mutant?”

The air cannon fired a powerful air grenade. Hercules brought its arms covered in metal arm to an X in front of Cha Jun Sung to block him.

Its feet dragged backwards under the pressure, but it withstood the power.

Hercules put out its hand. Boom Busker swatted at the hand

trying to grab him with his cannon, and dug in. He was going to fire one more.

However, the extended hand quickly went back into position. The muscle strength itself is different.

Hercules lifted Boom Busker by his head. If it squeezes, his head will explode like a watermelon.

“Overload!”

“Put him down. Kill him if he attacks again.”

Hercules let go. Boom Busker fell on his rear.

He looked back and forth between the air cannon and cyborg in surprise. He had fired at it thinking that it is a mutant, but it is in perfect condition after being hit.

“Is this the cyborg you received in a mission? Its battle power is impressive.”

Had the rumor spread to America already? Cha Jun Sung was wrong. It is possible to find out just by looking into Lifer World once in a while. People who are bound to know, will know.

# Chapter 76

---

“Anyway, I think I know why he lost to Blood King.”

Cha Jun Sung looked at Boom Busker. He is not just saying it. It is true.

“What?”

“You’re easy to read. I’m pretty sure you’ll lose again if you fight again. Tsk tsk!”

Cha Jun Sung clucked his tongue and left with Hercules to hunt mutants. He wants to rest here, but it seems that would be difficult.

“Do you feel refreshed after making a huge fuss?”

“..... Keuk.”

Ice Queen left those words and quit the mission. Boom Busker looked at the spot Cha Jun Sung had left through and followed her.

He does not have the will to fight him when he has a monstrous cyborg.

6 Lifers form a line and attack an enormous biped mutant. They each have their roles in attacking from a short distance to a long distance.

All of the equipment used for their rightful roles were level D. Metal armor is a given, and they had weapons like vibrating blades or enhanced rifles.

“Eat this!”

A Lifer threw a grenade at the mutant.

A shot grenade and concussive shell blew up within moments of each other. The noise shook the mutant’s brain and enhanced the effect of the shock.

He seems to be knowledgeable in bombs. He is used to handling them.

Kung!

The mutant shook its head back and forth to upright its now upside down world. It was dizzy and stumbled as if it were drunk.

“It’s stuck on the stern!”

“Dual blade! Cut its achilles! Don’t fail!”

Mobility for creatures with legs begins in the lower body. For the lower body, it is the achilles. If it is disconnected, it cannot avoid limping.

Even with a level 4 mutant's ability to heal, it will take dozens of minutes to put the achilles tendon back together. That is the chance to give it a wound that cannot regenerate quickly.

A Lifer with twin blades and a large sword went behind the stumbling mutant and took each of its legs. He is going to cut them both at the same time.

With a sound like a swarm of bees flying away, the mutant's ankles split open. Red blood splattered out and the mutant fell to the ground.

He pulled the twin blades and sword back, shaking the blood off of them. The blood that had stained them shakes off cleanly. It shines like it is new.

“Lunginoose!”

“I know!”

A Lifer who had been standing in front of the mutant put all of his strength into his body and stabbed with the spear in his hand. It is just called a spear, but it is more like a javelin.

The spear penetrated the mutant's chest and came out through

the back. It had not been done with pure strength. The spear is a vibrating weapon.

Blood pours out from its mouth and chest. Its lungs must have been damaged because there are bubbles forming.

The mutant swung its arms around in its sitting state so that no one could come close.

It looks ridiculous, but their bones will be shattered if they get hit and they will die if they are caught. They cannot relax until it stops breathing.

“Glare Fire! Nuclear!”

“Watch out!”

4 people leave their positions. The 2 who had been appointed use their firepower. Glare Fire used his hand cannon and Nuclear threw all types of bombs.

The mutant's roar of anger became a cry. It felt that it was dying and its behavior became passive.

They are Lifers who can each take on a level 3 mutant. Combining the 6 of them brought an inexpressible synergy.

The mutant could not withstand the constant attacks and

stopped breathing.

-[You have earned 12,000 points.]

“Hah! That’s me!”

“Ow!”

Nuclear held up both his arms and yelled. He drew in more as a strong terrorist with offensive power. Glare Fire shifted his feet in regret.

He was 2nd in offensive power. Lifers analyzing the offense group gave up early on. That makes it more comfortable.

“It’s tiring.”

Tenshao put his sword back as he looked over the dead mutant.

It is a great evil level 4. It is overly strong. Its disadvantage is its slow speed, so it is easier to catch among the level 4 mutants as long as they avoid getting hit.

“So it’s possible for us to complete the early 10,000 point missions. I think we’ll be able to handle 20,000 if we fill the remaining 4 and create a full party. What do you think, strategist?”

Sonic Boom Kevin Cruise asked strategist Oliver Dan his opinion. Everyone looked at him. They will know if it is possible or not once he speaks.

“We can’t do it.”

The strategist showed a negative response. 20,000 points? He is completely against it.

“We succeeded against the evil with our skills and teamwork, but there’s no guarantee that the same will work when the points are higher.”

“Even if we add members?”

“There are clear limits because quantity doesn’t mean quality.”

The strategist’s explanation is simple, but it was enough to make them understand.

He is one of the weakest rankers in battle, but he shows leadership because his intelligence allows him to come up with great strategies.

Quick judgement and understanding the flow of events are his weapons.

“Let’s not dwell on things that can’t be. That’s that, but what did



they say in Korea?”

“Failure.”

They were contacted not too long ago. They failed in subsuming Ghost Gun and Overload.

From the strategist’s point of view, Han Chang Jin’s subsumption is not necessary.

It would be good if he changed his nationality but even without that, they have a relationship where they help each other. There is no reason to become involved in bad relationships.

“Overload..... What a pity.”

“Tenshao showed a reaction!”

Nuclear showed surprise and pointed to him. Lotus Blade usually does not show interest in others.

“It must be consciousness of a rival. If it weren’t for Overload, he would have been the best with a sword.”

Lotus Blade shrugged at Sonic Boom. He has a serious and heavy personality, so he does not react much even when he is being teased.

It is also true. He has fought with Overload before, but he lost with a small difference. That was the result whether it was a difference in their control or weapon.

“How about other countries?”

“A few said they’ll come to America, but don’t you think we’re bothering them too much? Even if it’s a federation, doesn’t it mean we’re just trying to take all of the power?”

There are 7 rankers from America. If they succeed in subsuming, they will extend close to 10 people. Of course a few will act on their own or are disruptive.

“So it’s Glare Fire.”

“It’s Glare Fire.”

World federations and outsiders, private sectors that are neither. Large guilds are included in private sectors because they are private organizations.

The term outsiders refer to those who are active on their own.

“Dark Side was in contact with Hell Sword.”

“Is that for real?”

The strategist spoke in disbelief at Glare Fire's bomb.

There are people with evil inclinations among the 36 rankers and they include Blood King, Hell Sword, Dark Side, and Tyrant.

The frustrating part is that they are skilled among the top rankers.

"It happened not too long ago. I ran into Bloodshot by chance in a mission."

"Ugh! He willingly told you?"

"I told him a few things too. I need to give as much as I take."

They do not know why, but the evil users gathered together to meet. Glare Fire had to hand over information on the world federation in order to hear that.

If they really take it into consideration, they have neither earned nor lost anything from it. It just resolved a curiosity.

"It's suspicious."

"It seemed like they were aiming to create a guild. A worldwide PK guild will appear."

People who cannot be underestimated have gotten together. PK Lifers are increasing by the day. Lifers stay alert in order to combat them.

As their luck is running out and the radius within which they can act is narrowing, they will need to find a shield. They have no choice but to unite.

They may not reach the status of a world foundation, but they will easily surpass the combination of several large guilds. PK Lifers are more outstanding than normal Lifers.

Think about it. While fighting mutants and a wide variety of people, they naturally became resourceful and are unmatched.

“What a pain. First, the 6 people here, Ice Queen, Boom Busker, Iron King, and with a few people who will join soon, we have around 15 people on our side?”

If there are 15 of 36 rankers, they reach over 40%. If they think of the people in private sectors who do not form partnerships or distractions, it is more.

Compared to the evil Lifers, they are the dominant power.

But as things go, it is more difficult to settle matters than it is to create them. If they are to set up barriers, it will be a serious face off.

“It’s complicated.”

“The government will create the strategy, and we just have to move as we’re told to.”

It is a response worthy of a strategist. They are refraining from personal actions. That does not mean that they will act as puppets though.

They are distinct people and are in partnership with the government.

“Let’s go back.”

“I’m hungry.”

Woong!

6 Lifers return. At the same time that Cha Jun Sung was gathering experience and points, they were also looking to the top.

# Chapter 77

---

It is a static space. 3 Lifers are waiting in a comfortable spot for the time they had promised to meet. It is not long now.

No one spoke first. They will bring it up once everyone has gathered.

Woong!

A summons gate appears with a resonance. A Lifer in black and a Lifer wearing a red sword appeared.

“You’re here. Dark Side, Hell Sword.”

Bloodshot welcomes them. They are on time.

“How about Tyrant?”

“He said he’s busy. 5 people are it.”

Death Spear responded to Dark Side’s question on Tyrant’s behalf.

“It’s not bad for a first start.”

Blood King is the one who had gathered them all together. Since those that are alike play together, these 6 people helped each other even in the virtual version.

They spent their time with PK. And they are doing the same thing in reality. What could they do? Hunting people is more fun than hunting mutants.

“Bloodshot, you said you met Glare Fire?”

“I told him a few things to get information on the world federation. It’s just what it sounds like. I didn’t get much out of him, so I just grazed the surface.”

Blood King and Dark Side, Hell Sword and Death Spear, Bloodshot and Tyrant who is not there, they fall short as a power compared to the world federation.

However, it is bigger and stronger than any large guild. They have already gathered guild members over the past few months. All they have to do now is to get together.

If it all works out well, they will reach over hundreds of thousands. Like Blood King said, it was not bad for a start. They can build up their influence with time.

“If the individual is going to fight with the group, all that’s left is skill.”

“I’m sick of the little guys. I want to hunt those guys as soon as possible.”

By those guys, he meant the other 36 rankers. There is nothing better than killing someone similar to experience bliss. There is as much joy as there is risk.

They are confident that they would not lose against most of them in a one-on-one fight.

“The world federation will have gotten past 10,000 point missions. Let’s slowly get to it as well.”

“That’s why we got together.”

The 5 people got together to discuss certain issues, but they also mean to get over the 10,000 wall. It is enough even if Tyrant is absent.

“They slowly started to move.”

“Who?”

“Overload, Weapon Master, Nine Tails, Empress Light.”

“I saw that Overload was operating a bus. Ha ha ha! Does he not have enough points?”



“He got a middle class cyborg. If we only look at the gear, it’ll be top class.”

4 people spoke while Blood King watched and waited for them to stop. Bloodshot must have been bored because he cut them off.

“Are you watching?”

“Keep talking.”

“You met with Overload. You have to tell us what happened. Did you lose to him again?”

When Bloodshot held his stomach and laughed, Blood King’s eyes slanted into a glare. He looked like his glare could kill, but Bloodshot did not back down.

“It’s true. You’re going to fight me too?”

“No. I’m thinking if I should kill you. But I’ll hold back. I’m against splitting.”

Bloodshot smiled when Blood King spoke. He does not fall behind in murder or PK. He wants to reestablish an order.

“Stop.”

Death Spear was watching them when he stopped them. They did not meet to do this.

“The atmosphere is overheating for no reason. If you have the strength to fight each other, we should go ahead and complete a mission. Since we have a grasp of each guild’s system, let’s stop and go.”

Hell Sword stood up. Everyone seems to be antsy. It is a waste to fight amongst themselves. They will just have to spend their efforts on killing mutants.

Blood King and Bloodshot stopped facing off and left.

-[Congratulations. You have cleared the ruins collapsed in a level D mission.]

Cha Jun Sung was lying on his back among the rubble. He is exhausted and without strength.

A few meters away, there are 3 monsters resembling moles that are dead and ripped into pieces. Hercules was also sitting against a wall.

“We broke it.”

He completed a 7000 point mission solo. 5 level 3 mutants came out, but he and Hercules took them all without anyone’s help.

How could this be possible? The answer is time. 2 months had passed since he met with Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin. He evolved to develop.

Points are important, but his experience is in a halfway state. Rather than wasting time here and there, he decided to focus on one thing.

Lim Si Hyun thought it a pity that he had rejected, but respected his decision and did not push it further. Instead, Cha Jun Sung promised to help with the advance mission.

He needs to complete the advance mission even if it is for the Koharu sisters. It will be much easier if Seven Stars and the government combine their strength.

They had to sacrifice dozens of people, but it meant completing 10,000 points. They intend to rest for a few months and then make an attempt at an advance mission.

Cha Jun Sung brushed off the dust covered his body and went to Hercules. It is still leaning against the wall and does not stir. The aftermath of the battle must be severe.

“Get up.”

“54.3% of parts damaged. Of these, 39.5% is focused on the lower body. Self repairing! In 5 minutes, 12% will be repaired and

movement will be possible.”

Hercules is reporting its own damage situation. It is lacking a lot of things, but it achieved the intellect of a higher cyborg because of a C class artificial intelligence function.

Outside of that, it was given basic arms and a D class energy core, restoring the Wolf Kill to Cha Jun Sung.

How many points had he used? 2 million? Regardless, he had invested a tremendous amount.

If he can just replace Hercules’ D class energy core with one that is C class, it will be completely worth its 5 million points. He is excluding arms because they are additional options.

Cha Jun Sung cleared away the wreckage that was pressing Hercules down. He is lifting rocks that weigh over hundreds of kgs with ease. It is the muscular strength of the 3rd stage of body modifications.

He cannot invest all of his points solely on Hercules. He as the Lifer needs to become the subject of the missions. He stopped at a reasonable level.

“1.2 million for the 4th stage, 2 million for a C class energy core. That’s 3.2 million combined.”

That consumes 640,000 achievement points. Calculating it, it

will take a little less than 3 months. When that time comes, it will be much easier to purchase the battle shoot.

He is the one who had made Hercules perfect and gone through the 4th stage of body modifications. A 20,000 point mission gives around 40 to 450,000? He can put his focus there.

Around then, Lim Si Hyun will be in contact regarding the advance mission.

“You made the moles into rags. Hey, 5 minutes are up.”

They ripped at its metal armor and shell. Since its defense crumbled, it had been inevitable that it was attacked.

Its synthetic skin is hanging off of it. Hercules' mechanical legs are visible. If it had been human, it was so severely damaged that its limbs would have had to be amputated.

Parts were repaired through medical treatment within minutes. An advanced cyborg starts to store a small medical robot and auxiliary parts in its body.

Since this could present a shortcoming by itself, Cha Jun Sung also kept a few things in his space compression bag. If he buys something, there is always somewhere to use it. He never buys anything unless there is a purpose for it.

“Repair complete.”

Hercules used its arm as a support to stand up. Its walking is somewhat unstable. The mutants they fought this time played cheap.

They were weak for level 3, but they only attacked from underground without showing themselves. They were limited in ways to attack the mutants, so it took a lot of effort to kill them.

They need to be visible to attack, but the mutants would hide for a while if they felt the situation was not beneficial to them. Guns are of no use, and bombs did not work either.

If Hercules had not acted as bait, they would have run away.

“Let’s go get the parts.”

“Confirmed!”

On their way here, he had discovered a couple computer shops and car centers. He stopped in a few of them, and there were quite a lot of useful parts.

A special mission to take everything appeared as it had at the Biology Institute, but he had left it. The mission does not go away. There is plenty of time to complete the mission and go back.

Cha Jun Sung upgraded his space compression bag one step. It

had been the size of a small pond until yesterday, but it was now like the bathroom of a normal family home.

-[You worked hard!]

-[Thank you!]

-[I will return now!]

The bus riders in his force went back. He is operating his bus right now. The day that all of Hercules' flaws are gone is when the operation will be shut down.

“Let's put these in.”

He wants to take everything, but it is multiple times the space compression bag's allowance. He will put in as much as he can fit. Calculating by points, it will come out to about 2000.

Whenever these special missions occurred, Cha Jun Sung went back and took the bonus without hesitation. Even this turns out to be rewarding if he keeps at it.

“Even if I gather millions of points, I use all of them.”

His points do not last when he buys this and that. Because of his continued efforts, the end was near. All he has to do is get over a few more mountains.

# Chapter 78

---

-[Ha ha! Today, I completed the 4th stage of body modifications and purchased the level D set!]

For the first time in a while, the PDA was full of buzz. The party members have gathered to discuss. They had developed just as Cha Jun Sung had.

Park Jin Hyuk does not have a cyborg. He invested his points in body modification and D class items. No matter how he looks at it, C class items are a long-distance haul.

There is a limit to trying to withstand it with E class. It becomes destroyed just by touching a level 3 mutant.

If he skimps on points, he will die. He used 500,000 points to get metal armor and to enhance his existing equipment.

Currently, Park Jin Hyuk is going in and out of 5000 point missions as if he were at home. Enhancing his physical ability by 16 times made him a superhuman.

He is superior to Cha Jun Sung in terms of physical ability and gear.

-[How far did you extend the lifespan?]



-[By 18 years. The fire will burn if we keep going like this. It's already been extended by 26 years.]

From the 3rd stage of body modifications, it is more than a mere force of strength. It is optimal when the lifespan is extended and the appearance is the most voracious.

Cha Jun Sung does not see a big change because he is 31 years old, but Park Jin Hyuk is different.

He quickly changed to the appearance of someone in his mid 20s while going through the 3rd stage of body modifications. He grew almost 10cm and along with that, his weight and body grew as well.

When Lifers open the level C store and go through body modification, there will be as much buzz as there was when the reality version first started.

An old man waiting to die could go back to being in his 20s.

It is different from catching a disease. Even if they can treat a disease with medicine from the store, they cannot find their youth again. It is not a value that can be compared.

This is the true devil's temptation. There is the condition that they must open level C, but it is worth risking their lives. If they succeed, they will live a new life.

The helpers say that it is different by stage, but the 3rd and 4th stages increase the lifespan by 10 to 20 years. Cha Jun Sung also went 9 years.

-[I grew a little taller too.]

-[..... That's similar to me.]

Cha Jun Sung felt sad. His small and cute friend had become big and gross.

As the Life Mission ranking went up, surreal events happened as if they were nothing. What would they be surprised with beyond level B?

-[We didn't have anything to get in level D, so we each saved up more than 1 million.]

Koharu and Kyoko stay in level D. Since they cannot go through body modification, they just purchased gear, saved points, and went over 1 million.

-[Leave it for level C. As soon as we go up, there will be a drought of points.]

They will get stuck at the normal points if they do not have achievement points, but it is better than not having them. It is wise to save them up as much as they can.

Koharu bought twin daggers with vibration, and Kyoko bought intermediate trauma medical devices. They also had metal armor as their basic protection.

-[Good.]

Cha Jun Sung was certain that the party members were ready. At this rate, the 5 of them including Hercules could take on 10,000 point missions.

-[Let's go to a sample takeover.]

-[Yes!]

Park Jin Hyuk yelled into the PDA. The time had come to proceed with the sample takeover in the Biology Institute, which they had been pushing off because Cha Jun Sung was so busy.

-[Is the sample takeover you're talking about the 12,000 point mission you did with Hocheon?]

Koharu learned about a lot while being in a party with Park Jin Hyuk. Of that, she knew that there was a sample takeover as a linked mission in the Biology Institute.

-[There is a high possibility that mission will be over in one shot like Slayer's Prison. It'll be dangerous, but it is perfect to test the

party's power.]

-[With our current state, we would be able to take on 2 level 4 mutants, so we can do a sample takeover.]

Cha Jun Sung agreed with that. Judging by the points, he could expect 2 weak ones or 1 strong one. If the proceedings are simple, it will be the latter.

-[There's no reason something like the Destroyer will come out, so if we just stay vigilant we should be fine!]

Even if a mutant at that level appears, they could take it with a concentrated attack.

-[Did you figure out what it is inside?]

-[I have guesses, but I can't point out exactly what it is.]

-[Which one is the most likely?]

-[Saman Viper.]

-[A snake? Ack!]

It is not a desirable animal. It is bad to have prejudices against animals, but most people do not like snakes. Cha Jun Sung's group

is the same.

As soon as Park Jin Hyuk showed revulsion, Koharu and Kyoko also expressed their disgust. They do not like normal snakes, but it is a snake that has changed into a mutant. They cannot know until they have seen it.

-[When do we go?]

-[When do you think will be good?]

-[Since we're on the topic, should we go in tomorrow? No one has gear to get or anything.]

They have been ready. They just need to fill up their necessities and go up against them.

-[I don't care.]

The sisters are also in agreement. If they want to strategize, they can do it after entering the mission as well.

He said that an iron door was blocking the way and the mutant was trapped inside. If they start to hesitate, there will be no end. They need to push forward.

-[We're going tomorrow at noon! Sleep well and let's meet refreshed.]

Resting is as important as battling. They need to soothe their minds and bodies for tomorrow.

Chun Myung Ik and the guild members ran without looking back. After completing the Biology Institute, they thought about it for a few months and attempted the sample takeover after finishing all preparations.

Seven Stars is playing in the mid to high 10,000 area. Other large guilds passed the early 10,000 missions a while ago. Hocheon is in the lower ranks of the large guilds.

As late as they are to entering level D, it is not easy to catch up. They normally would have gone up from 10,000, but they skipped 2000 because they were feeling so rushed.

That was a big mistake. Of 100 guild members, around 70 died. There are 12 members following him. The other 17? They are missing.

They had become like this within days of opening the iron door and entering. This is all because of that level 4 mutant.

-[We'll go back to the original summons area and quit the mission!]

-[What about the rest of the guild members?]

-[You're saying you want to stay here?]

Oh Min Ho wiped his forehead with the back of his hand at Chun Myung Ik's words. He is sweating profusely. He did not think it through. If they stay, they will die. They need to survive in order to plan for the future.

The summons area is getting closer. If they pull down the lever once they get there, the door will close. Then they can return. They cannot quit right now because they are being chased.

Kyak!

-[Block it so we can close the door!]

None of the guild members listened to the order. Block it? This is the same as saying, 'You need to die for me to live. So go die.'

Kyak!

That mutant senses people's temperature, so there is no point in using the odorless spray.

It can find them even if they hide. They will be caught in this state where they are sweating and their body temperatures have gone up. They need to go somewhere where it cannot enter.

Chun Myung Ik exchanged looks with the guild cadres. They

need to buy time.

Tatang!

A few cadres shot the general guild members that were following behind them. They did not kill, but injured them. As they would not block the mutant, they are being forced to stay behind.

Ack!

Flesh and bones are being chewed. The sound itself is torture enough to drive them crazy. Chun Myung Ik ran to the door with the sole thought of living and pulled the lever down.

Bang!

Bang bang!

The mutant is banging on the door. It is angry that it lost them and will not stop.

“We are quitting.”

“Quit!”

Chun Myung Ik and his cadres rushed to quit, but it did not go as they planned.



-[The angry Black Horn is looking for a different way to get past the door. You cannot quit the mission until it stops trying.]

It is despair.

# Chapter 79

---

Woong!

The gate spits Cha Jun Sung's group out. They are relaxed. It is a confidence that comes from talent. They are one of the top powers of the existing parties.

“Is it a room?”

“I thought we'd be starting in front of that door again, but I guess not.”

Park Jin Hyuk is right. Normally, they should have appeared in front of the door. That is what would have happened if Chun Myung Ik's group had not created chaos in the mission.

Cha Jun Sung's group was summoned to a small room. A bunk bed, table, desk, and cabinets – it is a small space where 2 people can live.

“Jin Hyuk.....”

“He he. It's changed a lot, right? I was really surprised when I first looked in a mirror too.”

Park Jin Hyuk scratched his head in embarrassment. He has not just changed. Cha Jun Sung had seen him once after the 3rd stage

of modifications, but he is unrecognizable now.

His image as an adolescent is gone. He has the charm of a man.

He is chiseled enough for people to think that he is Cha Jun Sung's friend. Koharu and Kyoko were already accustomed to the change in Park Jin Hyuk.

-[Level D Mission: Bio Sample Takeover]

-[Goal: Attainment]

-[Description: Empire Biology Institute's linked mission. Get inside the sample storage room that is full of darkness and anger, and take the bio samples.]

-[Reward: 12,000 points. Lucky box.]

Cha Jun Sung read the mission description. The keyword is 'full of darkness and anger'. It means the level 4. There is nothing out of the ordinary.

"Hercules, go."

"Mission confirmed!"

Hercules ripped the iron door open. Hercules was going to open

the door gently, but it was rigid after being unused for so long.

Hercules took the head with Cha Jun Sung and the sisters in the center, and Park Jin Hyuk taking the rear. It is the optimal formation in case of a surprise attack from the level 4.

“It doesn’t look like the beginning or middle. The configuration is different.”

Park Jin Hyuk spoke. It helps to get their grounds because it is an area they have been to. They cannot be sure, but they seem to have been summoned to an untargeted area.

“We’ll have to go out to a wider space.”

“What are you going to do about mutants? Ignore? Don’t you think we need to kill them?”

They chose to annihilate the mutants. If they find the path and get the samples, it is over.

Cha Jun Sung is thinking that they need to catch the mutants. That would give him peace of mind. If it was a place that they could escape easily, it would not be worth 12,000 points.

After completing various types of missions, he can expect the obvious situations. It is likely that the mutants’ habitat is nearby. They could run into trouble while trying to avoid it.

It is not conceit. It would be better if they do not have a run-in, but what if they cannot avoid it?

Rather than suffering a surprise attack, it is wise of them to create a situation that is advantageous to them and wait. It is a method that Lifers actually use often.

“It’s okay if there is just 1, but it’s dangerous if 2 come out with the underlings.”

It is naive to think that the point value decides the mutants’ strength and numbers. Even if it is based on difficulty, it is not an absolute.

Here, the entire process is included. The difficulty could be evenly divided as 12,000, or concentrated in one place as 12,000.

Slayer’s Prison is a mutation. The male made the mission a mess.

He had been lucky, and it cannot be said that Cha Jun Sung completed the mission under normal conditions. If it had not been for Hercules, they would have been wiped out.

“A Destroyer is too much, but I can take on most mutants by myself.”

“Did you?”

“I went into 10,000 point missions with Koharu and Kyoko a few times. There was one that gave 12,000 points, but it died when I got the shot to his head with the rifle.”

Park Jin Hyuk and the sisters had secretly gone past the boundary. Would they have done it blindly? There was a reason for it.

“Jun Sung, you’ve never seen Jin Hyuk fight before, right?”

“No.”

Kyoko calls his name in a friendly manner. At some point, it had become easy to address him.

Cha Jun Sung had been so busy operating the bus that he had not been able to go into a proper mission with his party members. They only warmed up a bit occasionally.

“He only shoots his gun when you’re here because he doesn’t need to get involved, but he swept the mutants when it was just us. He’s not the little kid he was a few months ago.”

Park Jin Hyuk yelled ‘Kyoko, what do you mean a little kid!’ and she stuck her tongue out at him. There is no hesitation in their actions. Their relationship has become that close.

Cha Jun Sung asked Koharu if what Kyoko was saying is true.

“You’ll be surprised when you see for yourself. Don’t think of him just as a sniper now.”

Even Koharu is praising Park Jin Hyuk’s ability to battle. He is curious. What had been happening while they were apart? What is he fighting like?

“Heat detected 62m in front! Command access if you would like confirmation!”

Cha Jun Sung came back to reality. Hercules must have discovered suspicious matter and is waiting for his permission. It is like a moving sensor.

“Go armed.”

Zing!

Hercules strengthened its shell and used the metal armor. It turned its left hand into a vibrating weapon and left the right for analysis purposes.

Cha Jun Sung waited slowly. There is no rush. If the silence is maintained, it means that Hercules did not detect a mutant on its sensor.

-[Analysis complete! 100% probability that it is human! Estimated time of falling is 10 minutes ago!]

10 minutes means that it was right before Cha Jun Sung's group entered. They must have left it as Cha Jun Sung and his group entered.

Cha Jun Sung went where his party and Hercules were. There were no danger signals and he did not catch mutants with his superhuman senses.

"It's hard. A few minutes later and it wouldn't have been detected with heat sensors."

They had been able to discover it because it still had a weak heat. If it had been a little late, they might have just passed by it because it would have become completely cold and hard.

"It's weak, but the wind is blowing the other way. That must be why we didn't sense it."

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk's senses should have been able to pick up the smell of blood 62m away. The smell grew farther from them because the wind blew it in the opposite direction.

"It's going somewhere."

Cha Jun Sung traced the blood. It is not pooled, but continuing somewhere. If they follow it, they would be able to find the



wounded or dead.

“Someone entered.”

“And they must have failed.”

A re-entry had occurred. If they had completed it, the mission would have disappeared.

“Could it be Hocheon?”

“They would have come around now, but it’s weird if 100 people came and were exterminated. Is it that strong? Or..... it could be a unique species.”

Cha Jun Sung glances around the area. It is dark. It does seem like the helpers increased the power, but it is so dark that it is difficult to get visibility.

“I guess it uses its head.”

“Bingo.”

Koharu gave her opinion. She gets a vague idea of the mutant.

As it is a familiar environment, it is perfect if hunting under protection.

“You said that something that uses its smarts is weak so it’ll be easier to take on than something that has bodily strength.”

“Should I say that’s a decompensation? Even if it’s intellectual, it’s a level 4. It needs to fit some kind of standards to be assigned that title. If there is a big difference, it becomes more particular.”

It is easier for Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk to take on a mutant that uses its head to hide itself rather than something that uses bodily strength. It is still weak.

However, it is the worst case scenario if anything appears in front of a normal Lifer. The mutant uses its intellect? Even if they know its attack, they do not have the potential to follow through.

“Let’s follow the blood.”

“Okay.”

They need to find the path that goes to the sample lab. They would rather not just walk around blindly. They need to look into the issue regarding the blood first.

# Chapter 80

---

Cha Jun Sung nudged the gun with his foot. Blood is sticky on it.

Leftovers from eating. There are traces of Lifers everywhere. They saw a lot of blood on their way here, but this is where they started to see bones and flesh.

“It’s the iron door.”

“That’s the door we saw last time, right?”

“I think so.”

Cha Jun Sung touched the door. He could feel where it was dented everywhere.

They were not created by firearms. It had been pounded on with a massive body. It seems to be incredible strong and would withstand a bomb going off.

He tried knocking. The door shook a little because of his muscular strength. The repulsive force is tremendous. He can say it for sure. It is impossible to break down with strength alone.

“Lifers would have tried to go out through this door because it was safe.”

“So the first summons area is outside?”

“Probably.”

When they completed the Biology Institute, the mutant was blocked by the iron door. If they had returned outside that, they would have opened this to enter.

“Jun Sung if you’re right, the outside is safe and the inside is dangerous. So why have we been summoned to where it is dangerous? There’s no reason our helpers would go crazy.”

“Why do you think it is. The outside must have become dangerous because the Lifers made a fuss.”

They do not know how but there is no doubt that the mutant got outside.

The force must have gotten to its habitat and caused severe trouble. What if it had chased them out of anger and the summons area had changed?

The helpers had decided on the inside as the summons area because it had become safe! Cha Jun Sung thought about the mission to ‘get through the darkness and anger’ again.

“Let’s just do the mission. We came around for no reason.”

They cannot go out and there is no reason to go out. They had followed the blood thinking that it would lead them to the sample lab, but it had taken them farther away.

Tak.

“Huh?”

“You heard something outside, right?”

Cha Jun Sung’s group stopped walking. They heard a sound coming from the iron door. There is no way they could have heard it wrong. All 4 of them heard it. It was the sound of a hand hitting the door.

“Hercules, can you scan it?”

“Scanning iron door..... I cannot perform the command! The thickness is greater than the sight allows!”

He had a feeling it would not work, but he had ordered it anyway.

“Who is it?”

“Are you a survivor?”

Someone is calling out to Cha Jun Sung's group. The translator is not changing what they are saying. It is Korean. The possibility that it is Hocheon grew higher.

“Say where you are from.”

“What is he saying.”

Park Jin Hyuk was taken aback. From? What does he mean where are they from? Is he thinking that they are force members?

“This mission opened because it was considered a fail. What guild are you from?”

“Fail..... Right. We failed it.”

“I asked what guild you're from.”

When the man spoke gibberish instead of responding, Park Jin Hyuk repeated his question.

“I am Chun Myung Ik of Hocheon. And what about you? Seven Stars? Enemy Dragon? Goblin?”

He is listing the large guilds in Korea. This is what Chun Myung Ik is hoping for. He needs a strong force.

“Private sector.”

“He he he! You’re crazy. You came here on your own! Are you a force? What about your members?”

“4 people, no 5?”

“Ha ha ha ha!”

He is not laughing because it is funny. He is resigned in disbelief. Right now, Hocheon will be recruiting members in order to enter the mission.

Entry into the mission has been blocked because Cha Jun Sung’s group came in. To think that the rescuers they had been waiting for are just 5 people – half of a party.

“Open the door for us.”

“No. If we open the door, that monster will get out. I’m sure it’s in the vicinity.”

Chun Myung Ik thought that they were alive as part of its tricks. It is leaving them alive to get all of them at the same time once the door is open.

“You abandoned your guild members and closed the door, right?”

Chun Myung Ik shook. He could not deny it right away.

“I just said it to see, but I guess I was right. Asshole!”

Park Jin Hyuk is cursing at Chun Myung Ik. He did not like him to being with, so he might as well swear all he wants now. Cha Jun Sung and the Koharu sisters did not stop him either.

“You’re not going to open it?”

“Why should I?”

“You’re dumb, right? Our summons area was inside. If the mutant is here, would the helpers have summoned us here? They did it because it’s not inside.”

Chun Myung Ik did not understand what Park Jin Hyuk was saying for a moment. But he quickly understood. With his head? No, it was with his body. It was not by will but compulsory.

\*\*\*



Wind leaks out. Shivers run down their spines. Their backs become wet with sweat. How are they hearing it so close? Shouldn't they be hearing it from the other side of the door?

A different voice sounds from the inability to protest.

Chun Myung Ik's eyes roll around. The other 8 guild members also show anxiety and look around their surroundings. It looks like closing the door had only been a makeshift barrier.

When they first discovered that it is a Black Ghost, a few of the guild members had been confident that they had a strategy with which to take it on. They said that because it is specialized in darkness, it will be averse to light.

They had thrown a photothermal bomb because they figured light would excite it and make it come at them.

It is correct that they do not like the light. It is also correct that it will excite them. They were wrong that it would come at them. Black Ghosts quickly hide their bodies when they are exposed to light.

Then it appeared when the photothermal bomb's effect disappeared. They repeated throwing the bomb and having it disappear to reappear a few times. The amount of bombs they had kept decreasing.

They need to throw 5 or 6 to light up the entire space. There are

so many places to hide, so it just kept retreating where it needed to wherever the light struck.

Photothermal bombs are a necessity, but they do not pack as many of them as they do bombs. When they finally realized that they were down by a lot, they were almost all out.

That is when it started to make the sound of wind seeping out and attacked. It covers a few bullets with a sturdy coat. Even if it penetrated, it got caught in the muscle and could not use its strength.

There are missions where attacks from the virtual work and there are missions where it does not. Chun Myung Ik had been unlucky and got caught with the latter. It is a dire error.

Again. The Black Ghost they had encountered until now attacked as soon as it let out the sound of wind.

It is a signal to let them know its location. But it made the sound twice and did not attack. They need to find it before it attacks.

The raid leader wiped his helmet when it felt like something was bothering it. There is yellow and sticky mucus on it. He instinctively turned his head and looked up.

A dark and red space swallowed him. There is a fishy smell and his hip hurt. He is sleepy. He cannot sleep..... But he is so sleepy.

The Black Ghost's mouth rips the raid leaders upper body. The lower body flails and pours blood. His body has been cut in half.

It is a snake but does not swallow its meat and chews it like a carnivore. Its saw like teeth made Chun Myung Ik feel faint.

Die!

Pew pew pew pew!

The Black Ghost shakes its head. It is hanging by its tail and is moving freely in the air. The only thing is that it cannot move beyond a certain distance.

“Over there!”

“Ack!”

A raid leader pointed somewhere. It is a ventilator that is full of the Black Ghost.

60% of its body had already come out. The rest is a matter of time.

It is not a width that the Black Ghost could fit its body through, but the snake's physical characteristics and its determination to get out was making the impossible possible.

The Black Ghost had made noise because it had contracted its body as much as it could in order to get through the vent, and had finally released its breath once its head came out.

Bang bang!

The raid leaders threw bombs even though Chun Myung Ik had not ordered them to. However, the Black Ghost is hanging so high that they cannot reach it.

The explosives were not delivered properly. And while it moved around to avoid the bullets, the rest of its 40% slipped out.

Bang!

The Black Ghost brought its massive weight onto the ground. Its length reaches over 15m. It is so thick that 2 adults would be able to wrap their arms around it.

Scales that look as hard as turtle shells cover its entire body. There are horns on its forehead, and they are larger than a human's legs.

The worst is its head. It did not have a snake head, but looked like the head of a carnivorous dinosaur was taken off and put on it. It is a mutant that evolved from a snake.

# Chapter 81

---

As soon as the Black Ghost came down, it hid. Guns do not have much effect but bombs are dangerous, so it is avoiding a face on battle.

“Ah!”

“Keuk!”

Chun Myung Ik and the raid leaders are shaking in fear. It is 15m long but it has an elasticity that makes it 50% longer when it is attacking.

With the width of this room, most of them are within range. Once it propels its body, they would not be able to detect how quickly it protracting and retracting even with their modified bodies.

It also avoids detection with their sensors because it can control its body temperature. It has all of the conditions necessary for assassination.

Chun Myung Ik slipped back without anyone knowing. He must not provoke the Black Ghost.

He moved toward the lever. Even if they are put in a more dangerous situation, that is something to think about later. If they die now, there is no later.

Chun Myung Ik pulled down the lever he had put up. When the door went up, he saw Cha Jun Sung's group standing there with blank looks.

“What is this asshole doing? He wouldn't open the door when we asked him to.”

Park Jin Hyuk went outside and put his face in front of Chun Myung Ik's. Behind him, Park Jin Hyuk saw a mutant resembling a snake and 7 guild members.

Nearly half of the Black Ghost was covered in darkness. It is blurry.

“There are only the master, vice master, and raid leaders. What about the regular guild members?”

He is not asking because he does not know. The superior members sacrificed the lower ones so that they could live. It is sickening. He wanted to kill them.

“Huh?”

Chun Myung Ik ignored Park Jin Hyuk and pulled the lever down again and went inside. The door that had gone up about 2m was coming down. It will close in 10 seconds.

Park Jin Hyuk let go of the lever in the middle. The door is open without going up or down. Chun Myung Ik is glaring as if he wants to kill him. Should he dig out his eyes?

“Hurry up and put it down! We’ll die!”

“Let’s get it.”

Cha Jun Sung was watching them and took opposite actions to Chun Myung Ik’s. Even if they get away from it now, they will be tracked. It is better to end it here.

“What about this asshole?”

“Catch him.”

Cha Jun Sung is just as disgusted by Chun Myung Ik as Park Jin Hyuk is. Because he abandoned his guild members?

That is a part of it, but he opened the door without hesitation upon danger when he had not opened it when they asked him to. He cannot just let that go.

“Number 617 Cha Jun Sung?”

Chun Myung Ik recognizes his face. Did he make an impression when he killed the Spectre?

“Hercules, watch him so he can’t do anything stupid. Kill him if you sense anything suspicious.”

“Mission confirmed! Kill on condition!”

Woong!

Hercules’s arms turned into a vibrating weapon and buster, and went into surveillance mode. He is someone who abandons others. He needs to be suppressed so there are no further damages.

“Cyborg!”

“Koharu and Kyoko, get ready.”

“Okay.”

Kyoko is a medic and Koharu was an assassin in the virtual version, but she is now a level D Lifer. It is too much to have her fight against a level 4 when she has only gone through the 2nd stage of body modifications.

Cha Jun Sung turned on the Wolf Kill. Park Jin Hyuk wore the Head Hunter on his shoulder as well.

Kyak!



The Black Ghost hiding in the darkness looked at the both of them and prepared to attack.

“Do you know what it is?”

“No.”

It is an unfamiliar species to Cha Jun Sung as well. It is something he did not see in South America. There are a lot of mutants in the snake line in Asia. Lifers from that area might know.

He had thought it was a Saman Viper, but he was wrong. It is a snake, so did he get half of it right?

“Do you want to try fighting it?”

“Jun Sung, there might not be a turn for you.”

Cha Jun Sung took a step back and Park Jin Hyuk went forward. He can sense the Black Ghost’s movement. It seems to be watching him. Should he take it through a loop?

Park Jin Hyuk turned around. The Black Ghost did not miss his movement.

Pang!

The contracted muscles released and it went forward like a spring. It is a tremendous speed. Cha Jun Sung was not able to see the scene clearly either.

Park Jin Hyuk somersaults in place. While he was turning, the Black Ghost's mouth opened and grazed under his feet. It is grossly large.

“Asshole.”

Park Jin Hyuk stepped on the Black Ghost's face and ran, triggering the Head Hunter.

He powered through the shell and created a wound. Blood is seeping out. It is a weak wound compared to its body, but it does get wounded.

“Try and catch me.”

Park Jin Hyuk runs. He jumps over obstacles and rides walls. There is a centrifugal force that creates the perception that he has glue on his feet.

Tang tang tang!

He fires the Head Hunter from that state. He does not make the mistake of falling down. He circled the Black Ghost and showed the essence of firing on the move.

His shots get their hit 100 out of 100 times. Chun Myung Ik's group witnessed this wonder and were in awe.

He is firing his gun while moving at that speed and hitting his target. They could not dream of this kind of movement. He surpasses the speed that a human can move in.

Bang!

The Black Ghost's tail flies toward Park Jin Hyuk's stomach. It did not aim exactly, but its precise sense showed it where its enemy is located.

When Park Jin Hyuk avoided the tail, it hit the facility's wall. It is a disposed strike.

“Impressive.”

Not even the Head Hunter's force can penetrate the muscles. It would die if he hit it with hundreds or thousands of bullets, but his stamina would not be able to handle that.

He may act relaxed, but he is not really. He is fighting with all of his power, paying attention to avoiding it while concentrating on attacking it.

Even if his stamina has increased, it will drop because it is not

just replenished.

“It’s doable?”

“Its coat is the problem! Ugh! I’ll need to use an explosive bomb! Stand back!”

Park Jin Hyuk launched an explosive bomb. The space is narrow so fragments will fly, but he needs to use a bomb if he is to wound the Black Ghost.

Bang!

The explosive that is embedded in the coat goes off and its flesh splatters. It really is strong.

The level 4 mutant’s regeneration heals the wound. Park Jin Hyuk used all types of bombs to wound it, and used a small advantage to disturb its attention.

“If it was just a little wider!”

They estimate that the Black Ghost is rated low. It is not strong. If the space to battle was not the size of a gym, he would have won a long time ago.

Tatang!

Park Jin Hyuk is no longer a sniper who attacks from one place. He is a versatile Lifer who can create a melee with his excellent physical ability.

“I won’t be able to win either.”

Cha Jun Sung is laughing. It is an impressive development. He can tell how hard Park Jin Hyuk worked on himself over the last 2 months. Even if he is weak, he can fight with a level 4.

He would be able to put up in level C as well. Of course they do not intend to attempt level C until they have their battle shoots.

Bang bang bang!

The battle is becoming fierce. The Black Ghost accepted Park Jin Hyuk to be on his own level. It gets slower as it is wounded. Its stamina has reached the limit.

“I’m ending it.”

Cha Jun Sung took his Wolf Kill and leapt high. He jumped about 3 or 4 meters in the air.

He brandished the Wolf Kill at the Black Ghost’s neck. It felt something behind it, tensed the muscles in its neck, and turned its head.

When Cha Jun Sung looked next to him, he saw a mouth full of blood and flesh coming towards him. It is a strained situation.

Tang!

A bullet flies by the Black Ghost's eyes. It stops its attack in surprise.

“My heart.”

“Its senses are good because it's a snake.”

Snakes are naturally gifted hunters. Since it has become a mutant from that state, it may as well be a murder weapon.

“Support me.”

“We need to annoy it.”

Tatang!

He is only aiming at its face. Cha Jun Sung held the Wolf Kill and faced it from the front. The Black Ghost is getting pushed back because they have combined their strength.

“How!”

Is that possible with the D class store? It does not make sense. There is no way they are level D. Level C? There are Lifers who have already gotten past the advance mission?

Chun Myung Ik looked at Hercules guarding him and the Koharu sisters waiting in the rear. Do those women also have similar abilities?

And what is this cyborg? Was Cha Jun Sung so great?

‘There’s someone named Cha Jun Sung who went into a mission with Hocheon, right?’

“Ah!”

He remembered his meeting with Lim Si Hyun. He had been looking for Cha Jun Sung. He had received a small reward for giving him information. Why was he looking for him?

It is complicated. If they kill the mutant, will they leave him alone?

“Respiratory symptoms discovered from heart and pulse rate! Wavering pupils indicate increase in the probability that he will show adverse reactions! Closely monitored!”

Hercules who had been monitoring everything, focused on Chun Myung Ik. It had detected that he is having other thoughts by his external reactions.

‘That’s a function that isn’t in lower level cyborgs.’

There are a few lower level cyborgs in Hocheon as well. They are useless in battle, but they are often used instead of the manpower they lack.

If the function is not in a lower level, middle? If he is a Lifer who has a middle class cyborg?

“Overload?”

He knows that Overload is Korean. He saw the blog occasionally. There have been rumors on Lifer World recently that someone is operating a bus with a cyborg.

Then it was true? Is that why Lim Si Hyun was looking for Cha Jun Sung?

‘This.....’

Embarrassment is washing over him. Everyone is so impressive. They are taking on the Black Ghost on their own when he had not been able to do it even with a force dying around him.

He wants to slander Cha Jun Sung, but it is hard to do because he is being monitored. The reality that he must sit down and wait until the battle is over was painful.



Kyak!

The Black Ghost screams. All of its intestines were spilling out. Judging by the flow of events, it would be caught in no time. As expected, the battle ended soon after.

# Chapter 82

---

The lower half of the Black Ghost was cut and the giant toppled over.

There are gashes and bullet wounds all over its body. It is the work of Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk. It has fallen over but it is still alive, gasping for breath.

“Are you okay?”

“Ow! Are you really asking? A few ribs and an arm is broken. It really hurts.”

Park Jin Hyuk went towards Cha Jun Sung, who was sitting against a wall. He cannot stand up without support. He had been hit by the Black Ghost while fighting with it at a short distance.

He flew 10m. If it had not been for the body modification, his guts would have ruptured from the impact of the tail and hitting the wall and he would have died.

Kyoko took a box out of her space compression bag. The outside is plain, but it is a medical device worth 400,000 points for intermediate trauma treatment.

Wiing.

It must have a fingerprint detecting function on it because as soon as Kyoko put her hand to it, it expanded into a box the size of a person. It was like looking at an operating table in an operating room. 2 medical robots the size of a person's fist and hundreds of medical robots smaller than a millet were waiting.

There is also a computer that check the patient's state. It shows an MRI and X-ray in real time as a hologram.

“Jin Hyuk, get Jun Sung on the table.”

“Sure.”

Park Jin Hyuk supported Cha Jun Sung and got him on the operating table. It is cozy and comfortable. A slight raise over the table is full of machinery.

“Scan the patient.”

-[Scanning..... Scan complete. 5 ribs and left arm broken from impact of crash, minor damages to organs, surgery difficulty 56%. Will you start the procedure?]

“Start.”

-[Alert. Starting operation is impossible. Level 4 mutant associated with parasites harmful to humans and powerful virus detected 30m away. Expedite command.]

It is referring to the Black Ghost. The snake is full of parasites and viruses. It is the worst environment for the medical device that needs to ensure protection for its patient.

“I’ll die. I’m a patient.”

Kyak!

Park Jin Hyuk threw a fever shot at the Black Ghost. The heat went into the wound and went off inside. It became a grilled snake.

-[You have earned 12,000 points.]

-[Incineration confirmed.]

-[Operation starting.]

The medical robots apply anesthetic to Cha Jun Sung’s side and arm, and incise the flesh. He can see the broken bones, but he does not feel the pain.

The bigger robot holds the wound open, and the smaller robots go in to match the bones like a puzzle. They also treated the injuries like fractures.

Kyoko is not staying still either. Like the medical student that she is, she was using surgical instruments that the average person

would not have been able to use, in supporting the medical robots.

“What should I do with you?”

Park Jin Hyuk talked to himself and walked toward Hocheon. They cannot move an inch because Hercules is still monitoring them.

“Did you open the door?”

Under a grip strong enough to break his neck, Chun Myung Ik is lifted from the ground. Park Jin Hyuk shook the arm that was holding him up.

Chun Myung Ik tried to use his strength to get out of Park Jin Hyuk’s grip, but he just got dragged around.

“You asshole. You’re selfish trash. I asked if you opened the door. It’s bad enough that you survived after abandoning your guild members, but you have the nerve to abandon the people you abandoned with again?”

The raid leaders including Oh Min Ho put their heads down. They are embarrassed. They know how it feels to be abandoned after experiencing it for themselves.

They must have resented them as they died. Even as they fell endlessly into hell.

“You guys acted so big in the Biology Institute. Cat’s got your tongue now?”

Park Jin Hyuk tapped Chun Myung Ik’s face with his other hand. He had changed from his obedient self as an effect of the body modification.

He is controlling the madness, but a part of his personality has changed. It is not severe, but the change showed when something makes him feel bad.

“You want to die?”

Chun Myung Ik felt the cold in Park Jin Hyuk’s voice. He is sincere.

It is attacking power comparable to level 4. If he makes his move, he cannot live. To die here? He is the master of Hocheon. He needs to escape this danger.

“I’m – I’m sorry about what happened before. I’ll do anything you want.”

Park Jin Hyuk punched him in the stomach. He still has not come to his senses.

-[Operation over!] [The bones and flesh have not healed, so battle

is prohibited for a few hours.]

While an inclement atmosphere was rising, Cha Jun Sung's operation was completed. He endured the pain he felt in his ribs and arm, and got up.

The medical robots that had been moving busily, stopped and went back to their places. Then the operation room folded and became a cube again.

It is a huge innovation in the medical field, but it is really expensive.

“Should I kill him? I think I could kill an asshole like this without a conscience.”

While going through missions, there will be a day when they kill a person instead of mutants. He could even laugh while killing someone like Chun Myung Ik.

“There's no reason for us to go through the trouble of killing him ourselves. I'm just going to give him a little punishment.”

The Wolf Kill with the vibration activated, flashes. Chun Myung Ik's hand is cut off and blood pours out. It had happened in the blink of an eye.

“Ack! My arm!”

Cha Jun Sung put his Wolf Kill in the PDA that came off the wrist.

Since the PDA is important equipment that allows the Lifer and helper to communicate, it is strong enough to withstand force but it is not invincible.

Bang!

After he stabbed it a few times, it shattered. A Lifer without a PDA? Hocheon's guild members did not interfere with Cha Jun Sung.

“Ack! Cha Jun Sung!”

“Let's go.”

After exerting strength, his body is trembling. Cha Jun Sung, Park Jin Hyuk, and the others went through the door. Only Chun Myung Ik and Hocheon were left inside.

“Mi – Min Ho. Guys. I'm sorry. Please link the PDA!”

In the case where someone does not have a PDA, someone else can specially link them to send them back to the briefing room. They just need that person's permission.



“Why should I?”

Oh Min Ho’s tone is cold. The raid leaders were not looking at him kindly either.

“I know why Cha Jun Sung said that he would not need to get his own hands dirty. Vice master – no – master, we will follow your orders.”

Chun Myung Ik thought he had heard wrong. Master? Oh Min Ho is the master?

“I’m the master!”

“If the master is gone, doesn’t the vice master have to take his place?”

“What?”

Chun Myung Ik started thinking. His older brother is not talented as a Lifer. Oh Min Ho is technically in the Daeho group bloodline. He is a distant cousin.

Oh Min Ho snickered. It is the last of the man who controlled his subordinates with power instead of heart. If Chun Myung Ik dies, he gets Hocheon.

“You – you assholes!”

“You know well too, right? If a Lifer without a PDA remains in a mission, the mission disappears from the list and he is trapped inside forever.”

If he is disconnected from his helper, he cannot live or die. He cannot go back to earth, and must live in the same space as mutants until he dies.

The chance of meeting Lifers completing missions in other zones is like winning the lottery. He cannot even take on a level 3 mutant with his bare body, so he will most likely die before then.

“Try your luck at staying alive, master.”

“You!”

Oh Min Ho pushed Chun Myung Ik by his chest when he tried to charge at him with his foot. He fell over easily after being weakened from blood loss. How long will he last?

The raid leader lowered the lever. The door that Cha Jun Sung’s group went through, closed.

Pew pew pew pew!

He fires at the lever. Black smoke poured from machinery that had become like honeycomb. This is in case Chun Myung Ik tries to

go looking for Cha Jun Sung's group.

They also considered that Cha Jun Sung's group might change their minds and go back for him.

Woong!

The raid leaders quit the mission and returned to each of their briefing rooms and reality. Oh Min Ho stayed until the end and left Chun Myung Ik with the last words,

“I'll inherit it well.”

Chun Myung Ik passed out at this reality that was making him crazy. His mentality is already weak because of his wound. It surpassed a shock that he could handle.

Hah!

As he was losing consciousness, he heard Oh Min Ho's laughter. It is the end.

# Chapter 83

---

“Jun Sung, you’re not preventing it?”

“Are you an angel?”

“He he!”

He had made the decision after drawing up a rough picture. Cha Jun Sung felt strong hostility in the way Oh Min Ho and the raid leaders were looking at Chun Myung Ik.

He did sin, but it is difficult to see as something that it worthy of dying over. That is why he broke his PDA and threw him to the wolves. The wolves would dispose of him.

They could save him, but the probability of that is very low.

Even if they stop resenting him, they will not lose an opportunity. If they kill him, they take Hocheon. Honestly, Chun Myung Ik and Oh Min Ho’s group are the same type of people.

The only difference was whether they wronged them or not.

It is all well-earned punishment.

Time is passing. It has been 3 days since Cha Jun Sung’s group entered the mission.

A mutant appeared once in a while, but most of them were level 1 or 2 and there were not many level 3. Even those were weak as the Black Ghost's offspring.

It does not seem like there will be more level 4. It would be okay to just send Hercules.

“If it's not here, it means that it's in a secret location.”

“That's probably right.”

They are searching through everything because they do not know the location of the sample lab. Over a few days, places that seem plausible showed up once in a while.

“Hercules, break it.”

Bang!

Hercules is beating the door. It does not have a knob. Since they do not know how to get in, they can only force entry. It must not be a very solid door because it broke quickly.

“Found it.”

“Looks like it.”

“Wow! It’s packed with samples like it is in the movies!”

When they went deeper inside, there was a motley of samples stored in a cool frost. They do not know how the freezer is on.

They do not want to know either. All they have to do is complete the mission and get the points.

“What’s what?”

-[It is the 3rd blue bottle on the top left, 4th row.]

What has gotten into it? Zephyrus spoke to Park Jin Hyuk. It is really quiet, but it is being friendly and telling him which sample will allow him to complete the mission.

“Odin, is that the goal?”

-[That is right.]

When Cha Jun Sung asked for confirmation, Odin responded immediately. Normally, he would have said ‘Figure it out for yourself’ or acted like he is invisible.

-[You have attained the samples. You have cleared the sample takeover.]

“Is it complete? Hercules, look around to see if there are any items that would be worth points.”

Once Hercules returns, they will go back. It would be good if it came back with something.

Hercules looked around outside and came with a strange locker. When it put it down and they looked through it, it was just full of documents in English.

“Let’s go back.”

“Hold on.”

Kyoko is reading the documents. Is there something interest in there? As she is interested in the medical field, she has a lot of curiosity regarding the mutants and Biology Institute.

“Aphrodite, is this true?”

-[It is true.]

“What is?”

Park Jin Hyuk asked Kyoko. She did not answer, and kept reading. There is so much of it that she cannot take it all in at once.

“I’ll have to take this back to read it. Give me a few days.”

“Huh? Sure.”

Cha Jun Sung spoke without concern. He could probably translate it if he put his mind to it, but left it to her thinking that there is no point.

Woong!

They are returning. They felt uneasy about the ordeal with Chun Myung Ik, but they finished safely without problems. They could increase the difficulty.

When Cha Jun Sung’s group was returning, the helpers were discussing the documents they had taken.

-[Odin, shouldn’t you have made it so they couldn’t read the documents?]

-[All they can find out with those is just the tip of the iceberg.]

-[The world is different too.]

-[The world is different at the tip of the iceberg too, but we can hide it.]



-[As long as Life Mission has been created, the secret will be revealed. We cannot block everything. Even if they take a guess and find something out, it will be buried quickly.]

It is all for the Three. Since they are Lifers who have opened level C, it is okay to reveal a small part of the secret to them. They deserve that much.

If Cha Jun Sung had heard them talking, he would not have known what it was about.

What is what? Three? Secret?

-[Will the 36 rankers be able to develop to level S? Or even level A?]

-[It's not if they can do it. Get rid of any suspicion. They need to do it since the purpose of creating Life Mission was to kill them.]

-[The one chance to rally for one mistake. We are only given one opportunity! We cannot afford anything else. It is the end if we fail. Keep that in mind.]

The helpers are silent. It is so. The rankers need to die for this war to end. It is already too late, but that is the only way if they are to fix the situation.

# Chapter 84

---

Kyoko found a dictionary on medical and cytology terms, and looked over the documents. What she had briefly read was interesting.

There is useless content mixed in, but she looked those over once and tossed them. They were unimportant and complicated getting to the point.

She had asked Cha Jun Sung for a few days, but she could tell that would not be possible once she started working on them.

So she extended it by a week. Honestly, Cha Jun Sung would have given her a month if she had asked for it. He cannot force missions on her. She has a personal life too.

She only has to participate in the advance mission. They need to cross over to level C.

-[These documents deal with the onset of the A virus that occurred in the world of Lifers. Pharmaceutical company Empire researched this.]

-[Empire isn't the one that made it?]

-[No. The method to make it isn't here. It says that there was a sudden outbreak.]

The A virus appeared out of nowhere. It contaminated all life forms including people, animals, and plants.

Like the top pharmaceutical company in the world, Empire studied the A virus. It is not in pursuit of profit. They were trying to make a vaccine.

The Institute that Cha Jun Sung performed was basically a vaccine manufacturer as well.

-[Is the sample we took the virus or the vaccine?]

-[It's the vaccine.]

-[If they created a vaccine to combat the disease, why is that world so messed up?]

-[According to this, there are 2 reasons. The first is that there is no life to inoculate, and the second is that they might as well not inoculate if it's done once someone is infected.]

-[So does that mean that the vaccine was created after the world fell?]

It is understandable. It is not like the A virus is being spread now and it has already spread, so what point is there in creating the vaccine?

-[Are those documents about the process of creating the vaccine?]

-[Similar.]

The Biology Institute had also been packed with mutants. It does not seem like they broke in from outside, but they were infected while doing research.

They could not manufacture the vaccine as though producing them in a factory. They would need to go under a high degree of manufacturing, but they would not have the manpower to deal with that quantity.

Cha Jun Sung's group only discovered 1 thing as well. The people who had not been vaccinated were infected, and the people who had not been infected were killed by those who were.

-[Is that place Earth?]

-[When comparing material from Lifer World and the lab, it is the Earth. It seems so from what my sister and I experienced as well. You're feeling it as well, aren't you?]

A Lifer went on vacation abroad in reality. He left a mark at a place like a milestone, and went into a mission when he came back.

He realized that the place he ended up happened to be where he went on vacation and when he looked for the monument, he was surprised to find the trace he left behind.

-[What do I think it is?]

-[The Earth is one. It's just that the past, present, and future won't be the same. If dimensional movement is possible, we can go anywhere we want.]

Time and space travel. Does that mean that it is the same Earth living in a different world? It is a headache to Cha Jun Sung, who is not fluent in science.

Even when they ask the helpers, they do not say anything except that they are not authorized to discuss it. Do they need to advance to level S for the helpers to tell them anything? They need to go all the way to know.

-[Since there's nothing we can figure out right away, let's focus on advancing.]

-[Okay.]

Cha Jun Sung wrapped up the discussion. Life Mission, which is full of questions, seems to have a lot of secrets but he does not intend to dig in any further.

They had found a small piece without doing anything. If they just go forward as they are doing now, additional pieces will turn up.

\*\*\*

Lim Si Hyun and 6 vice masters are gathered in the Seven Stars master room.

They are searching through level D advance missions with the report that the Strategic Planning Department put all of their efforts into creating as a foundation.

Recently, Seven Stars and the government worked together to complete a 18,000 point mission.

There were a lot of victims because 2 level 4 mutants had appeared, but it was a success. If they get used to it by the 2nd half, all that is left is advancement so they must start to prepare themselves.

“This is good for a location that won’t receive interference from outside.”

Lim Si Hyun shared the mission he chose with the vice masters. It is the perfect single mission. They deal with variables to be ready for special missions.

Not long ago, he went to Hocheon to pay his respects to Chun Myung Ik. Even if he was weak, he was the master of a large guild. There is no reason to think that it might not happen to anyone.

Oh Min Ho and the raid leaders were suspicious but it had

happened in a mission and it is a personal matter of Hocheon, so he had left it at being suspicious.

“Hm! A battle at sea..... We can prevent a special mission, but isn't it too isolated? If we fail, it would be hard to escape.”

“A boat will also provide a narrow space for the force to move around in.”

Various opinions are exchanged. Lim Si Hyun had not called the vice masters together to push them like a maverick. He wants to hear all of their opinions.

“Since it is the world of Life Mission, we cannot think about it as an average boat.”

If they read the description of the mission, it says that tens of thousands of people can board. This is a city that is called a boat. It will be tremendous in size.

“And the more narrow our space is, the better it is for our soldiers.”

“Why is that?”

“Are you trying to make the force into party groups for individual movement?”

Individual movement breaks up the power, so it is suitable for elites.

“I’m thinking of inviting mercenaries.”

“Mercenaries?”

Seven Stars and the government combined to fill the 100 people. The personnel have all gone through the 2nd stage of body modification and have level D gear, so they are the ruthless elite. Are mercenaries necessary?

“We plan to have 4 mercenaries, and it is someone you all know well.”

“Who is it?”

“Overload.”

“What! Is that real?”

The room became noisy. Are they surprised by just the name? Overload has a middle class cyborg. If he joins, it will become a great help to them.

Cha Jun Sung rejected the 10,000 points from the other day, and said that he would help with advancement instead. With his personality, he would have done it to keep his promise.



“Our power will become stronger, meaning the victim rate of the 2 groups will decrease!”

“We’ll have to see the activity, but they will be receiving 500,000 from Seven Stars, 500,000 from the government, 1 million total in kickbacks in exchange.

If he shows outstanding activity, they could even give 2 million, not just 1 million. Large guilds accumulate a tremendous amount of points because they operate buses.

It cannot be said to be overflowing, but that amount is manageable if the executives spread it amongst themselves. They cannot skimp on investments for the future.

Unlike Hocheon, Seven Stars is loyal to Lim Si Hyun and the guild’s atmosphere is free-spirited. It is because he handles them according to his personality.

Even though it seems like nothing, it took a lot of effort on Lim Si Hyun’s part to get it to this place. A tree cannot grow on cement.

“What do you think? Will you go with this?”

“They’re all similar, so we will follow master’s orders.”

“Agreed.”

“I agree.”

Lim Si Hyun smiled. As long as there are people who trust and follow him, Seven Stars will be famous for all the world to see.

# Chapter 85

---

Cha Jun Sung went to Seven Stars again. Lim Si Hyun said that he would meet him wherever it was convenient for him, but Cha Jun Sung just decided to move himself.

He does not do much when he is not completing missions, so he does not get out much.

Seven Stars is far away, but it is quite fun to get fresh air and go as exercise. He does not have the aim to go see beautiful female celebrities.

On his way, Cha Jun Sung picked Park Jin Hyuk up. Since he is a party member, he has a right to hear what Seven Stars has to say and what conditions they will present.

They were originally going to meet inside the mission. Koharu and Kyoko need to meet with them as well. But they said that they did not want to be bothered with it, and left it up to Cha Jun Sung.

“Dead Ark? Is this the mission that Seven Stars wants to do?”

“That’s right.”

“It’s the marines.”

“If we leave the routed field, a special mission appears. We need

to find an extinct kind in order to avoid this, and that was this.”

-[Level D Advance Mission: Dead Ark] [Goal: Attainment]

-[Description: The people who boarded the ark leaving the infected city were relieved with the belief that they have left hell, but they were mistaken. The people who were running away, are facing another hell. Remove the source of occupation and return it to its normal state.]

-[Reward: 20,000 points. Lucky box.]

The description is long and it is not ordinary. There are a lot of hidden meanings in it.

The aspect that bother them most is the infected city. The people boarded the ark to leave it. It seems that they were trying to escape the dangerous zone when the ark became contaminated.

The ark is level D. There is a high chance that the infected city is level C or B.

Then is it the A virus infection? Cha Jun Sung did not think it was so.

If it were referring to mutants, did it have to use the word infection? The word may be the same, but he had a feeling it would be different.

Cha Jun Sung guessed Lim Si Hyun's hidden intent through the mission.

He is trying to gain information in the Dead Ark to get to the infected city. He is planning a linked attack.

“Link.”

“Of course. You guessed it.”

“I felt that it was ineffective to create a plan for each time we complete an unassociated mission. That's why I changed the way we are thinking.”

He is looking for a mission that is associated. Dead Ark has all of the consistent elements. The context is like the Closed Area or Underpass.

He faced the Caicus while fighting Kawods, and had faced a Blood-Sucking Evil while fighting the blood-sucking insects. This is association.

It is a matter of difference in difficulty but with everything in consideration, the mutants they need to fight and the environment must be similar. If they need to go into a mission, this aspect will be comfortable.

When Cha Jun Sung had gone in the mission with the Blood-Sucking Evil, he had been linked by going in the Underpass. That is a safer way of facing the danger.

“Dead Ark. Can you think of a mutant that is fitting for the mission?”

Can he think of one? He can. It is one that is annoying and tricky. They will suffer if they put down their guards. They might witness a scene where a Lifer becomes a mutant.

“Infection..... Parasite.”

“Yes.”

Parasites do not distinguish between people and mutants. All life forms except kin are parasitic targets.

A variety of parasites exist in the virtual version, from level 1 to 8. The last level 8 is one of the 36 nightmares, and is truly frightening.

Like a level 8, its basic efficiency is excellent and its parasitic capacity is unmatched. If it erodes the brain of a level 9, it will go to the limbs.

Taking Evil Queen as an example, the body would be ripped into thousands of pieces before encroachment but that is how strong the grip on life is.

“So a flame thrower is absolutely necessary.”

“We are preparing a lot. It is difficult to bring damage with guns.”

The way to hunt parasites is just to kill the parasites in the host’s brain. If the host is killed, the parasites will just jump out and look for a new host.

Setting them on fire is more effective than aiming at each one with a gun. Even with bombs, fewer shots are better than grenades.

“Ugh! Parasites.”

“Cheer up.”

Cha Jun Sung comforted Park Jin Hyuk. Looking at parasites digging their way out of their hosts makes them want to puke. Beyond its cruelty, it is disgusting.

“We’re leaving in 1 month. We will give you whatever item you want as compensation.”

Cha Jun Sung said that he understood. They will not do it willingly. They will not like it, but he needs to relay the conversation to Koharu and Kyoko first.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung is writing on a white sheet of paper with a pen. It is full of numbers that do not make sense. He calculated the urgent points.

There is a little less than 1 month left until they enter the advance mission. During that time, he compared the points they hoped for to the possible points.

“Should we try asking him to pull it forward? It’ll be okay if we just figure out the D class energy core.”

A C class can be produced with a D class. 3 to 7 are consumed in production. The more there are, the higher the possibility of success is. He can gather whatever is lacking until they enter.

However, he cannot catch all of the chickens. It means that he will need to give up either the 4th stage of body modifications or the C class energy core.

This is the same as taking someone else’s to complete my own. That is why he thought of the item he would get from Seven Stars and the government.

It is only a matter of time once Hercules’ energy core is resolved. He can ask the party members for help and Lim Si Hyun for an advance?



Cha Jun Sung is weak in these types of matters. He is confident if he is asking for a fair price, but he is asking for money before doing work in this situation.

“It’ll be revealed once we enter the mission anyway. Should I tell them it’s an advanced cyborg?”

It is actually not a middle class cyborg, but an advanced one. Once he purchases the parts, its power will show. So he needs to get an advance if he is thinking about the force’s safety.

Sometimes, taking it head on is the silver bullet. He is just revealing something that would come out, a month earlier. If they keep asking, he can just lie a bit.

Cha Jun Sung opened a chat room in the PDA and invited the party members. It is presumptuous, but he needs to discuss the Dead Ark.

# Chapter 86

---

Lim Si Hyun did not believe the existence of the advanced cyborg so easily. It took a few hours just to convince him. Even after that, he is still in a dubious state.

-[I will speak with the government and vice masters, and contact you again.]

This is the answer that Lim Si Hyun gave Cha Jun Sung. If it really is an advanced cyborg, they have no reason not to give him an advance for the parts.

It is a power that can fight with level 4. Parasitism is also impossible for it because it is a machine. To parasites, it is a bothersome creature that is not nutritious.

Lim Si Hyun said that he would handle Seven Stars, and left the government to Han Chang Jin. The groups are different, so his say does not matter to them.

The cadres of the 2 groups said that they could not believe it, and asked to see Hercules' power. They say that they will give an advance for the items after that.

That is not hard to do. Cha Jun Sung showed Seven Stars and the government how Hercules can complete a 5000 point mission by himself.

They had only heard of it and were very surprised because it was the first time they were seeing it for themselves.

The advance was confirmed. Cha Jun Sung asked for 7 D class energy cores. He told them to figure out who would give him 3 and who would give him 4 amongst themselves.

It was decided that Seven Stars would provide 3 energy cores, the flame thrower, and necessities, while the government would provide the other 4. He received the energy cores within a few days.

Cha Jun Sung ran to the briefing room, held his trembling heart, and created the C class energy core. It took 7 D class energy cores and 20,000 points.

He will have 4 leftover if he succeeds with 3, but it is worth crying over if this fails.

Odin gave fear of failing, but the production was fortunately a success. Hercules' specifications had finally become worth its 5 million points.

He started working to come up with the points for body modifications himself.

After about 2 weeks, Lim Si Hyun proposed a 13,000 point mission to try seeing how they work together. He seems light, but he is a thorough person in various aspects.

Cha Jun Sung convened the party members. It is not a bad idea to do a warm-up exercise. They should use this chance to introduce themselves properly and to gain trust.

\*\*\*

Hercules is fighting with a mutant twice its size.

It brandishes the vibrating weapon and blasts the buster. The radius around the monsters fighting became a mess. They have never seen such chaos.

There are dozens of Lifers standing far from the battle zone.

They are Cha Jun Sung's party, Seven Stars, and government officials. They watched the battle and engraved the cyborg's power in their minds.

“To battle with a Giant Hammer! And it isn't pushed back!”

They look to be level on the outside, but Hercules is actually at an advantage.

The energy core had been limited to 70%. It is fighting the Giant Hammer without 30% of its power. If it deploys the remainder, it could even take on 2 of them.

Cha Jun Sung is holding back on the power because of the charging points. If he uses 100% of it, there is a huge difference in the amount of points that are used up. There is no point in wasting.

The Giant Hammer slams down its hammer hand weighing hundreds of kilograms. Hercules extended its left hand toward the hammer.

Bang!

The buster's shockwave flings the hammer out. As the Giant Hammer's arm is twisted, it loses balance toward one side.

In that state, Hercules fired the buster again at its face. The shock makes the giant scream and fall over.

Its brain was shaken and it cannot get back up. Hercules went on the Giant Hammer's chest and aimed the buster precisely at its face.

There is a continuous firing function in the buster too. It might fall behind in power, but the continuity is like that of a machine gun. The power is enough to rip a human to shreds as well.

It cannot stay sane when such a weapon is being fired in series.

Hercules did not stop its attack on the Giant Hammer until it stopped writhing in pain.

It wrapped it up with the vibrating weapon. It killed the Giant Hammer by cutting its neck.

-[You have earned 14,000 points.]

It is middle class. It is stronger than a Black Ghost and weaker than a Destroyer. If it had been the Destroyer, there would have been a lot of repairs to make even if they won.

“Kill completed!”

“You worked hard.”

Cha Jun Sung praised Hercules’ efforts. The Lifers are envious. If they have just 2 of those, they could sweep any level D mission.

They had completed a 13,000 point mission with just 1. They want to know how to get such a cyborg, but they cannot ask more when he says that it was by chance.

“Is that a pass?”

“Of course. Well, this advance mission might turn out to be easier than we thought.”

Pass? He does not need to ask. The Lifers were speechless in front of the cyborg’s power, since they had only seen it in the virtual

version.

It catches everything by itself. Even if they think about helping it, there is nothing to help with. If it fights with mutants in the center of the party, they will feel as if they had a thousand person military.

“Have you stuck to this method of hunting since you got the cyborg?”

“I can’t say that I haven’t. As you can see, it is safe and comfortable..... I need to quickly gather points to fix this guy up.”

He had poured everything into this investment. If he had relied on himself as a Lifer instead of on Hercules, he would not have been able to do this with such speed.

His body modification will also be finished a day or two before going into the mission. Just as he had done with Field of Meat, he had gone through all of the processes that he could go through in level D as well.

He had not been able to touch the level C store yet. There are a lot of items that he needs or wants to purchase, but he is not advancing from his drought with points.

“We have something to tell the two of you separately.”

“Do you mean just us?”

“Yes, that’s right.”

Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin understood and sent his cadres back.

The only people left in the mission now were Cha Jun Sung, his party, and the two leaders of their respective groups. They had discussed plenty, but what more is there to be said?

“It is about Koharu, who we introduced earlier.”

“Ms. Koharu?”

Lim Si Hyun knows Mizuki Koharu well. There is also a light acquaintance. They are of different nationalities, but they cannot help but know each other because he is an actor and she is a famous model.

“She is Amhu.”

“Amhu!”

“It’s nice to see you again. We hid it earlier when everyone else was around because it could become messy.”

She had met Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin in missions before. In a world where everyone is linked, they had even been in parties



together before. The reason why they had not recognized her? She had changed the character's appearance.

There are few Lifers who go around with their true faces. Cha Jun Sung had also changed the features of his character to be sharp like the swords he is specialized in.

“There are 4 rankers here. I realize how Cha Jun Sung adheres to the minority. The occupation balance is excellent.”

Cha Jun Sung and Koharu are close-range, Park Jin Hyuk is the cover, and Kyoko is the support.

When looking at current abilities, Park Jin Hyuk should be the best of the Lifers all over the world. Someone who has not yet opened level C cannot even be an opponent.

Lim Si Hyun's group does not know what Park Jin Hyuk is like yet. They just think that he is a pretty good sniper. They do not step up and let them know.

“Is there anything else you hid?”

“No, there isn't anything else.”

“We would like to keep maintaining a good relationship.”

The potential of the 36 rankers is their know-how. They have

faced level 8 mutants and countless experiences that average Lifers could not have.

There must be Lifers who are excellent even if they are not rankers. But unlike these people who are uncertain, rankers have capabilities.

In that sense, Cha Jun Sung's party can be highly anticipated in the future. As long as they do not become enemies, they will advance quickly if they help each other.

"It is in 8 days. We will prepare the gear, so just match the time."

They do not need to go out of their way to go to Seven Stars. If they go to an assigned room, they can all gather and enter the mission together no matter where they are in the world.

"Don't worry about it."

"Then."

Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin returned. It is in 8 days. Cha Jun Sung must finish his body modifications.

# Chapter 87

---

800,000 points and 160,000 achievement points were deducted. He is out of points again. In exchange, he got through the 4th stage of body modifications. He can tell his senses are amplified by 16 times.

He felt he could crush a rock with one blow and move faster than a bullet. He thought that he would even be able to sense an ant's movement.

He easily surpassed the limits of man and advanced to the rank of a superhuman.

-[How does it feel?]

“Interesting.”

-[You need to get stronger. That is the only way you can survive in hell.]

“You’re nagging again. I’ll be able to do level C if I just get the battle shoot, right?”

-[As long as you don’t underestimate a level 6.]

Mutants’ strength begins with level 7. They are devils that could suck a country dry.

Level 5 and 6 are advanced mutants, but level 6 and 7 are downgrades. If Cha Jun Sung uses the battle shoot, he could even fight the Caicus.

However, a level 6 is too much. He will need at least 2 or 3 people who are on the same level that he is at. Koharu and Park Jin Hyuk will do. It is better the more colleagues one has.

Cha Jun Sung received a notice. It was time.

He could have gone through the body modification earlier, but he had to delay it because he did not have enough achievement points. But he had barely managed to complete it before going into the mission.

-[Dead Ark..... Be careful.]

“If you’re going to tell me, do it freely. What is this?”

Odin is the best at playing hard to get. Once Cha Jun Sung is curious, Odin shuts up.

Cha Jun Sung grumbled, but kept it in mind. If it is to the point where Odin warns him, it must be dangerous. The mission smells fishy. He will need to pay attention.

“Go go!”

-[Approved. You are being sent to level D mission, Dead Ark. Mission start.]

Cha Jun Sung entered the mission. Odin's monologue breaks the silence.

-[The boat cannot be anchored at the infected city. Please do your best.]

Helpers' missions advance Lifers. Odin does not want Cha Jun Sung to die. If he dies, Odin will be extremely upset.

It is when Cha Jun Sung entered Dead Ark. It is what happened in the world that he completes missions in, not in the world that he lives in.

"No. There's no reason for me to listen to the request of a human."

A man with red eyes scoffed. This man is saying the most unbelievable thing that he has ever heard in his life. And when he is just a human.

"I can't go. But that doesn't mean your father can go."

"You! Who do you think you're talking about!"

The red-eyed man is in a rage. He is angry that the man dares mention him but to bring up his father as well, it is something that he cannot stand for.

“It’s fine.”

“Father!”

“Think of it as getting fresh air for the first time in a while, and listen to his request.”

The red-eyed man had a look of disbelief. His father’s word is absolute. If his father says it, he listens. He still feels bad though.

“All you have to do is deliver this notepad on the right day. It’s easy, no?”

He wanted to throw his fist in the face that was laughing at him, but he held back. His father is next to him. He cannot be disrespectful in front of his father.

“But.”

“What!”

“If you go to the area at the time I tell you, you’ll be able to meet some strong mutants. What do you think? Tempting, huh?”

The red-eyed man showed interest. He has an aggressive personality. He likes battle. He thinks that the only being above him is his father.

“Is that true?”

“Yeah.”

The red-eyed man puts his forehead in his hand. Beyond the temptation, he has to go anyway according to his father's orders. He will need to pretend he cannot win and help out.

“You unlucky man. Where did you even come from?”

“The sky?”

“Don't talk nonsense. When do I need to go? Tell me for certain now because I never want to speak to you again.”

He said the date with a blank expression. As soon as the red-eyed man heard the departure date, he greeted his father and left.

“I would have beat him if he were my child. Should I do it before he goes?”

“I'll apologize as his father. Don't worry. Even if he talks like that, he will deliver it properly since I told him to do it myself.”

He naturally needs to do it. Delivering the notepad is the ultimate goal.

“He’ll be really surprised.”

“I’m sure that’ll be fun in itself. I was really surprised at first, too.”

They look at each other. They have a surprising resemblance to each other. Their atmospheres are different, but their overall appearance is so similar that they could be twins.

“Right? It’ll be fun?”

“Fun? You said fun?”

The father could not speak. The man did not ask for a response either. He knew what the father would say.

‘Just do it well, mutant son.’

The silence continues. All he can do is hope that he will get what he wants.

When building a ship for a singular reason, the aims for creating it are bound to show themselves in its design. So much so that the purpose can be determined by looking at it from the outside.



A warship contains all types of firearms and emphasizes practicality.

A ferry highlights the grandiosity that will catch the customers' attentions, and a cargo ship expands the space to load cargo to create the optimal loading dock.

Even a submarine is shaped for aquatic activities. Not just with boats, but most things appear to be what they are made for.

When they entered Dead Ark and got on a boat to where they thought the ark was, however, the force members were unsure of what it was.

“Is that really a boat?”

“It must be since it's floating on the sea. Wow! The view for one is amazing.”

There are curves everywhere but overall, it is a huge cubed structure floating in the middle of an open sea. It is ginormous.

If they say that the spot they set foot on is the center, they cannot get a view of the ends. The length is estimated in kilometers and it seemed like it would easily reach over 100 meters in height.

They cannot know because they cannot see the side but when looking from the top, all they could see was a vast steel floor that looked like several gymnasiums combined.

Without exaggeration, they could play soccer without the ball falling into the sea.

Zing!

Among the force members, Hercules looks at a spot as its eyes light up. It is scanning something that can be seen lightly in the distance.

“Land discovered ahead. Estimated distance 20km, error range is 2 to 3km!”

The force members adjacent to Hercules turned their heads. That is the infected city. If it had been a plane, it is close enough that they would arrive in a few hours.

That place is a different world to them because there is no reason for the boat to anchor there.

-[Master, I found a ladder to go inside on the right.]

-[Wait.]

A radio came in from Lim Si Hyun. When comparing the boat to a building, the force members are on the roof. There has to be a ladder to take down.

The force members gathered to the ladder. The gentle wind is peaceful. The moment they go down the ladder however, they need to fight with their lives on the line.

Lim Si Hyun told them to see how many ladders of this kind there were.

They split into parties. Since there is no particular danger, there are no restrictions to their movement. After searching for 1 hour, they found that there are 18 ladders.

7 at the stem, 5 in the center, 6 at the aft. The goal of this mission is to remove the source.

If they knew the source's location, they would be able to end it quickly without bringing warfare, but they need to choose 1 of the 3 regions because they do not know.

They will be close to the source if they are lucky, but they need to go to the farthest place if they are unlucky. They would need to make a full round around a boat the size of a small city.

# Chapter 88

---

Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin discussed with each of their groups' cadres. Cha Jun Sung neglected it. He did not care where they went because it was all the same to him.

There are over 10 cadres. 5 of the 6 vice masters of Seven Stars participated and it was a similar case for the government. A lot of people in high positions had come.

“She’s familiar.”

“Who is?”

“That woman over there. I have seen her somewhere, but I can’t remember where.”

When Cha Jun Sung nodded toward a woman, Park Jin Hyuk’s eyes followed the direction. It is to where the cadres are gathered. They are just having a droll conversation and there is not much to it.

“She’s pretty. People always think that they’ve seen someone somewhere even if they haven’t if they’re pretty.”

“Hey.”

“Woah woah! Did you see her at Seven Stars?”

“I felt the same thing when I saw her at Seven Stars. Have I gotten old too?”

Jung Hye Ryung remains in Cha Jun Sung’s eyes. He has a feeling he can recall. He is not able to remember because they had met in passing to sell items.

He cannot help it because he had only seen her once, and more than half a year has passed since then.

“Forget it.”

He would have remembered if it were important. She must be someone he does not need to know from the way he cannot remember her. It is only a headache to try to force himself to remember.

When Cha Jun Sung turned his attention away, Jung Hye Ryung looked at him.

She had not imagined that he was such a great and famous Lifer. What else could he be hiding? No matter how many layers are peeled off like an onion, they do not get to his core.

‘Maybe he can’t remember me?’

Jung Hye Ryung’s pride was stung. She is fine if he did not have

interest in her, but to not be able to remember her after meeting even if it was only one time....that was too much.

She spoke with Lim Si Hyun separately. He had been surprised when she said that Cha Jun Sung completed Field of Meat, but he quickly came back to reality. That is in the past.

She even thought about talking to him first. It is not easy for a woman to do. Since it is not the right atmosphere to do so now, she will try prodding him later when the time is right.

-[We will use the stem to go down. Everyone start moving.]

Lim Si Hyun revealed the results of their meeting. The stem is at the front of the boat. The cadres had made the decision in anticipation of the problems the force could face.

In addition, one of Seven Stars' vice masters used to be in shipbuilding, and his observation was one of the deciding factors,

“The outside is wrapped like this because the boat's purpose isn't what we're thinking.”

It is bigger than a few aircraft carriers combined, and the outside is protected with a steel barrier. It would be able to withstand even a typhoon.

Did the description say that it had been boarded once it left the infected city? It was created for survivors. It is a resolution with

more than the natural features of a boat.

“People involved with the boat like the captain, senior officials, and stewardesses will stay in rooms closest to the stem in order to assure smooth sailing.”

Otherwise? It is inevitable that they will gather to the corner. That is the aft. Due to the nature of boats, complex structures are concentrated in the aft rather than the stem.

That distinction decreases in the lower levels, but the stem is the more comfortable area to move in at the top floor.

If the stem is blocked, it interferes with the sailing. That is why everything unnecessary is pushed to the back. This includes passengers, their rooms, luggage, and freight.

In order to prepare for mutant attacks and to wake the battle senses, it is wiser to go through an easier area than it is to go somewhere difficult.

If they go through the aft, they might have to fight with a lot of mutants at the same time among complicated structures. They need to be smart in their actions.

They did not even consider the center. Once they go down, they would need to choose between the front and back again. If they take the wrong path, they would have to search through the entire boat.

-[We will enter. Cha Jun Sung, please lower Hercules.]

-[Okay.]

“Go down and check to see if it’s safe. Kill mutants and hide if it’s dangerous.”

Hercules opened the steel floor. A black space welcomed the force. It is so dark that they do not have the courage to go in willingly even with their vision goggles.

Woong!

Cha Jun Sung linked the PDA to Hercules’ eyes. A hologram came up with a vivid scene. There are some infringements, but it is relatively clear.

The color of the scene changes. Hercules turned on his thermographic and infrared mode. From the outside, nothing can be detected.

“It’s really quiet.”

“Did they all go on vacation or something? How is there not even  
1?”

Cha Jun Sung felt like he had become the BJ of a horror game.



Hercules is a game character and the force members watching the hologram are the viewers.

Clunk!

“Ack!”

“Why are you yelling!”

“This asshole got surprised!”

One of the force members yelled in surprise at the sound of a can being kicked in the hologram. The force members around him calmed their beating hearts.

-[Mutant signal detected in the outer wall of the ceiling!  
Vibrating weapon! Chang flamethrower!]

Parasites are weak to fire. Cha Jun Sung had taken the buster off to attach a flamethrower. The fire power is so strong that it will melt down in seconds.

The hologram splits in half. It is a fairly spacious room, but something is crawling around in the ceiling. There is 1 on each the left and right sides.

“Infection pocket!”

“Ha! Is it a level 3 from the beginning half? It would have been dangerous if we had gone in as is.”

Dozens of tentacles on a round body writhe like snakes.

It has hundreds of infestors in its stomach, but it has a habit of staying in one place while moving as little as possible. It is a tricky mutant.

The flamethrower spews fire. It headed straight for the infection pocket stuck to the wall like a laser and covered it.

Kik!

The infection pocket's stomach burst with parasites the size of a human finger coming out to try to dig in all over Hercules.

The infection pocket's own power is so weak that it is barely that of a level 2. But it is tricky to handle once it releases the parasites.

They are small and fast. There are a lot of them too. It is dangerous if even one digs into the body, so Lifers avoided it in the virtual version as well.

Hercules ignored the parasites trying to dig into it, and set fire to the other one as well. There is nothing the parasites can do when they are stuck to a machine.

Cyborgs are the worst for parasites. They are basically invincible to mutants that rely on the attack of their parasites.

It has to already be infected or be an outstanding fighter to take on Hercules. If they go further in, more will probably appear.

-[You have earned X2 1200 points and 120 achievement points.]

The parasites fall off of Hercules. It is not because the infection pockets are dead. They realized that Hercules is not a life form.

Hercules cremates the parasites. They become harmful to the force members if left to live. Not a single parasite can get away because they are all caught on its thermographic and infrared mode.

The hologram starts buffering. The scope of linking with Hercules is only up to 1km, but the hologram does not even reach half of that. They need to go downstairs.

-[Search through everything and come back.]

-[Mission confirmed!]

“It seems there aren’t very many nearby. We will need to enter as well.”

Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin sent the force down by party

following Cha Jun Sung's words. A lot of their feelings of resistance were reduced because they checked that it was safe.

“Let's go eradicate the parasite.”

“Kyak!”

Kyoko rubs her arms. It is so disgusting she gets goosebumps. If she is surprised by that much, she will faint from shock when she sees one.

Park Jin Hyuk showed repulsion as well. What does gender matter in disliking parasites? Just come close. He will burn all of them with his flamethrower.

The last force member closed the door. It is dark because sunlight does not enter. As in the case with the Biology Institute, the helpers do not turn the power on for them.

Zing!

The force members turn their vision goggles on. It is a necessary item and they would be treated as idiots if they do not possess it. Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk also used their goggles.

They actually do not need to use them because the 4th stage of body modifications brightened their night vision, but they followed everyone else in wearing them. It is better to hide it if they can.

Hercules' footsteps grow closer. There must not have been anything to fight after the infection pockets, because they did not hear such noise.

-[Start with the head.]

Han Chang Jin moved the government's Lifers forward. Since they had received special training, their behavior was lighter than that of the other Lifer's in such a heavy atmosphere.

This is how they stepped into the Dead Ark.

# Chapter 89

---

They went into battle several times after entering the ark. None of them were very serious. They ended with Hercules in charge and the force members acting as support.

Too few mutants appear for it to be a 20,000 point mission. It could have been done with a party instead of a force.

There is no reason for it to be this easy, so there is a chance that they are hiding somewhere or are concentrated in another area. They wanted to avoid a situation where they would have to face all of them at the same time.

-[Multiple biological reactions detected from the front! Expected to be sleeping from its weak vitality! Command approach if you want a precise confirmation!]

Sleep? Hercules said that there were at least hundreds, and requested command for approach.

In searching the ark, the force relied solely on Hercules.

They send it as far as the hologram's range, and follow behind. They do not move together. They need to be careful when they think about the parasite's infectious properties.

Normally when they are wounded by mutants, their skin is ripped or their bones are broken. It is better not to be wounded,

but they can live as long as they do not die instantly.

Parasites are different. Regardless of the size of the wound, there is no incubation period once contact is allowed, securing itself in the brain, and being reborn as an infection in the host.

Mutants are controllable by level because they are mutations, but humans are weak to infections because of their simple body structures.

There is nothing to do once they enter the body, and it is all over once they start breeding. Dying is the easier way to go.

With the current situation, they have no choice but to rely on Hercules.

-[Go.]

Hercules goes to the place where he can detect biological reactions. The force waits while holding their breaths in the lobby, about 100m away.

4 parties, 40 people are blocking all of the holes in the lobby.

The members are in the passageways, vents, common rooms, and bathrooms to wait. The petite people even come out of tiny holes.

Hercules pulls the door blocking it. It is made of steel, but it

opened after being shaken a few times.

There is a narrow hallway. At the end, there is a door that looks like that of a bank vault, but it is cut through with the vibrating blade.

White steam pours out. It is not heat. It is cold air. A cold air in the negatives spreads outside the door.

-[Temperature measured negative 40 degrees, determining structure..... Measure complete. Data transmission!]

Ping!

Hercules got a measure of the room letting out cold air, and sent it to Cha Jun Sung. Then it went in for further investigation.

The information is formal. It says that the room's purpose is to store something, and that the biological reaction expanded to the thousands.

As the distance grew closer, the detection radius widened. The temperature kept decreasing and reached negative 60 degrees.

It is a temperature that they could somehow work in if the force members all went through the 2nd stage of body modifications and were aided by impact tights and metal armor.



However, the environment is too extreme to use as an area for rest. They need to be at least like Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk to be able to stay there for a long period of time.

-[Region where lower level parasites cannot act! The parasites cannot withstand the negative 60 degree chill with their thin coats. Discovered as safe zone!]

This is the best news that the force members have had. It is better to shiver in the cold than to be weary of parasites that might come out at them at any time.

-[Safety odds?]

-[85%! 15% is the odds that a parasite above level 3 appears!]

This means that level 3 and 4 would be able to withstand the conditions. When Hercules kills a mutant, it studies the cells and learns everything about it on the spot.

It is an artificial intelligence beyond the abilities of a computer. It can analyze up to level 4 as long as it has a specimen. From level 5, the cyborg's level needs to be increased.

-[Force, prepare to move.]

-[Army unit! We will focus on the rear once Seven Stars goes.]

Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin moved the force. They need to go wherever it is safer. Anywhere as long as they can relax for even a moment.

Even as they were moving, Hercules did not stop searching the area. Then as they were arriving, something surprising happened.

-[Biological response confirmed! 1200 total! Survivors in frozen surface discovered!]

They had discovered survivors for the first time since they had wandered this universe.

\*\*\*

The force members shiver at the declining temperature. Even with strengthened bodies and D class gear, they were having difficulty with the negative 60 degree temperature.

Then they entered the frozen sleeping room. The average person would have frozen to death within moments. That is how severe the difference in temperature was from the outside.

Cha Jun Sung turned around once and looked at the 1200 capsules filling the huge room with wonderment.

He had never even seen a shadow of a person while going through missions. He was always busy starting and ending with mutants. Could they be woken up?

Cha Jun Sung went to Hercules. There is a dizzying amount of machinery. He does not know what anything is because he does not have a foundation in it.

“Can we wake up the survivors?”

“Hacking the freezer system..... Hacking complete. Thawing frozen sleep is possible. Once thawed, they will each have their time difference to wake up!”

The firewall is lax. It was left vulnerable to hacking. Since there is no survivor who is awake, there is no way to block the hacking.

Hercules tried to hack the boat's main system while hacking the freezer system, but it had been impossible because there was no power.

It still found out a lot of information. There are 7 more freezer rooms, for rooms number 1 through 8. This is room 1, and it is where the ark's sailor and his family are frozen.

There are over 20,000 survivors. There are 3000 people in the larger rooms.

It really was a marine city. The hypothesis is that people ran away from the city infested with parasites and settled on this ark.

Then an infected host mixed in with the people and created this mess.

“Should we wake them?”

“Hm!”

Lim Si Hyun is thinking. Do they have to thaw them? It would be humane to wake them up. They might even be able to get some useful information if they are able to converse.

However, there is some reluctance. Say they wake them. Do they have to leave them here once the mission is over? Can they take these people to Earth?

On top of that, a special mission was not activated when they discovered the survivors. Is it because there are so many? That could be why, but it does not seem to be the reason.

The biggest problem is that the ark is the parasites' nest. What if all of the survivors are infected? Then it becomes dangerous for the force.

“Don't you think a special mission isn't activated because they aren't Lifers?”

“Let's wake them up one by one.”

From the way things are going, they cannot pass them by without waking them. They can wake them up one by one and minimize the danger. They will need to kill any hosts.

“You heard, right? Search the list you secured and start with whoever you get a feeling for first.”

Hercules chose someone who would know the circumstances well. According to the search, 1 of the 7 people in room 1 was a lieutenant.

-[Frozen capsule number 1200 is being thawed. 5 minutes until thawed. He may be confused because he has been frozen for 4 years.]

A capsule positioned at the very top twisted in different directions and made its way down. Inside the thin ice, there is a middle-aged man lying down.

The ice melts little by little. Waking him suddenly is the same as making him freeze to death, so they need to revive his body temperature and bring him back little by little with his bodily functions.

“Jun Sung, the internal temperature is negative 60. Won’t he die as soon as he comes out?”

“I have no idea. I’m sure there’s a heating function in the capsule or something.”

Like Cha Jun Sung predicted, there is a heating function. The people also wear snowsuits when they enter the capsules. Once he is revived, he will be able to endure the cold to some extent.

-[Thawing complete.]

Hercules took the lieutenant in its arms and went outside. He cannot remain here and must be removed to a warm place. Since the door is closed, he can go there.

The force members went past the vault-like door and the door that was ripped off.

“Ugh.....”

The lieutenant is coming to. He is tense under the eyes of the force members. It is a world that appears to be the same as Earth, but he is a person of a different universe.

He opens his eyes. His focus is blurred. He had been frozen for 4 years. If it had been clear, that would have been suspicious to begin with. They waited with patience.

“Ack!”

The first sound that the lieutenant made once he woke up and saw Cha Jun Sung standing in front of him was to scream so loudly

it felt like the ark would collapse.

# Chapter 90

---

He is a proud captain of the American Navy. At the end of the day, he had not lost that pride. That was until he boarded the ark.

“What-what year is it right now?”

“..... Does anyone know?”

Cha Jun Sung looked at the force members. How could they know? They could know the year during the mission, but no one paid attention because it did not matter to them.

“You slept for 4 years. We don’t know the time here.”

How should he explain it? Should he say that he became a Lifer because of a game called Life Mission, and came to this universe to save it from mutants?

Cha Jun Sung felt that it was crazy even while he was thinking it. He would just try to pass it off.

“4 years..... Since I was frozen in 2031, it’s the year 2035. So 4 years passed.”

It is a self-mocking voice. The lieutenant spaced out for a bit and spoke,



“What country are you from?”

“We’re from Korea.”

“Korea?”

The lieutenant is taken aback. How could it be! Korea is one of the first 6 nations that perished without even an ant left behind. The country had been dried out completely.

“How did a Korean get here? You would have perished by the awakened Black Evil.”

“Black Evil!”

Black Evil Aduroque.

It is a level 9 mutant taking one of the 6 spots as disasters along with the Evil Queen. In the virtual version, it dominated Asia. Its origin was Korea!

Even Cha Jun Sung who fought with the Evil Queen is ignorant regarding the 5 disasters. Strictly speaking, he had not seen the end of Life Mission either.

If the virtual version had been commercialized for a few more years, he might have been able to kill all of the disasters. The 36 rankers could have formed a union to kill them too.

“Is it important where we’re from at this point? When the world is in ruins?”

“He he!”

He laughs at himself to Cha Jun Sung’s straightforward words. He is right. What is it important where they are from? The world has been in pandemonium for a long time.

He had boarded the ark to get away from that hell, but this place had also turned out to be hell.

“You said that 4 years has gone by? What on earth happened?”

He asked outright. He has no choice if he wants to know the situation with the ark and infected city. The lieutenant froze.

He holds his head and trembles in fear. The events of 4 years back come back like a nightmare. It had left a trauma for a soldier who had experienced all types of hardships.

“Those-those guys!”

They were indeed mutants, but they were more disgusting and cruel. The parasites occupied New Zealand and the islands, and designated them as their own areas.

This ark is one of the hundreds of vessels created by America with the help of its allies. South America had fallen to the Evil Queen.

The few survivors ran away from there as though being chased. They turned the boat's direction toward Oceania where there are a lot of islands, since they cannot live on sea forever.

That was the mistake. Just as they had lost to the Evil Queen, one of the islands was losing a war against the parasites.

They quickly got everyone on board and left, but it became irreversible.

“Is the ark safe?”

“We need your help, lieutenant. We discovered the parasites, but they are too few in numbers. It's as if they aren't here.

“That should be right.”

“It should be? Then does that mean you know why there are so few?”

“I don't know, but there are 7 sleeping rooms in addition to this one.”

They had hacked into the system, but he pretended not to know.

Hercules did it, but it would just be a bother to explain its artificial intelligence. It is better to hide the fact.

“Huh? Were there 9? Ugh! The parasites! Where did I get to?”

His consciousness came and went, speaking gibberish and then acting like he could not remember anything. His brain is not able to function, whether it is because of the freezing or fear.

He sees the force members armed with bizarre gear, and does not react. He is half out of his mind. It is unsure whether he has gone crazy or has become stupid.

“The para-parasites are inside the bodies of the frozen survivors.”

The lieutenant's words are shocking. Survivors reaching over 20,000 are hosts? Then even the 1200 people in room 1?

“Is it everyone?”

“That's not it. About..... 0.1% will be uninfected. Keuk keuk!”

The lieutenant is genuinely happy. Is he also a host? Should they kill him?

“I have not been infected.”

“Phew!”

It was like the lieutenant read his mind, and revealed that he is not a host. The force members let out a sigh of relief, but this is not enough.

Cha Jun Sung left Lim Si Hyun to speak with the lieutenant, but went among the force members. The lieutenant said that he is not a host, but those are just words.

“Scan him without his noticing. If he’s infected, set him on fire.”

Zing!

Hercules is linked to the PDA, and its eyes scan the lieutenant. His muscles, bones, and organs come up clearly on the hologram.

A few force members saw what they were doing and thought that it was an obvious step. A host is a ticking time bomb. They need to know for sure.

Hercules did not speak, and sent the information as text. The lieutenant’s information comes up on the PDA, including his estimated age, height, weight, and health condition.

-[Not infected.]

To get to the point, he really is not an infected host. There was

just one problem in the information. His body is fine, but his mental state is off.

-[He shows erratic behavior and symptoms of insanity as though he is looking at a ghost. After analyzing his behavior, there is a 99.9% that he is suffering from PTSD. Potential instability.]

Post traumatic stress disorder. When Cha Jun Sung had first gone into the reality version, he also thought he had gone insane with this dream-like reality.

The number of Lifers with PTSD is increasing all over the world. Even if they are mutants, they are living beings. Destruction leads to a lack of emotion.

When they also witness their colleagues being ripped apart, people of weak mentalities cannot help but collapse.

The lieutenant experienced America's destruction, the infected city, and the ark's hell consecutively. He has been eaten up by the terror that was imprinted on his mind then.

‘But he hasn’t been infected.’

He does not have weapons, and is significantly inferior to the Lifers in physical ability. It does not seem like it will be a big deal to have 1 crazy person make a fuss.

-[According to the scan, he really hasn’t been infected but it has

been confirmed that he is suffering from PTSD. Looks like we should ask him as much as we can.]

Cha Jun Sung relayed the lieutenant's condition over the general radio. They did not ignore it completely, but the force members thought that it was not a big deal.

“The captain and 7 lieutenants including me took charge of each of the rooms 1 through 8, and froze the people. We were the last.”

“How many people were originally on board the ark? What happened?”

“200,000? Or was it 250,000? Over half died in the infected city and more died on the ark..... Anyone we couldn't freeze died too! Hee hee!”

Tonga. It is the name of the island they can see about 20km away outside. It is slightly larger than Korea with an area of 747 square km. This is the infected city that the lieutenant is referring to.

“An-another ark anchored at a nearby island, but we lost contact. They're all dead! Are we going to die too? No! Korea dispatched its troops!”

His words twist, but he does give them the information that they want. This is really useful. The more they knew about the ark and infected city, the better.

“Are hosts mixed in sleeping room? Can you tell them apart?”

“There are a lot of them mixed in. He he! Under circumstances, it was difficult to distinguish the host, so I can’t distinguish between them.”

The lieutenant chirped like a bird. He says that when the parasites were introduced to the ark, tens of thousands of people got on the lifeboats to get away.

The remaining people chose to be frozen indefinitely. This was because they had come to find out that parasites do not like the cold.

Freezing an infected host also slowed down the infection rate. They could not tell who was infected and who was not, so they could not kill everyone either.

This was all possible because the soldiers protected the sleeping rooms with their lives so that their families could go through the process. If not, they would have been annihilated.

The sleeping room was created to extend the lives of anyone who came down with a disease or serious wound. They would hang on to their lives until the practices necessary for treatment were discovered.

There were not enough spots because they had not created it while expecting the parasites.



# Chapter 91

---

“But why did you wake me? Me, in this hell? Why? Why did you wake me! Ack!”

The lieutenant expresses his madness. The force members feel bad for him. They can understand. Not even they could guarantee that they would not have gone crazy in his position.

“Please help us, Lieutenant.”

“You’re asking me to help you?”

“Yes!”

Han Chang Jin is a soldier. He can understand the burden that the lieutenant had felt.

“We are the Special Forces from Korea. Each person is an incredible warrior. If you help us, we can take over the ark again!”

He gushes in words that would be seen in a comic book. The force members put their heads down in embarrassment. For him to say such cheesy things as though it is nothing!

The lieutenant’s eyes grow wide as he looks at the force members. It seems it had an effect. He looks on in admiration, full of anticipation.

“Restore the ark!”

“That’s right.”

“Are we taking the infected city back as well! Korea is going to fight the parasites!”

It felt like this was getting bigger, but Han Chang Jin listened quietly. Now is the ark, but they would complete the infected city later.

“Ah! If we take back the ark, the infected city will be easy!”

The ark is full of gear that could arm a legion class force. The basic weapons are a given, but there are also tanks, armored cars, and fighter planes.

If they had known that Tonga was hell, they would have wiped it out. Without knowing this, they had embarked for the country and gotten in trouble. They will not lose this time. They will win!

“Captain. What are you thinking of doing with the 1199 people frozen in the sleeping rooms?”

A force member asks Han Chang Jin. If the people are mixed together, they all need to be killed whether they distinguish or ignore them. When considering the cases, it is easiest to kill them.

“We need to save them.”

“Seven Stars is against it. Rescuing is good, but there’s no way to distinguish between all of those people. Are you trying to put the force in danger?”

Han Chang Jin looks over at Cha Jun Sung. He looks at Hercules to be precise.

“Huh? I know what you mean, but it can’t. It might be possible if there were just a few people, but scanning thousands of people will use up the entire energy core.”

He brought 10 batteries. With 3, Hercules’ energy core is charged 100%. They need to be used in emergencies. He cannot waste them on scanning.

How could they use all of Hercules’ energy on distinguishing between the people when it has so many uses? It is a matter of saving lives, but what cannot be done cannot be done.

One out of three options had been left out. If they cannot make a distinction, they need to kill or ignore them. This is also an issue. Each has its pros and cons.

They will earn points if they kill infected hosts, but they will also be killing people.

They can distance themselves from guilt if they ignore them, but that would mean they do not earn points and are leaving infection threats as they are.

“There is a way.....”

“What?”

“We can lock the capsule, thaw everyone at the same time, and watch the process.”

The lieutenant joined the conversation. It takes a long time, but they only need to be watched for a day. They capture and kill those who are infected, and release anyone who is not.

The capsules are so strong that bullets cannot go through them, so there is no chance that they would be able to escape.

-[I'm against it.]

-[Opposed!]

The cadres oppose it. First, there will be more than 1100 hosts among the 1199 people according to the lieutenant's explanation.

Even if the capsule is strong, there is a great danger. Second, it is better for everyone not to wake the survivors if the force is going to leave them behind once the mission is complete.

It would be easier to make a choice if the damned helpers would let them know.

“Or we can force everyone to thaw and kill them all.”

Usually, the parasite needs to find a new roost if its host is killed. Since they are in a frozen state however, they would not be able to withstand the forced defrosting.

‘Figure it out amongst yourselves.’

Cha Jun Sung stayed true to his role as a bystander in the opinions going back and forth. This is why it is difficult for decision makers. It is best to follow what he is told to do.

-[Freezer capsule numbers 1 through 1199 are being thawed. 5 minutes until thawed. The temperature of the sleeping rooms is being raised to the normal temperature.]

The force chose to collectively thaw. The lieutenant’s opinion played a great role in this.

‘I’ll do my best to help you, so just help us get the ark back from the parasites. Then we will figure out how to live on our own.’

As long as there are no parasites, they can live in the middle of the sea. They decided to send the survivors to the bunker. They

would be able to last months because there are so few of them.

The survivors and infected wake up. They are all out of it and act exactly as the lieutenant did at first. With time, their vision gains focus.

They did not seem to be able to recognize the situation properly. The force members stood still in one place. It is better to let them realize for themselves.

“Ack! It’s a parasite!”

“Ack!”

As soon as the word ‘parasite’ came from capsule number 755, the entire place fell into confusion. It had not really appeared. They have been frozen in time for 4 years.

Since the past 4 years is the same as 1 second to these people, their memories are continuing from that point. Their fear had progressed rather than diminished.

“Get me out!”

“They’re coming! Run away!”

Bang bang!

They bang on the capsule. They are not able to come out of the border between reality and their dreams. They do not show signs of becoming better. It becomes worse.

-[Can you hear?]

The lieutenant turned on the microphone in the machinery. Then he spoke to the survivors in the capsule. When they heard noise, some of the fuss was reduced.

“Who is it!”

“Please!”

“Open this door!”

-[This is 3rd Lieutenant, Andre. I was thawed a little before you all were.]

“Ah!”

“Lieutenant!”

“What about the parasites? What happened to us? Are you okay?”

There must be a few sane people, because they speak normally.

The lieutenant gave them a death sentence.

-[Listen well.]

‘4 years have passed since we have been frozen. The ark is still occupied. We woke you up to figure out who is infected and who is not.’

-[Stay for just a day. If you have parasites in your body, they will act soon.]

“Asshole!”

“Let us out!”

Swearing is rampant. They guarantee that they are not hosts, but the lieutenant is sure that most of those people are already infected.

1 hour, 2 hours, 5 hours, 10 hours. Whether the survivors were fired out or had accepted the reality, they stopped expressing their feelings externally, and kept to themselves.

4 years ago, the parasite was introduced in their drinking water. They had quickly filtered it, but it was after the parasite had already spread. Anyone who drank the water before that were infected without exception.



“Huh?”

A man in capsule number 155 lowers his head as he feels something in his stomach. Something is wriggling. Then he feels abdominal pain.

“My st-stomach is weird!”

“Me too!”

“Ack!”

Parasites do not kill their hosts. They take nutrients during their incubation period and move to the brain once they are adults. They need to steer.

This is also different by case. If the situation is severe, they skip the nutrients and secure the brain from the start. They also received nutrients from parasites of the same level.

“It’s started.”

The lieutenant mumbles. The survivors are experiencing the parasites maturing into adults and moving into the brain. This part just needs to pass.

-[Get into position from number 1.]

-[Yes!]

The force members went in front of the capsule when they heard Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin's command. If there are symptoms, they will be apparent to the eye as well.

The expressions of the force members looking at capsule number 1 distort strangely. A bright blue vein rises on the survivors' faces with weird bumps in them.

Their eyes roll back and a yellow liquid seeps from between their lips.

-[If there is a change, adjust the flame thrower's compression. If there isn't a change, wait for a bit longer. Don't just trust the capsule and stay alert.]

There is compression and jet on the flame thrower. The compression makes it go out in a straight line like with welding, and it is advantageous when fighting a small number of enemies.

The level 1 parasites living in these weak bodies would melt just by being touched.

Ack!

Bang bang!

The hosts whose brains had been seized banged on the glass as though they would break through it. They had no chance because it is bulletproof, but they cannot help but feel aversion.

-[Open it and melt them.]

As soon as the force members pressed the button outside, the capsule opened and the hosts ran at them. Before they could take 2 steps, they were cooked.

# Chapter 92

---

The power of the flames were so strong that they were pushed back to the capsule. Even while they were screaming, they did their best to try to advance.

They left the survivors without change, locked in the capsule. They will be released once this is all taken care of. It will become a problem if they are released and change later.

Burning the hosts went smoothly. Even if the outside was burned, the inside may not be, so Hercules followed after and finished the job up.

Parasites come jumping out of the hosts that are burned black. Hercules caught them instantly and popped them. They really are disgusting.

They did not neglect the clean up because there could not be a single mistake. They need to avoid letting even 1 go that could infect a force member.

Several hours passed. 90% of the 1199 capsules were done. Now, they only have 1 more leg to go. There are only 17 survivors left.

No matter how much they search through sleeping rooms 2 through 8, it seems it would be difficult to reach over 200 people. According to the lieutenant, the uninfected would not be more than 0.1%. This might as well be annihilation.

“Huh?”

The force members look at capsule number 1156 and are puzzled. They do appear to be hosts, but their behavior patterns are different from the 9 they killed before.

The others tried to break open the capsule, but these guys are just staring. It feels weird because they are glaring with their bloodshot eyes.

“What are you looking at?”

He got close to the bulletproof glass and taunted the host.

Kya!

The host opens its mouth. Is it angry? It acted special, but it reacted to the provocation. There! Try making a fuss.

It did not take even 0.1 seconds. A parasite flew out of the host's mouth, penetrated the bulletproof glass, and flooded the force member's face.

The force member's body bends reflexively. The 2nd stage of his body modifications helped him barely avoid the tentacles' attack.

He would have already become a host if he had been in the

conditions of his beginner days.

“Da-damn!”

The force went back in a cold sweat. They do not have the courage to go forward and press the button. They had almost lost their lives with an involuntary provocation.

After a bit of noise, the force members' attention was directed to capsule number 1156. It cannot be an ordinary parasite if it can get through bulletproof glass.

-[Avoid it!]

Lim Si Hyun yelled. Avoid it? When they avoided it already? The force members did not understand, and they were losing consciousness when they did.

The host's tentacles inflated and a parasite flew out of the hole at the end. It is a dark brown.

It is comparable just in appearance to the clear or white parasites.

As soon as it spit out the brown parasite, the host's skin crumbled and withered like that of an elderly person. Eventually, it became flaccid and died.

It had already gathered all of the nutrients from the host.

The brown parasite went into the metal armor. It did not penetrate it. It is body armor, but there are holes for ventilation to make action easier.

The parasite had attacked one of those. It could not get through the strong impact tights and traveled up, entering orally and heading straight for the brain.

The host was hidden by the metal armor and started to go through abnormal transitions.

If a good seed meets a good field, the fruition must also be good. The Lifer who had been remodeled with body modifications is the best ingredient for the parasite.

“It’s too late to save him!”

“Kill him!”

While it was transitioning, the force members used the flamethrower on the host. The flames covered the metal armor, but the transition did not stop.

The material itself is strong against heat and cold and he even has the impact tights, so the effect is weak. It is unbelievable that a mutant is benefiting from their gear.

“Hercules! Take care of it!”

“Kill the enemy!”

Hercules hits off from the ground and rushes. When the force members saw Hercules charge like a bull, they quickly left the site.

Bang bang!

It struck the metal armor with its shoulder. The host flew 10m and hit the wall. There was not much damage and it stood up right away.

Hercules put pressure on the host's neck and chest, scanned its insides with its eyes, and tried to rip the metal armor off with its hands.

Zing!

The scanning results are delivered through the hologram. The mutation process is included. A thread-like, brown parasite made roots in the brain.

It is abnormal as though looking at a living being rather than a brain.

As it was infected by the parasite, the physical ability multiplied. Numerically speaking, it is similar to Cha Jun Sung or Park Jin



Hyuk.

“It’s at least a level 3.”

“At most a level 4.”

Cha Jun Sung and Koharu face each other. Since parasites are not mutants with constant shape, it is hard to make a distinction just from appearances.

According to the stats shown on the hologram, the mutation is in progress from level 3. It can evolve with rich nutrients and time.

The host kicked at Hercules’ temple hard with its foot. The power was strong and made Hercules let go.

Kiki!

The host takes a stance like a human. It is awkward, but it is not behavior that a mutant should be showing. This is the fear of parasites.

Parasites dominate their hosts’ brains. Humans have the highest intellect in the world. Inevitably, they will advance as much.

It has the memories of when the host was human, and uses what it knows.

A restriction per se is that it uses the host's brain less if it is of a lower level and more if it is at a higher level. If it is level 3 or 4, it will use the brain at least a little.

-[Metal armor shock absorber, breakage rate under 1.5%. Mutant level, level 3.]

Hercules relaxes its neck after being hit, and gives the mutant a level.

Intermediate or lower. If it were the Slayer, there would be 5% damage and more. It is still impressive. A bug had changed a person into a level 3 mutant.

Kyak!

Papat!

The host avoids Hercules. It went up against Hercules once and realized that it cannot win. It is agile and not easily caught.

Huh?

There is a change in the hologram. The brown parasite that fused with the brain divides into hundreds. Then they came out through the host's mouth.

Papapapat!

The parasites as small as ants spread all over the floor and enter the mouths of the burnt hosts. What are they trying to do inside dead bodies?

Chomp chomp.

They are eating the corpses. They exclude the burnt parts and eat away at the rest. The force members were swinging the flamethrowers around even more because of their aversion to the effect on the brain.

The parasites avoided the flames and repeated their actions several times. They grew bigger and bigger. After a while, they were the size of a human fist.

They killed most of the parasites, but dozens of them avoided the bullets and flames to survive. They had the vitality of cockroaches.

“Do I need to get involved?”

Pew pew!

Park Jin Hyuk hit the parasites with his Head Hunter. It was like a turtle was crawling. There were so many that he could not kill all of them and missed half.

They hear the sound of something being chewed. The host chews

and eats the parasites. This is how it makes up for the nutrients it lacks. The serious part comes next.

The host trusts its metal armor, and walks around to eat the dead parasites. It seems it does not matter whether they are dead or alive.

Kyak!

The host roared, pressed the release button, and took the metal armor off.

It had used the force member's memory. The impact tights are swollen. Its bulky muscles and veins are showing through the thick fibers.

The lieutenant's nightmares had come alive again. He ran away behind the force members, and goes in a frenzy to the survivors in the capsule. A few even fainted.

The host went around, hiding in places with cover.

It knows what guns and flamethrowers are, and it moved while predicting the paths for attack. They cannot set off bombs because the force has gathered to a small space.

Tatak!

Then it glances over the force from dozens of meters away, on the ceiling.

-[Everyone get out.]

Cha Jun Sung radios in. He cannot fight properly because there are too many Lifers.

-[Are you saying we should ignore it?]

-[This is a space where we cannot attack together. Let's leave it to Hercules.]

They cannot win fully, but he had brought some equipment that he needs. He believes that he can repair the damage one or two times.

-[Alright.]

-[We're going outside.]

Lim Si Hyun sent the force to the entrance. Survivors were kept in the capsules. They mean to keep the time since they need to be watched for a day.

The impact tights could not withstand the strength of the inflation, and ripped little by little.

It does not reach 4m in size, but the tentacles all over its body writhe like snakes. It is certain that anyone caught on those will become a host.

“I’ll stay.”

“What?”

Lim Si Hyun and the force are surprised when Cha Jun Sung speaks. If he stays here and Hercules loses, he will die or become infected, which would only exacerbate the situation.

“I need to remain if I am to give detailed instructions. Don’t worry.”

They will combine their power and get rid of it quickly. It is not like Cha Jun Sung to drag it on for a long time.

“We’ll leave it to you.”

Lim Si Hyun closed the door. Inside the capsule are only Cha Jun Sung, Hercules, the host, and the survivors. The environment had become suitable for battle.

“You won’t come down?”

Kihik!

The host has no thoughts of coming down from the ceiling. It is thinking about how it can infect the survivors who are locked up in the capsule.

“What are you thinking about so hard? If you don’t come down, I’m going up.”

Pang!

Cha Jun Sung steps on the wall and stairs and bursts through the air.

Hercules also started up the booster under its feet. It is one level 4 against the 2. There is an obvious outcome, but they cannot avoid battle.

# Chapter 93

---

Pang pang!

The tentacles are great as weapons for attack in addition to infecting others. They split the air like a whip and tickle Cha Jun Sung's ears.

As soon as it grazed an iron pipe, it cut as if cutting through paper.

He had been saving his points, but also purchased metal armor. It might have been different before, but he does not get cut up from being hit a few times now.

“This thing is only going after me.”

The host is cunning. It knows that Cha Jun Sung is weaker than Hercules. It also knows that he is a living being that can be infected.

So it only goes after Cha Jun Sung. It attacked Hercules as a diversion tactic, but it was not particularly threatening. Their abilities are pretty much on the same level. Since it does not work, their methods are changed from the beginning.

If Hercules is to fight the Destroyer again, the odds are 50/50. Parasites are similar since they can infect. It is a matter of ability.



“This rat!”

Woong!

The Wolf Kill’s attack radius becomes smaller. He is swinging it short. Since the host is fast, large movements will provide it gaps for attack. Blocking its approach is best.

Parasites come out of its tongue. It is the method it used to infect the force member. Cha Jun Sung put down the Wolf Kill and took care of them quickly with a dagger.

It is the dagger that he received in the tutorial, but he kept it because it came in useful at times.

Hercules flew the buster at the host’s side. This force broke the bone and it fell as its side became depressed.

Pew pew pew pew!

Cha Jun Sung went at the host with the red fire. If it is wounded, it will use its nutrients to try to heal. If they culminate, the host cannot ignore them.

Hercules changed the flamethrower function into a spray and set fire to a wider area. If the flamethrower is left on compression, it is easier for the host to avoid it with its speed.

“Whew! This is exhausting.”

Fatigue from the pressure of becoming infected with just a graze and a concentrated attack was considerable.

Cha Jun Sung hid behind Hercules. He had given it enough wounds. There is still a long way to go. He cannot use all of his strength on this 1 mutant.

“If this is this bad, is the source stronger? Well, I guess it could be a hatchery too.”

Even as an infestor, it is not created out of nothing. Something must be hatching them. They need to get rid of that to restore the ark.

Cha Jun Sung threw a fever shot at the host that was being pushed back. At the right timing, he took Hercules out. If Hercules gets swept, he will need to spend more on parts.

Kyak!

“It’s burning well!”

When the infestors realize that they cannot live in the host, they come out, burn, and die. It is extremely gross. They are worse than cockroaches.

-[You have earned 20,000 points and 8,000 achievement points.]

Wow!

Was it top level? It must be a level assigned due to the difficulty of attack rather than its body strength. Regardless, it had increased his achievement points by 40%.

It must be because he was active in the battle and he had wrapped it up in the end. If he had done it all on his own, he might have been able to increase his points by 50%.

Cha Jun Sung was about to open the door when he looked at the survivors. They were surprised and avoided his eyes. It did not seem like they would say anything about what they saw.

He told Lim Si Hyun's group that the battle was over. The inside was taken care of.

In a full day, they rescued 17 plus 2 for a total of 19 survivors from sleeping room 1. They will have to work hard if they are to take care of rooms 2 through 9 as well.

A few hours after the force left, a small change occurred in sleeping room 1. It was such a small change that they would not have realized even if they had been there.

A brown parasite millimeters long, as thin as a strand of hair, came out of the dead level 4 host's skull. It had endured the heat.

It did live, but it is not completely safe. It had laid an egg as the main body was burned, so its vitality shook like a candlelight.

Helpers are only almighty in the system, and cannot do anything about mutants. They had given Cha Jun Sung the points thinking that they had all died.

They were not mistaken. The brown parasite would die after a few days.

Parasites hang on to their lives as much as they can even if they are barely alive in order to alert the emergence of enemies.

Kik!

The infestor takes in nutrients. It eats away as it pleases because there are no barriers. It needs to build up its body. It cannot move a long distance in its current state.

The infestor looked around for a way out once it was as big as a pinky. The freezer mode was released. All it needs is a small hole.

The infestor went into a hole in a pipe. It decided on the place that was giving off the smell of its parent object as its destination, and crawled.

It is a far journey for an infestor. As it went, it would find that it

is on the wrong path. However, it did not give up. Even if it had to go back, it advanced at least a little.

It is warm. As it gets closer to its parent object, its body grows warmer. It is a place with a temperature suitable for parasites to live in.

Thump.

As soon as it heard this sound, the infestor felt relief and let go of its lifeline. It had finally arrived where it had been born.

Something approaches the dead infestor. It is a tentacle as thick as a snake. The tentacle absorbed the infestor as though praising its efforts.

Humans relay information through methods like media or language. Mutants? There are various ways that they can do this as well.

When parasites absorb their subordinates, they can read their memories.

They cannot relay the minor details like humans can, but expression of something like 'A strong enemy threatening the east appeared' is possible.

They get rid of anything superfluous and take in the main point.

Keureung!

The mutant that absorbed the infestor is an infection pocket as big as a truck.

It is the source occupying the ark. The brown species is the highest level that this infection pocket can produce. It had not produced even 10 over 4 years.

2 were sacrificed when taking over the ark, and 3 are missing. 4 were resurrected to keep with it. They are there to send out when necessary.

But 1 of the missing 3 had come back after 4 years. It had come back dying in order to tell it that an enemy had appeared in their habitat.

The infection pocket squeezed out nutrients and injected them into the 4 brown infestors. The existence of enemies is dangerous, but it is also a relief.

Near the infection pocket, there is a mountain of bones with holes all over them. Even though it is a large space, there are so many bones that it makes movement difficult.

Parasites are living beings as well. They need to eat to live. They used the people they caught on the ark as nutrients instead of turning them into hosts.

Even that is coming to its limits. They do not have enough food. They know that there are a lot of people in the freezer sleeping rooms, but they will die if they enter.

It collected infestors to maintain its body as well. Is the saying that crisis is an opportunity? It is the perfect way to describe the situation for the infection pocket.

The 4 brown infestors shake off the mucus and wriggle. It is a rainfall. They are as big as a human thigh. They had reaped the benefits of the nutrients.

Kyak!

Papat!

The infestors received their orders and sank into the darkness. The force members who do not know of this, go around the sleeping room and are busy rescuing survivors.

# Chapter 94

---

The acrid smell of burning bodies fills the sleeping rooms. The hosts locked up in the capsules were held by flamethrowers. If the flamethrowers were fired, they died.

It only took a few days to get through rooms 1 through 8. It is because they were being directed by the lieutenant who knows the ark's layout well.

Other than the frozen parasites, there were not many of them. They were weak enough at levels 2 and 3 that they could be captured without issues as long as the force members were careful.

The parasites in the sleeping rooms are basic infestors and brown infestors.

On their way to room 8, they had come across 2 more brown infestors. Since they had experienced the brown species once before, they were not provoked by unusual objects.

They took care of them by calling Hercules before the infestors could mutate. They gave 1600 points, but it seems they were judged highly because of the danger of infection.

They moved busily, but fortunately no one died after the first member. They are even suspicious that this really is a level D mission.



Whew!

There are 73 rescued survivors from room 8. Just as the capacity is large with 3000, there are also a lot of survivors. That also means there were as many hosts.

Excluding the lieutenant, with the 73 people from room 8 and 242 people being protected in the bunker, there is a total of 316 people, exceeding the first prediction of 200.

Encroached with intense fear, they all show signs of mental instability. The people experiencing severity are delirious. They have gone insane.

“So we’ve saved all of them.”

“I think so.”

“We need to find the source..... Where are the warm places?”

It is the same in the virtual and reality versions, but parasites like warm places. How many places like that would there be on this vast ark?

The lieutenant says that right before the captain was frozen 4 years ago, he adjusted the main system to leave only the basic power and cut off the rest.

There will not be many warm places because though there is a central heating system, it is inevitable for the chill to seep in unless it is a location deep in the ark.

It would have been good if the captain had survived, but there were only 2 survivors among him and the 7 lieutenants. 1 person had even become insane with fear.

Due to this, the only commander level person who could dictate on the ark realistically, is the lieutenant.

“If you activate the main system, you will be able to locate the source.”

Inside the ark are sensors to detect intruders and CCTVs. If that function is restored, it will be easy to find the place where the source is hiding.

‘It’s unstable to leave the ark to them. Strictly speaking, isn’t the lieutenant crazy as well?’

Cha Jun Sung is thinking. Even an aircraft carrier is tiny compared to the ark. It is a resolution and a complete strategic weapon with the force of a nation.

To hand this over whole? Cha Jun Sung and the force cannot claim ownership over the ark, but they have the right to help or not.

There is a point to restoring the main system as the lieutenant said.

But Cha Jun Sung thinks it would be better to look everywhere even if it takes more time and is crude. He can pretend to be fine, but a crazy person is a crazy person.

Among the 316 survivors, there are also 70 soldiers. They supported 3 parties from the force and brought out weapons from the armory.

The force is currently divided into threes. 3 parties are protecting the survivors in the bunker. With the level 4 in mind, Park Jin Hyuk stayed behind.

Another 3 parties took the role of carrying weapons, food, and other necessities to the bunker from storage, along with 50 of the sane soldiers.

Lastly, the 4 parties with Cha Jun Sung had been in the role of rescuing survivors from the freezer, but they were returning after saving everyone.

They had told them that they would create their own armed forces and lend help in repairing the ark over time, but they cannot say that they are allies outright.

If their opinions do not coincide and they become enemies, there will be a 3-way battle between the Lifers, survivors, and mutants.

“Oy. They’ll figure it out for themselves.”

It is a headache. Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin are not stupid either. Rather, they are smart and wise. They will make a good judgment.

Bunkers are normally thought of as large public spaces that can only hold people, but the bunker on the ark is not like that.

It is a space that is blocked off on all sides with sturdy walls. It is large as well. The difference is that the inside is divided into hundreds as though they are apartments.

To describe it? A hive? Yes, it is like a hive. It is indeed a bunker, but it is state-of-the-art to optimize it for people to live in. To put it simply, it can be lived in.

“It’s split in half.”

“There are pros and cons to restoring the main system and searching the ark. It is iffy to decide what is good and what is bad. Opinions are divided as well.”

Seven Stars is saying they should search the ark even if it extends the time until the mission is completed.

On the other hand, the government wants to restore the main

system to open up a way for the survivors to live. Since they already started helping out, they wanted to do it properly.

The lieutenant is not here. This is something that would not be good for him to hear.

“Cha Jun Sung, what do you think?”

“I am also reluctant to leave the main system in the control of a crazy person.”

He responded honestly to Lim Si Hyun’s question. But Han Chang Jin did not go over it simply.

“Are you saying that you will return right away once the mission is complete?”

That is right. Han Chang Jin is looking at the end. He is at the crossroads of helping the survivors or abandoning them once the mission is over.

He wants to restore the main system at one time instead of going back and forth multiple times. Then they will be able to return comfortably.

“Isn’t this a case of do you like your mom or dad?”

“Let’s just divide into search, restore, and protection parties to

distribute roles.”

Jung Hye Ryung speaks up. It is a good idea, but it would break down their power too much. If the parasite attacks one place, they could be annihilated.

“If this situation continues, it is better to divide as that woman said.”

Neither of the groups are willing to give in. They are both saying, ‘You give up.’ If they are going to drag this out, splitting up and moving separately is the shortcut to reducing friction.

“Let’s have Seven Stars search the ark, and the government restore the main system.”

“Who will guard the bunker?”

Jung Hye Ryung pointed to the armed soldiers outside.

The force cannot protect them forever. They need to know how to protect themselves. Since anything can happen, wouldn’t it be okay to have 1 party remain?

“Should my party stay behind?”

“Cha Jun Sung, you need to join in either the search or the restoration.”

Lim Si Hyun said that he cannot. He sees Cha Jun Sung's abilities as similar to their own. Therefore, there is no problem to have him out.

It is just that they need to take Hercules no matter what, since it is able to fight against a level 4. This is of direct relation to their lives. They cannot give it up to the restoration party.

“Hercules will support the search, and I will join the main.”

It will be temporary, but Hercules will obey someone else's orders if they are input into the system.

Lim Si Hyun feels assured. No matter how they look at it, the search is more dangerous than the main. They need to kill the source if they discover it. That is difficult to do with 40 people.

“If that is the decision, the government will leave 1 party behind.”

Once they each gave in a little, the meeting progressed smoothly. They decided to go in half a day, and Cha Jun Sung continued to keep Park Jin Hyuk at the bunker.

# Chapter 95

---

90 people leave the bunker. The Lieutenant went with the main, and a colonel lieutenant ranked soldier went with the search. They need to be directed through the ark.

“Be careful.”

“Are you comfortable?”

“Hah..... I can't express it! It's heaven! Play and eat, I'll pass on the next.”

Park Jin Hyuk gives Cha Jun Sung a taunting look. How good is it to not be moving? All he has to do is stay in the bunker and hang out.

Park Jin Hyuk also knows why he is staying behind. If a level 4 appears, he needs to stop it. Anything below that is up to the party and soldiers.

“I'll leave her to you.”

“Sure. Koharu, be careful.”

“Yeah!”

Kyoko smiles and waves her hand. They have a 4 year age



difference and they get along well.

They seem to be developing a good relationship. Koharu must also like Park Jin Hyuk, because she does not care. The search party and restoration party are getting farther away.

Park Jin Hyuk watched from the bunker entrance and went inside. He does not work as a guard. Seven Stars and the government had been considerate to an extent.

Seureuk.

“.....?”

Park Jin Hyuk was about to close the bunker door when he turned his head. A faint sound passed by his ear. He could barely hear it with his enhanced hearing.

Bump.

9 parties disappear far away. He thought that he had heard it from a close distance, but he must have mistaken the footsteps of 90 people and their chatter.

Park Jin Hyuk smiled and went in. He had joked to Cha Jun Sung, but it would be a lie if he said that he did not feel burdened by having to protect the bunker.

It is in a high gap dozens of meters away from the bunker. An odd creature with a fat and wrinkled body and thick fur is looking down.

It is a brown infestor. It is difficult to identify due to its dark coat and the dark environment. Of course the reverse is easy.

It had almost been discovered by Park Jin Hyuk whose body sensations are abnormally enhanced.

4 of them are stuck to each other. The brown infestors had followed the force all the way here by their scent. But there is a problem.

There are too many enemies. They may not be able to make rational decisions like humans do, but they have instincts as mutants.

They know that these humans wearing strange shells have considerable power. The infection pocket had shared the knowledge it received from the brown infestor with them.

The 4 contemplated. If they become adults and emerge, they can fight somehow. But it is impossible to do with these weak bodies.

Average infestors cannot divide or create offspring at will. The only species capable of that is the infection pocket. This is similar for the brown infestors.

Brown ones can create the average and brown infestors, but they are born without the reproductive function which makes it so that they cannot breed.

If infinite breeding had been possible, would the level 4 infection pocket have created just the 4 of them? They can be expressed as the body and alter ego.

The brown infestors each used a small amount of nutrients and created offspring.

There are 20 of just the brown species. They found the path to penetrate the bunker, but they are too big to enter. They will need to send these instead.

The offspring scatter. They need to go into the bunker, find a host, and quickly open the door. After, the main bodies will take care of the rest.

\*\*\*

The bunker is calm among the unrest regarding the parasites. 316 of the 20,000 people who had been frozen in sleep had survived, for a survival rate of 1.5%.

Normally? There had been about 250,000 people on board the ark. Calculating with this as the basis, it is lowered from 1.5% to around 0.12%.

It is not annihilation, but it might as well be. Even though it happened 4 years ago, they remember the events as if they happened yesterday so they cannot help but be nervous.

“Hee hee! We’re all going to die!”

“I want to die!”

Park Jin Hyuk pitied the survivors. Is that really living? There is no difference from being dead. Their families became hosts and ripped people apart to eat them?

It is pure hell. Pure hell. There are not even 100 people who are completely sane. It is to the point where they cannot lead normal lives in society.

The force was designated to an area where it is easy to manage the survivors’ dormitories.

Seeing them all together, it is more like looking at a mental hospital. Without exaggeration, there is even someone who is smearing feces on the wall.

“Grandma, would you like to take a walk?”

“Yeah yeah!”

A young man takes the old woman’s hand and goes. He looks to

be her grandson.

The grandmother's condition is not good. It is confusing whether she has Alzheimer's or if she has gone crazy. The young man takes glances at Park Jin Hyuk and keeps their distance. He seems to be scared.

He must be since Park Jin Hyuk caught the parasites without fear. Park Jin Hyuk did not really pay attention either. In situations like this, other people are just borders.

The party that the government left behind split into pairs to watch the bunker entrances. The soldiers either supported them or guarded other spots.

Half of the dorm is at attention. There is nothing that takes priority over life.

“I need to rest too.”

He dropped out of working the guard. He cannot sleep because he would feel bad to the force. He needs to sharpen his blades to take on whatever it is that could come at any time.

\*\*\*

The offspring use all of their strength. They are smaller than millets, but it is not easy for them to enter. A wall made of concrete and steel is blocking the front.

After struggling through the passageway that the main bodies discovered however, they succeeded in entering. It was a tank that changed rainwater into drinking water.

They had targeted the tiny openings in the filter.

The offspring were cooped up in a corner and moved together. They are in such a hidden place that no one would be able to see them unless they were explicitly looking for them.

“Grandma, just wait a little. We’ll be able to go back to how it was before.”

The offspring stop moving. A living being suitable for infection is approaching. There are 2 of them. They are moving camouflage without the need to die.

The offspring jumped onto the clothes of the man and old woman, digging through their skins. Though they are small, there is bound to be pain since they are ripping through the skin.

The man pulled up the clothes from his side because of the pain. A red patch had formed as though he had popped a pimple. The grandmother was still blank as though she had not felt anything.

“No..... no!”

The man's face turned blue. It couldn't be? It cannot be. It could not be the aura of the infection he saw 4 years ago. This is a dream. A nightmare.

The surprised man's thoughts are paralyzed. The offspring went up to his brain, took in the nutrients, grew sharply in size, and took over the brain.

It happened within moments. His grandmother showed similar symptoms. It is the transition into an infection host.

The change happened in a quiet place, silently. The offspring paced the progress as slowly as they could so that the bodies could not show rejection.

10 minutes passed. The hosts open their eyes. The man is all set up to become a mutant at any time, but it is not working on the grandmother.

The cells that configure the body have aged and are on the verge of rotting. They had infected her because they were in a rush, but she is unqualified.

They would need to use her as a place to hide until they find a healthy host to move into.

18 offspring hide themselves amicably inside the host.

Inside the man, 1 of the offspring fuses with another. The

offspring's limit is level 2, but they can become level 3 if they fuse.

They are becoming adults. It is something that they cannot do without a host, so they need to find infection targets to suck the nutrients out of them.

The hosts walk. They know where the infection targets are. They need to get the main bodies inside the bunker. To do that, they need strength.



# Chapter 96

---

Another victim changed into a host. The offspring did not get greedy and only took a minority. Like this, they went from 2 hosts to creating 5 more.

They had eaten the old woman up a long time ago. She is useless because she is so old. The offspring fused 2 into 1, so they became a total of 3 adults.

“What are you doing here?”

“Go back.”

When the hosts approached the bunker entrance, a few soldiers tried to stop them. Their goal is to open the door, so there is no reason for them to stop. The atmosphere is becoming cold.

The party made up of Lifers came with their flamethrowers and had the soldiers go back. It could be that they are crazy and unable to speak, but they have a feeling.

“This.”

“I’m getting a bad premonition. If you come any closer, I’ll cook you.”

A party member turned the flamethrower on. A red flame flicked

out and grazed the floor. Did they feel threatened? They stopped.

Keureuk!

Their eyes meet and they get a feel for each other. The party members that they are hosts, the hosts that they have been caught. The actions to take after?

Wiing!

A soldier did not think and rang the siren. It is an emergency. Hosts entered the bunker. The party members prepared for battle as well.

“Why now?”

“There are few of them.”

They had been crept up on, but it is not a desperate situation. It does not seem like the inside has been compromised. If it had, there would have been chaos. There are just 3 of them.

“Too too!”

“Infestors!”

“Get down!”

The host that spit out 14 brown infestors sheds the human. The sound of bones breaking with the body twisting in a bizarre manner.

“That!”

“Level 4!”

The party members stutter. It is similar to the level 4 parasite that they had fought in sleeping room 1. The only difference is that it is a bit smaller.

The party members avoided the infestors with their enhanced senses, but the soldiers could not do the same. 7 hosts are going through transition.

“Fry them!”

Bang!

1 of the 3 hosts that completed transitioning first got to the party within seconds, and hit a member’s stomach. He went rolling back as though flying from the incredible strength.

He avoided instant death with his metal armor, impact tights, and body modification.

9 people launched their flamethrowers. The survivors started screaming from the dorms after detecting the noise. They have recalled their nightmares of the past.

A long and sharp tentacle licks out like a sword. The party members focus and run around to avoid it. From experience, it is just under level 4. It is a level 3.

“Damn it! Hey! Are you dead?”

“Ugh! Shut up!”

The party member who had been hit by the host rubs his stomach and joins the formation. At the same time, the 7 hosts completed their transition.

“It’s 10 to 10.”

The number of hosts and the number of party members is the same. The problem is quality. The quantity might be the same, but there is a huge difference in level. These people cannot win against level 3 mutants 1 to 1.

On top of that, one of the party members is a medic. He falls behind in battle. They are on a hinge.

“Did you radio in?”

“It’s frozen.”

A characteristic of the ark makes it so that their radios do not work once they reach a certain distance. To put it simply, getting support is a wish that will only come true in their dreams.

“The bunker isn’t safe either. How did they get in here?”

Bang!

The hosts were about to turn to look at the noise behind them when they fell back from an incredible force from the front.

“You?”

“You, you did that in one hit?”

“Ah. You guys don’t mind me and guard the bunker. From what the hosts are doing, it looks like they’re trying to open the door.”

Park Jin Hyuk does not undermine mutants. He has seen and experienced too much to do that. He needs to accept these as a type of extra-terrestrial intelligence as well.

Kyak!

“Huh? I hit them with all of my strength, but they healed

already? So you're level 3?"

He had hit with his foot, covered in a metal armor made of steel. And that was with all of his strength. If it had been a level 1 or 2, it would have died instantly.

"Shall we play?"

Papat!

Park Jin Hyuk holds the Head Hunter and withdraws. He provoked the hosts. Just 2 of them follow him. He is just a snack.

"You guys can't."

Tang tang!

Park Jin Hyuk avoids attacks from the tentacles and brought in the attention of more of them. Then, 3 more that had been attacked ran at him. There are 5 now.

5 level 3 mutants. He needs to face them properly to find out if it is too much or not, but there is nothing he can do even if it is too much. If he cannot do it, they all die.

The hosts fight and try to break the entrance. Park Jin Hyuk's prediction was correct. They are not the main body, but the alter ego. The main bodies are outside.

‘Listen well. Parasites have their own shapes, so it was difficult to figure out their levels even in the virtual version. There is one distinction.’

It is what Cha Jun Sung had told him. The ability to infect is a basic ability given to the race, but only the main body is allowed to breed.

The 10 level 3s creating a mess right now are alter egos, so they cannot breed. That means that if they kill them now, they are putting out an imminent fire.

“Guard the entrance and take them on 2 people to 1! Soldiers, please support! Ugh! They can’t get the entrance open no matter what! Then it’s all over!”

The party members avoid the hosts while taking action to show that they understand.

Even if they do not say it, they will put their lives on the line to fight. Their only choices are to kill the 10 or to hold out until the force returns.

While the bunker was battling the infection hosts, the restoration team was reaching the main system at the stem. There were no mutants on their way there.

Not even 1 had come out. Is this really an advance mission? It is

falling flat. They are just tense without the appearance of stimulating factors.

However, this is because of Cha Jun Sung's party. If it were not for that party, they would have experienced incredible damages with the level 4 that appeared in the beginning.

‘The difference with Slayer's Prison and Dead Ark – a hidden motive?’

With nothing to do, he just has more straying thoughts. It is pretty good for passing the time.

Cha Jun Sung thought deeply. Could it be that the location decided on by helpers is calculated not just by difficulty but also by potential? It is entirely possible.

There were almost 20,000 of the parasites that they encountered in the freezers. What if they had turned the freezer system off by ignorance and hatched them?

Since they are like a germ-like species, they would have spread in the blink of an eye.

If they had not handled it, a festival would have opened. An infection festival. It is the same with the source that they have not yet found, but the points could have also been decided with the risk factor in ind.



It is the same reasoning for Slayer's Prison. A special mission had been superimposed, making it a level D advance mission. Regardless of how strong a Destroyer is, there was just 1.

If they went with the force that entered the ark, it would have been completed within moments. Measurements of mission points are not absolute, but relative.

Slayer's Prison was matched to Cha Jun Sung's group to give them that many points. Looking at the mission alone, it is hard to say that it is worth 20,000 points.

Thinking about it like this, there has to be something to the Dead Ark where 100 people have entered for a formal advance mission. Whether it is a potential risk or another.

“Are we far?”

“We're almost there. Since this is the 4th floor, we just have to go down 3 floors.”

The Lieutenant responds to Han Chang Jin's question. The main system is not at the top where they can see the panoramic view of the fairway, but under.

The ark was created to separate as a submarine in the case of an emergency. They had not been able to do this 4 years ago because their path was blocked.

Going without any obstacles, they went down 3 floors in less than an hour. The path is complex. If they did not have someone escorting them, it would have taken them days.

“This is it.”

A simple door blocks the party. The Lieutenant approaches the door.

Beep beep.

The automatic functions were off so everything had to be done manually, but the Lieutenant did what he needed to without complaints. The main system will soon be restored.

How much does he anticipate this? The ark that had been taken by parasites 4 years ago is being returned to human hands.

[Manual code entry. Auxiliary power operated. Headquarters will be opened in 10 seconds.]

Is the main system in the headquarters? It is a fitting term.

The door opened and they saw everything in the room. It is like a spaceship cockpit. There are hundreds of computers alone, and all types of things.

The Lieutenant went up the stairs. It is obviously the central

hub.

“I will begin now.”

“Yes.”

The Lieutenant took out 5 strange cards from the backpack he brought. They are the captain and lieutenants' recognition cards, that would be able to recover the main system.

He is not the captain. He can turn on the main system with his authority, but he cannot take over the position as captain on his own.

The captain and lieutenants each have a card, so they can override the captain if a majority are in agreement. Fortunately, he had gathered 5 of them.

3 cards were lost. He had not been able to find the lieutenants' bodies.

There is strong security on it, but he can release it. If he can authenticate that the cadres were killed, it comes over naturally.

-[Fingerprint and eye recognition, 100% match! 3rd Lieutenant Andre Gordon confirmed! Main system operation. Restoring the authority of commander.]

“The captain and 5 lieutenants died. I want to receive succession of the title.”

The Lieutenant entered the 5 cards. The main system identifies the cards.

-[Main system down 4 years 3 months 21 days. Tracking card location.]

While the setting was being completed, it went into tracking. The computers turned on and started to split. They are the thousands of CCTVs that surveil the ark.

-[2nd, 5th, and 6th Lieutenants' cards location confirmed in engine room. Bizarre alien creature found.]

“That’s!”

“Infection pocket!”

# Chapter 97

---

The CCTV shows them the engine room. In the room, there is an infection pocket as big as a truck that seems to be sleeping. They can guess that it is the source.

Woong!

The hidden CCTV turns around the area. It is a tomb of bones. The location tracking of the lieutenants is received from inside. Their deaths are confirmed.

“The engine room is near the broiler. It is far from headquarters.”

“Can we reach the search party on the radio?”

“We can because that much is under my authority. I will connect you.”

The ark always has a firewall in activation in order to prevent enemies from tracking and hacking. That is why their radios had not been going through smoothly.

[Bizarre alien creatures and intruders in bunker 2. Battle engagement among soldiers.]

The main system checks everything that happens on the ark with

ease. It may have some shortcomings, but it is like looking at the helpers on their PDA.

The main system must find the presence of the force uncomfortable, because it calls them intruders. More than that, the term 'battle' is disconcerting.

Bang bang!

The image of Park Jin Hyuk and the party members fighting in a craze shows up on the bunker CCTV. The soldiers are ridden with fear and barely giving their support.

“Crazy!”

Cha Jun Sung yelled. Park Jin Hyuk is taking on 5 mutants by himself.

Even still, he is engaged and the fight is tight. They seem to be level 3. The party members are also fighting in pairs, but they are being overwhelmed. It is a fragile balance. The side that breaks is the side that loses.

“Hurry up and check CCTV number 17, and go through with the succession! And bring down the firewall!”

The Lieutenant urges the main system. Identification is required in confirming death. He took the cadres' bodies to the bunker and left them where they are clearly visible.

[The Captain and 1st and 4th Lieutenants confirmed to be dead. 7th Lieutenant alive. Title succession following guidelines. Colonel Andre Gordon, you are the captain of the ark.]

Woong!

The firewall has been brought down. The radio where they had only heard noise, becomes clear.

[Search party, respond. Can you hear me?]

Han Chang Jin rushes to radio in to the search party. It is a dangerous situation.

[Huh? I can hear you. So you've recovered the main system.] [The source is in the engine room. We expect it to be a level 4 infection pocket, and it is as big as a 3-ton truck. And the bunker is under attack right now.] [The bunker!] [The only thing caught on the CCTV is the infection pocket. Can you take care of it?] [We can do it if we have Hercules. Support the bunker.]

“We need people to guard this place, so I will stay here with 1 party. 3 parties will go back to the bunker. The path will be described through the CCTV.”

They had come through it, but it was so complex that they could not remember it after one time. They need to capture the engine room and they need to protect the bunker. Everyone became busy.

“Main body!”

“No! It’s the same as what we saw in sleeping room 1! If it infects, that’s a level 4!”

Cha Jun Sung ran. Koharu and Kyoko followed him as well. The party members were torn, but they also followed suit when Han Chang Jin sent the signal.

[I will tell you the path. Go left at the first crossroads..... Then right.]

Han Chang Jin and the other party members let them know the paths to the bunker and the engine room. The situation flowed quickly. The interest inside went to that side.

“Ack! It’s war! It’s a war with parasites! We need to annihilate them!”

The Lieutenant had a smile of madness. He input the commands he could not understand from Han Chang Jin’s group and manipulated the dusty machines.

They continued this boring work for several hours.

[Captain approval. Route reset. Pass destination. Operate engine.]



The route twists.

Bang!

Park Jin Hyuk was hit by a strong force and almost fell, but extended his arm to break his fall. He left without delay.

Kyak!

4 hosts will not stop following him. They cannot reproduce, but they cannot have peace of mind. The body died and it came out of the brain to try to infect him.

He killed 2 of them with concentrated attacks. When he fired the Head Hunter at the heart and brain, a brown parasite came flying out of its mouth as though spitting.

Kyak!

Puk!

When Park Jin Hyuk heard a scream from closeby, his eyes became overcast. A party member whose arms and legs are broken, is wriggling on the floor.

‘So they don’t kill.’

The infestors can only take over living creatures. They only wound the party members and kill the soldiers. They are keeping the outstanding candidates for infection alive.

On Park Jin Hyuk's side, he is at an advantage. It is hard, but he can get the other 3 if he fights without stopping. The problem is the other side.

They are being pushed back significantly. 5 of the party members are wounded and half of the soldiers are dead. Did they die while fighting? No. Most of them died while running away.

4 hosts died and 6 are left. It would be good if the search or restoration teams would send them support, but how would they know to send help?

[Jin Hyuk, can you hear me?] [Jun Sung?] [The main system has been recovered and the radios work. Are you okay?]

Park Jin Hyuk brightens up. Luck has not abandoned him.

[3 parties are going back to the bunker. Give us 30 or 40 minutes. Don't let them get out since there are 4 level 4 brown infestors outside!]

He gets goosebumps. He had been expecting it, but to think that there are 4 level 4 brown infestors. If they get through, this becomes hell. It is annihilation for the 3 parties coming in as well.

“He said 40 minutes at the most? We’ll be able to hold out if I keep it up.”

The chance of winning is decreasing, but he can do it if it is withstanding it and not trying to win. Even if the party members and soldiers all die, he can hold out for that time.

“Ack! Don’t come!”

One of the infestors that can move freely, is making a fuss among the soldiers.

It is like a wolf among sheep. The party members were fighting with 2 and could not give support. Park Jin Hyuk was also held back by 3 of them.

“There’s nothing I can do. If I overdo it and die, it really is the end.”

He cannot gamble with hundreds of lives including his own in order to save a few people. He feels sorry. They need to be sacrificed for the many.

“I’m going to live!”

One of the soldiers lost his sanity when he saw a colleague being eaten up by the infestor. As he kept going backwards, he got blocked in a dead end.

But that dead end happened to be the bunker entrance. There is nowhere to run. An infestor approaches him from the front and the only way out is there.

Kik!

Kwajik!

Everyone's thoughts stopped. It happened absurdly and stupidly. The soldier had nowhere to run, so he opened the bunker door and ran out.

Then, the 4 infestors that were waiting outside took over the soldier.

“Get away from the entrance! Get the party members and everyone get back! Hurry!”

Before getting angry, he gets a hold of the situation. If he cannot turn it back, he needs to at least prevent the infection. Even a level 4 brown infestor is just a bug.

Tang tang tang tang.

Park Jin Hyuk fired the Head Hunter. He is trying to provide cover until the party members drag the wounded away. But the infestors prevented this.

“Get away!”

He kicked at the infestors that were trying to attack from the back. He used that rebound to attack the ones on either side as well.

Even then, he did not take his eye off of the Head Hunter’s scope.

‘This is tiring. My stamina is falling too quickly. I won’t be able to hold out for long.’

Fighting level 3 infestors and 4 brown infestors at the same time takes an inexpressible amount of concentration.

He was already tired, but going through psychological warfare exhausted his mind and body. The party and soldiers were not able to fulfill their own parts.

Park Jin Hyuk took responsibility for 90% of the battle. He is taking on the burden of the battlefield all on his own. It would not be enough even if he had 10 hands and feet.

The infestor bites Park Jin Hyuk’s shoulder with its sharp teeth. His metal armor crinkles under the force. They attack him in other places as well.

“What are you biting! You think I’ll lose to guys like you!”

He ignored the one that bit him, grabbed the one coming at him from the left by its neck, and ripped it off. He ripped the skin and brought the bones out.

“Let go!”

Tang tang!

He aimed the Head Hunter toward his shoulder and pulled the trigger. The host's head exploded into pieces and even swept the brown infestor stuck to the brain.

The one with the broken neck could not make the body listen, and searched for another body to infect. Park Jin Hyuk would not leave it alone to do so.

He picked up a flamethrower from the ground, and showered it with flames.

One that was waiting for a chance to attack, stepped out of range. It knows that the flamethrower is the most dangerous weapon to it.

“If you get farther away from me, it's only bad for you.”

Bang!

An explosive shell stuck to the host's chest and exploded. He killed all 5. All that is left are a few level 3 and the 4 brown infestors.

[You have earned 1200 points and 600 achievement points.]

It is lower class in level 3. If it had been a Slayer, even 2 would have been too difficult to handle. Their level led the victory to a 5:1 battle.

While retreating, the party members and soldiers killed 1 level 3. The situation is not good. The brown infestor avoided everything and followed him around.

“First, the brown.”

Park Jin Hyuk stopped breathing and aimed carefully. He needs to kill 1 with 1 shot no matter what. That is the only way to handle the situation quickly.

Too!

The host burning in the fire spit the infestor at Park Jin Hyuk. It is an alter ego that gave up the brain. He was not able to avoid it because his attention was somewhere else.

It had been a mistake not to pay attention to the notifications because he was busy with the battle.

Ack!

The infestor went inside the metal armor, and dug into the right hand that was trying to pull the trigger. He can feel the infestor coming up.



# Volume 4

# Chapter 98

---

Park Jin Hyuk's flesh and muscles are tougher and stronger than that of a cow. To find a comparison for something that the infestor is trying to dig through, it would be like a bullet.

Park Jin Hyuk took off the right part of his metal armor. He put the dagger he always carried with him to his armpit and cut it off.

The action was quick. A series of processes happened within seconds.

“Ack!”

There is a terrible pain is picking at his right shoulder. He does not know where he found the courage to cut it, but all he thought about was how to prevent infection.

Kyak!

A brown infestor came out through the cut. Park jin Hyuk brandished his dagger again, skewered it, and popped it with his foot.

He stumbled, but regained his balance. Body modification does not control the flow of blood. He is dizzy from losing so much blood at one time.

‘I guarantee that if I had been infected, everyone on the ark would have died.’

He is right. A brown infestor is limited to level 4, but its growth increases with the host’s abilities. It would have become a level 5.

If that happens, the mission level would have become C and it would have been a special mission.

He leaned on the center of the Head Hunter and looked at the party members. While he was being attacked, 4 of the brown infestors had secured infection targets.

“Ugh... Damn it.”

Two level 3s are protecting the level 4s for a smooth transition. He needs to prevent them, but he does not have the strength. He cannot snipe with one hand.

Park Jin Hyuk dropped dozens of bombs on the ground. He also held a fever shot in his hand. The second he sets this off, there will be a series of explosions.

“Let’s die together.”

It’s already unfair that he’s dying, but to die alone? Bullshit! He’ll take all of them with him. The level 3s watched him without moving from their positions.

Kwajik!

The hosts that have had their brains taken over by the brown infestors are starting to change. Once it is over, they will be the same as the level 4 they saw in the 1st sleeping room.

The party members despaired with the situation unfolding before them, and the soldiers were panicking.

The level 4s took their metal armors off and all looked at Park Jin Hyuk.

To kill him? They want his outstanding physical ability. The four of them conversed in the language of parasites. They are figuring out who will take his body.

One of the level 4s took a step forward. It is the one that was born the fastest of the four. They do not have a concept of order, but that is how the decision was made.

Park Jin Hyuk kicked the bombs rolling around under his feet. If he wants to widen the range of the explosions, he needs to control the distances between the bombs.

“Bang!”

Park Jin Hyuk made a sound with his mouth, and motioned with

his fingers. He meant that he would set the bombs off if they came close but surprisingly, they understood.

“They all try to use tricks.....”

The infected host circles the area with Park Jin Hyuk at the center. He cannot tell whether it is trying to observe him or if it is trying to figure out the locations of the bombs.

Kyak!

The level 4s were standing far from the bombs when they called the level 3s in.

The level 3s received their orders and approached Park Jin Hyuk without complaints. If they cannot take over him, they mean to kill him with sacrifices.

Park Jin Hyuk cannot take on two level 3s with his arm cut off.

He needs to choose between setting the bombs off or fighting, but he will be overpowered if he fights. But it would not be satisfying to only take out 2 of them by setting the bombs off.

Park Jin Hyuk crouched down. He will get at them quickly and set the bombs off all at once. If he cannot kill all of them, he needs to kill the level 4s.

-[Jin Hyuk, Jin Hyuk? Hold out for 5 minutes! We're almost there. We're just around the corner!]

Cha Jun Sung radioed in. If he is around the corner, he is just a stone's throw away. He is saying that he will arrive at the bunker in 5 minutes. But it is hard to hold out for 1 minute, let alone 5.

-[Sorry. Jun Sung, even 30 seconds is hard. I'll take these guys with me.]

-[Hey!]

“Whew!”

He had become so strong, but to die because of these guys. He is dejected. He had wanted to get past level C and go all the way to S. He did not know that he would fall at just D.

Beep!

Kyak?

At the moment that Park Jin Hyuk was about to run at them, the hosts became surprised and started screaming.

There is a high frequency sound from afar that parasites can hear though humans cannot. The infection pocket is calling its subordinates.

Bang bang!

At the call, the hosts lost interest in Park Jin Hyuk and ran to the bunker entrance. They looked to be in a rush.

Park Jin Hyuk had been ready to die, and did not understand the situation. What is this? Why are they running away all of a sudden? No – have they disappeared?

There was a reason for the hosts' behavior. This high frequency sound is a signal for danger. It means that something has happened to the infection pocket.

“I’ve been brought back from death.”

Park Jin Hyuk collapsed to the ground. He was dizzy from spilling so much blood, but he was also lacking in strength because his tension was released.

“Hey, hey! Treatment!”

“Yes.”

One surviving medic came to him with his arm. He was uneasy about it because it is an arm that the infestor had gone in and out of, but a simple test shows that the inside is clean.

Park Jin Hyuk wanted to receive treatment in the briefing room, but he decided to reattach the arm because the mission has not ended yet and it could become more dangerous.

He cannot exert his full abilities as a sniper with one arm. The medic was next to him, scanning his body and preparing for surgery.

The medic, who had been watching the battle, glanced at Park Jin Hyuk in disbelief. He had been in a crisis and had done something that no one else could have done.

It is not movement that a body that has gone through the 2nd stage of body modifications can handle.

‘I guess I can’t hide it anymore.’

His arm hurts with shooting pain. He would leave things as they come because he does not want a headache on top of that.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung was desperate. The radio with Park Jin Hyuk bothered him. He said that he can’t hold out! He said that he would take them with him! Jin Hyuk dying? This cannot be.

“Corner!”



Cha Jun Sung rounded the corner. He has superior speed, so the party was far behind him. It would be a few minutes before they catch up to him.

As soon as he turned the corner, he encountered the infection hosts that were running somewhere. There are a lot of them. The four level 4s and two level 3s that have come from the bunker.

Normally, he would have avoided them, but sparks fired from Cha Jun Sung's eyes as he was worrying about Park Jin Hyuk. Nothing would have happened to him, right? He cannot forgive them.

Cha Jun Sung took the pin out of a grenade and hit it with the Wolf Kill as if it were a baseball. The grenade flew forward and blew up.

Bang bang bang bang!

The level 4s avoided it with their unique body movements, but the level 3s could not react completely and were swept away with the debris. They are not weak though, and are still alive.

Cha Jun Sung leapt up and ran along a wall with pipes. His racing speed let him defy gravity for a moment.

-[This is Lim Si Hyun. We sent Hercules back ahead of us. It will take a long time to explain, but we embedded the engine room map in it.]

“So you guys are trying to get back to protect the force? But I don’t want to send you.”

Lim Si Hyun had radioed in. There is a limit to the human memory, so information needs to be repeated. That is why they cannot accommodate a large quantity.

A cyborg is a computer. With its capacity, nothing is impossible.

Memorizing a map is a piece of cake. The engine room is far, but Hercules can be faster than Cha Jun Sung if it turns on the booster.

-[I’m safe.]

-[Oh!]

-[I was wondering why they started retreating all of a sudden. I see it’s because of the source.]

Cha Jun Sung was relieved. Park Jin Hyuk is alive, but he cannot let the hosts go. If he sends them now, Lim Si Hyun will be surrounded.

He brandished the Wolf Kill. The level 4s step back. If they had been hit, they would have been cut in half. They are shrewd. No matter how rushed they are, they are not letting their guards down.

Kuk!

The hosts roar. It seems they are telling him to clear the path. If he were going to do that, he would not have blocked it in the first place.

Cha Jun Sung took his stance. In fighting in close quarters, he is definitely better than Park Jin Hyuk. His battle style is concentrated in that area in the first place.

“Come.”

“Jun Sung!”

Koharu and Kyoko see the hosts and their eyes widen. There are 6 of them. Of them, 4 look similar to the level 4s they saw before.

3 parties arrived behind the sisters. They were surprised by the hosts' savage construction for a moment, and then prepared to fight.

-[Master! We encountered 6 infected hosts. They are estimated to be levels 3 and 4, and they seem to be going to protect the infection pocket!]

-[We'll take care of a few of them. Let them through.]

The hosts are too powerful for Cha Jun Sung to take care of on his own.

The party members heard the radio and gently created gaps. The hosts were in such a rush that they did not even consider that it might be a trap, and ran for it.

Papat!

Two level 4s get through at the head. The rest tried to go through as well, but Cha Jun Sung blocked them. He can try to do something about the remaining ones.

“I’ll take one level 4. Don’t overdo it and fight!”

Cha Jun Sung faced a level 4. He cannot hide his body modification in this circumstance. He can take care of this now and explain later.

-[Jun Sung, where are you?]

-[Corner!]

-[I’m going.]

Park Jin Hyuk is reattaching his arm. Even if it is completely attached, he cannot use it right away, but he wants to help even if he needs to use his feet or teeth.

“Hit!”

The party members fight the hosts with the party heads' commands. Kyoko fell back with the rest of the support, and Koharu pulled out her twin daggers.

It is not a wide space so it was hard to concentrate the parties' strength, but the hosts could not find a space large enough for them to get through so their power was pretty much the same.

Woong!

As the power came back on the ark, the ceiling lights turned on one by one. They could also hear the sound of the engine being activated. Are they imagining that the ark is moving?

With the recovery of the main system, the ownership had gone into the Lieutenant's hands. Now, they need to handle the source. They will need to do their best!

# Chapter 99

---

Hercules had the booster on, but lowered its speed as it approached the corner, drifted and accelerated. It is rushing to the engine room.

The map to get there is saved in its artificial intelligence hardware. He had left to get there upon Lim Si Hyun's command to get to the engine room in the shortest time possible.

It did not go below 60-70km/hour and destroyed any obstacles in front. Like this, it was able to go a distance in a short amount of time when it would have normally taken half a day.

-[Enemy appearance! Battle mode!]

Wiing!

Hercules changed the vibrating weapon to a buster as it was running. It is more effective to crush a parasite than to cut it.

The left hand is the buster and the right is a flame thrower. The flame thrower must be used carefully. If the engine room catches fire, the ark will be in danger.

The front is blocked by a large door. Heat seeps out of it, contrary to the freezing sleeping room. It can clearly sense something inside.

Bang!

Hercules turned the buster on the door as he approached it. Its body hit the place where a deep depression was made.

As soon as it destroyed the door, the infection pocket was inside as if it had been waiting for Hercules to come.

Just as cyborgs have sensors, mutants also have senses.

-[Kill the enemy!]

When Hercules tried to lift the buster, a thick tentacle swiped at its chest. Hercules went flying back at the tremendous impact.

Bang bang bang!

Being thrown out of the room was faster than the time it had taken to go in through the doors. Hercules rolled back like a can and stopped when it hit a wall.

The infection pocket comes out of the room. It likes warmth, but it had become too hot when the engine had been activated. It needs to find a new habitat.

Hercules gets up. The impact was like that of being hit by a Destroyer. It had fallen to a surprise attack, but it can just be careful from now on.

The buster fired in shots. There was a shockwave and the air flaps. The infection pocket's stretched flesh crumples like waves.

It has hundreds of tentacles. The thickness vary with thick ones and thin ones. The thick ones generally attacked while the thinner ones were used to move the body alone.

-[Calculating the attack pattern..... Calculation complete. Tentacle-oriented monotonous attacks.]

-[Odds for battle 99.9%!]

The infection pocket's body is not suitable for battle. It was born for the purpose of breeding parasites, not to fight.

Hercules used florid movements like a boxer to avoid the tentacles. It has controlled its movements to the least.

The infection pocket produces infestors. It felt that it cannot win this way and is trying to infect Hercules, but it is of no use.

Hercules left the flame thrower on the jet function and sprayed the fire in a wide space. The fire power is low, but it is enough to burn insects to a crisp.

Wiing!



The buster changed into a fist and drove a nuclear punch into the infection pocket. It has enough power to go through steel. It ripped mercilessly through the flesh.

While embedded in the infection pocket, the fist became the buster again. If it cannot provide shock from the outside, it is using the judgement to dig inside.

Shots? Rather than a few shots here and there, it is time to make it throw up blood with one good hit. It is the quick fix for ones with vitality.

Kung!

Kyak!

The infection pocket's body expanded like a balloon and came back down. The shockwave had forced it to expand. If that much had happened to the skin, there is no need for words with the guts.

Bang bang!

Tentacles are thumping all over Hercules' body. The metal armor looks like scrap metal, but it was not able to create much impact on the body itself.

Its vitality is as long as its body is large. It only screamed with a few shots, and did not show signs of dying. If that is the case, Hercules can fire dozens of shots.

Kyak!

The infection pocket's roar of pain became a soundwave and spread far. It had been making the sounds already, but it was different this time.

It holds its fear that it really might die like this and its wishes for its children to hurry up and return.

\*\*\*

Lim Si Hyun's group had been moving endlessly when they stopped at a faint sound. It is the sound of Hercules fighting with the infection pocket.

If they want to provide Hercules with an unimpeded environment for battle, they need to find a good place to wait for the infection hosts. The amount that they can take on is 2.

There would have been a lot of damage if they had not known that they were coming, but they can reduce that damage because they know where the hosts will be coming from. They could even get rid of any damages all together.

“The party will set up a booby trap. There's no time. Finish it up within 5 minutes.”

Papat!

Lim Si Hyuk set up in a spot approximately 300 meters from the engine room. The hosts' route overlapped with theirs. If they wait, the hosts will pass by.

Claymores are a basic and they also had grenades and fever shots. One of the parties consumed a fair amount of the bombs in setting up just one booby trap.

“Um. If all of these go off, an entire part of the ark will be destroyed.”

A commander of the ark soldiers swallowed a moan. He knows that parasites are dangerous, but this is excessive preparation to catch 2 of them.

“Even the best need to be alive to do anything. There's no use if we're dead.”

Once the parasites are taken care of, the ark can be repaired at any time with the enormous amount of materials on the ark. There is enough to construct a small town.

In a situation where they might die, they cannot neglect their preparations against the enemy just because a part of the ark might be destroyed. With everything, they need to be alive to act.

Crash!

Something breaking? Cracking? The sound generated from inside is getting closer. Following that, the unpleasant sound of the infection hosts' breathing also grew louder.

“Aim!”

The party members line up. The Lieutenant also held up an SMG as a soldier.

Flame throwers are effective against parasites, but the distance is short. If they want to cause damage from afar, a gun is best.

The infection hosts that are close to 4m tall, are the essence of fear.

The party members were scared, but the Lieutenant who had experienced the nightmare 4 years ago was worse. It would not be a trauma if it were easily forgotten.

“Fire!”

Pew pew pew pew!

More than 40 guns fire bullets. Regardless of penetration, the force that pushed them back was impressive. If they had been humans, they would have become sludge.

Kyak!

The infection hosts cover their faces and rush in. The bullets do embed, but it is not to the point where they cannot see. No matter how much they fired, they only left minor wounds.

“Set it off!”

Bang bang bang bang!

The party members got down on the ground. It is a narrow, open area, so they do not have enough cover. That is why they had set up the booby trap in a place a bit higher up.

The radius of a fever shot's heat is set to 15m, but they always need to be careful because fragments from grenades and Claymores can go dozens of meters.

As long as they do not get hit from too close, the metal armor would protect them.

Kyak!

Even if they are level 4s, the damage must have been pretty severe since the bombs were fired in a small area. They were covered by fire and smoke, but it felt like they had suffered a lot of damages.

“Throw concussive shell from the head.”

Bang!

As the concussive shell went off, the fire and smoke cleared. One of the level 4s is on the ground. The other one... on the ceiling.

Too!

The infection host on the ceiling spits out infestors. Lim Si Hyuk took the automatic pistol and revolver from either side of his hips and aimed at the infestor.

Lim Si Hyuk takes position. He is Ghost Gun, who keeps the enemy in check with the automatic pistol's rate of firing while using a big hit from the revolver to kill the enemy.

Kwajik!

The host fell to the ground and started mutating. The infestor that came out of its brain grew to almost 1m and vomited hundreds of infestors.

“Party 1 and 2, infestors! Party 3 and 4, we're taking on the host!”

The party split. There is no reason to overdo it. If they just hold out until Hercules kills the infection pocket, these guys are also dead.

# Chapter 100

---

-[Captain approval. Passage reset. Destination: Tonga. Operating the engine.]

Han Chang Jin did not understand what the main system was saying at first.

It was not because he did not know the meaning. He had unintentionally skipped that the engine had been activated to reset the passage at this point and to anchor in Tonga.

These things happen. When something random occurs, people go completely blank. This was that kind of situation.

They had tried to convince the Lieutenant multiple times over time, but nothing had worked. The Lieutenant only talked about the war.

“You crazy asshole! You changed the passage! What? Tonga? That’s the infected city!”

A Navy officer is appalled and grabs the Lieutenant’s collar. The ark is going to anchor on an island that could be level C or even B?

“I’ll say it again. Support the battle in the 3 regions.”

The party members including the Navy Lifer followed Han Chang

Jin's order, watching the CCTV over Cha Jun Sung's, Lim Si Hyun's, and Hercules' fights.

The battle between humans and parasites was even, while Hercules had the upper hand. It would be over soon.

“Stop the ark.”

“To think that this is the extent of the Korean Special Forces! If we combine your power with that of the ark, we can kill all of the parasites!”

Before this, he had been hanging on to his sanity but now he had gone completely crazy. The Lieutenant completely ignored Han Chang Jin.

-[Engine start up 100% complete. It will take 30 minutes to arrive at destination, Tonga.]

The speed is on the slow side. It was stationary for 4 years, so it is going slowly to prevent any defects. The important thing is that they are moving.

“Hercules has removed the source. The battles in the other 2 areas look like they're going to end soon. General! We need to go back before a special mission is activated!”

If a special mission is activated, they will need to quit instead of just going back. It takes 1000 points to quit a level D. With a level



C, it would probably take more than 10,000.

They can run away even if they anchor at the city, but they will prevent it if they can. They need to convince the Lieutenant in any way that they can and stop the ark.

“Our mission is to restore the ark. A conquest of the city is still too much.”

“I’m the captain of this ark! Follow my orders and occupy Tonga!”

The Lieutenant would not listen. Han Chang Jin felt murderous for a second but made a great effort to push it back. After all, he is also a victim of the parasites.

He cannot pressure a patient as a soldier.

“General! The fighting has ended. There are a lot of deaths and injuries!”

-[You have earned 20,000 points.]

-[Congratulations. You have cleared level D advance mission Dead Ark. Level C missions, store, and achievement system have been opened.]

The mission was completed when the source died, but the force’s

fighting ended after more time because the infected hosts were still alive.

-[Whew! You all worked hard.]

-[That was tiring.]

The force members talked over the radio. From their standpoints, there was no rush. They can bring everything to a clean end and then go back.

Han Chang Jin was in a rush though. So were the party members at headquarters.

-[This is Han Chang Jin. Listen to me and return to reality right away!]

-[Return?]

-[What do you mean return?]

-[The Lieutenant manipulated the main system to reset the passage. The destination is Tonga! If we stay still, the ark is going to anchor at the infected city!]

-[What!]

-[What are we going to do about the survivors?]

-[If that's true, we shouldn't be worrying about the survivors. We'll have to quit the mission if we anchor there, and that'll cost a ton of points.]

One of the force members spoke with common sense, but that is not the point.

What if there is a variation and they cannot return? They would need to complete the mission or find a solution, but both are impossible for level C.

-[Hurry!]

-[Seven Stars, return. I'll see everyone back in reality.]

Lim Si Hyun represented Seven Stars. They will not be able to reverse it if they hesitate.

-[The ark is anchoring at the infected city. There is a new mission because Dead Ark has been completed! The reward points has gone up to 1.8 million.]

What? 1.8 million? This means that the mutants residing in the infected city are level 6. They can never win. There is not even a 1 in 1 million chance that they can.

-[Huh? I can't quit!]

-[Me neither!]

-[What are achievement points? They're saying we can't quit because we don't have enough of these.]

Cha Jun Sung's party realized over the radio that they need something other than the normal points in order to return. The worst scenario has happened.

\*\*\*

The atmosphere in the headquarters is heavy. Soldiers who had completed the mission were sitting on chairs everywhere with their heads on the desks.

The people related to Seven Stars and the government did not discuss their situation, but rather spent some time to themselves.

They need to draw their luck, but they could not figure out what to do.

The automatic doors opened and Cha Jun Sung entered with 2 parties of Lifers. Anyone can come and go as they please because it has been left open.

"We moved survivors to the rooms. We also took care of the

dead.”

As the situation was taken care of, the ark had found its peace again. They reassigned rooms for the survivors because the fighting had been done near the bunker.

The headquarters is where ark officials normally stayed, but it was meaningless to maintain those rules when everyone was dead.

“What about the Lieutenant?”

“We quarantined him through the Colonel who escorted us.”

They locked him in a small room temporarily. Soldiers are guarding him from outside.

They also resented what the Lieutenant had done. They thought that had been released from the hell, but they would be going back in because of this crazy superior.

“So that’s the infected city.”

“Yes.”

Cha Jun Sung is watching the CCTV. It has an external view of the ark.

A beautiful beach and wide sandy stretches. Beyond that, the faint image of a giant city. It seems to be extremely far away.

It is better the farther away it is. It means that is how far they are from the parasites.

The ark's sensors are on, so there will be a warning signal if a parasite is detected within 500m. Therefore, they are safe for now.

Cha Jun Sung looks around. There are 68 Lifers in the headquarters.

32 is the mission's final death toll. The injured were treated by medics, so they are okay for movement even if fighting is too much.

"I think everyone is here. Whew! Let's check the mission description."

When Lim Si Hyun spoke, the force members turned their PDAs on. They already checked, but it felt new every time they saw the large amount of information. And it is to a bad side.

-[Mission C: Terrain of Infection Trees] [Goal: Annihilation]

-[Description: 4 years ago, the seed that leaked into Tonga is a mixed-blood of the 16th nightmare, albeit light. Fate has been decided since they settled on this slope surrounded by the sea. Though it is the optimal environment to create an infected city,

there are disadvantages. The parasites had not had much competition before, but it had become saturated through rapid propagation. The mixed blood know that they cannot cross the sea, and became trees on their own to infect the nature. Lifers, bring down the infection tree rooted in the middle of Tonga, annihilate the parasites, and purify the terrain.] [Reward: 1.8 million points. Lucky box.]

Cha Jun Sung and Koharu, Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin exchanged looks.

More interesting material than the Terrain of Infection Trees is being discussed. It is 'a mixed-blood of the 16th nightmare, albeit light'.

It means that the boss of this place is a descendant, no matter how distant.

“Is it level 6?”

“Surely it won't have the exact characteristics?”

“They'll be similar to an extent. Even though it's a hybrid, if it really is the parent!”

If it is one of the 16th nightmares, it is a generator or parent of parasites. Parasite. King New Black. They are level 8 like Medusa and the Vampire Lord.

If the mutants they had met until now were those that had failed in evolving, the infection tree is a mixed blood born from a powerful matrix.

It must have been born from copulation with a weak mutant. If it had copulated with something of the same level, it would have been level 7 like in the virtual version.

They must not look at it lightly. This type of mutant is stronger than a level 6. That must be why the reward points have been set to 1.8 million.

It could be that starting from level C, they could be getting rid of seeds that can become great dangers instead of killing the small fish.

“As you can see, there is little chance for completion. Quitting is the only answer.”

“Master, what are achievement points? The current mission isn’t blocked. As long as we have these achievement points, we can quit right away.”

The force acted freely because there is no attack from parasites. No matter how much they repeatedly pressed the quit button, they just kept getting the response that they do not have enough achievement points to do so.

‘Normal 10,000, achievement 5000.’



Beep.

Cha Jun Sung tried pulling up the quit list. It shows the points necessary. It is a large number, but he and Park Jin Hyuk would be able to handle it.

Excluding them, no one in the force has even a single achievement point.

He would have left the mission if they were Lifers that he did not know, but these are not Lifers that he can throw away easily. Even if he does abandon them, what about Koharu and Kyoko?

He will reconsider quitting for now. The key is achievement points. Since everyone has opened level C, they can gain a certain amount by killing mutants.

Killing mutants? Will they have to go to the city to kill the mutants? They will be killed before they can kill.

‘I’ll have to tell them.’

If he reveals his secret now, there would be no surprise. Blindly hiding it does not help either. He needs to tell them what they need to do in order to survive.

# Chapter 101

---

“Achievement points..... They aren’t in levels D and E but it is a new system starting with level C where they can be earned along with normal points when killing mutants.”

Everyone looked at Cha Jun Sung. They look as if they are asking, ‘How do you know that?’. Park Jin Hyuk’s group trusted him and stayed quiet.

“I completed the advance before I entered the Dead Ark.”

Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin goggled. An advance mission between the two of them? The force members start chatting. Cha Jun Sung silenced them.

“I’ll ask the people who saw Park Jin Hyuk and me fighting. Is that movement possible with the 2nd stage of body modifications?”

“He’s right. He took on a level 4 one-on-one.”

“It’s the same for him too. Does it make sense that he took on 5 level 3s by himself?”

As the force members’ question was resolved, the puzzle pieces came together.

“I was able to fight a level 4 by myself because I have gone through the 4th stage. I’ll give you a brief explanation to help explain.”

He told them what happened in Slayer’s Prison. He excluded the information that if special missions overlap, helpers intervene.

He will tell them later if it is necessary. He does not have to list everything out for them for no reason. The force members listened to everything and nodded in understanding.

Sometimes, luck is a competence. In that sense, Cha Jun Sung is bound for success.

“As you all said, completion is impossible with this personnel and our gear. Our work is to earn achievement points.”

“Question. So you and that young man would be able to return to reality, right?”

“Yes.”

“It’s scary to even go out, but to gather achievement points? What if quitting gets blocked?”

He is right. The force members were scared to go out. A level 4 or 5 could appear. Low level and high level hunting are distinctly different.

This is level C. It is not a place that even Cha Jun Sung's party would be able to take on easily. It would not be such a desperate situation if he had the battle shoot.

“If we can't do it with the force's strength, can't we borrow power from the ark?”

“I'll tell you about that after discussing with the future colonel. Of the surviving senior figures, there aren't many who are completely sane.”

Lim Si Hyun answered the question. There is the 7th Lieutenant, but he is in a complete blank state. He stares blankly all day. Thinking back, being crazy was better.

Cha Jun Sung continued speaking and the force members asked what they were wondering about.

He told them what he knew to the best of his ability. From now on, they are not strangers. They are colleagues with the common goal of surviving.

\*\*\*

There were only 7 in positions as field officers who were in commanding levels of the ark. 2 of them are lieutenants.

The lieutenant colonel who escorted Lim Si Hyun was of the highest rank.

He must be pretty well recognized as well because the soldiers and survivors followed his lead well. He would gain the captain title if something happens to the lieutenants.

“There’s a nucleus to the ark?”

“There is but in the circumstances, it is difficult to use when it is under us. While the nucleus stopped producing, 3 100MT level ones were brought on.”

Only Han Chang Jin’s jaw dropped at this information. Cha Jun Sung and Lim Si Hyuk do not know what it means but if they set off a 100MT in Tonga, an entire neighborhood will be swept away.

The ark, anchored on the waterfront, would also be destroyed.

“Do you have fire bombs as well?”

“Of course. There is enough power on the ark to arm a legion class troop. Far below, there are even tanks, jets, and armored cars.”

“What if we fly the jet or launch fire bombs from the ark?”

People laid out several ideas. However, extreme behavior like this

brings in war. How many mutants will appear in a level C mission?

It is 1.8 million. 100,000 is the minimum and it could be far beyond that.

People who know how to use weapons need to use them. This is not an exception for soldiers. There are a lot of things to kill, but there is a limited number of people who know how to handle the weapons.

In addition, if they drag something out that makes a lot of noise, they will be letting the parasites know that they are there.

“Whew! It would be a good means to turn the ark around and head away from Tonga.”

“Would you be able to do it with your authority as a colonel?”

“If it is locked by the captain and lieutenant, not even I can do anything about it.”

3rd Lieutenant Andre Gordon. Even when he was sane, he was a selfish egoist. He only bowed his head under the blame, and he was not recognized at all.

When they brought the survivors to sleeping rooms 1 through 8 after being occupied by parasites, he had unashamedly taken sleeping room 1 because it was the safest.

He is someone who would do worse than running away, but he must have failed to do so because he had remained on the ark.

He wanted to become captain even though he had gone crazy because the ambition and authoritarian ideology embedded in him had not disappeared.

He must become the captain if he wants to make sure that others cannot rebel. Though lacking, it is possible to change the ark's route with a lieutenant's authority.

If that is the case, is it necessary to go through all of the trouble in this situation?

“It's because the 7th Lieutenant is still alive. He might be a blank slate because of the big shock he's experienced, but he was gentle, unlike a soldier.”

If the Lieutenant changes the route, the 7th Lieutenant can cancel it. He had used his head even if he had gone crazy. He had even calculated what could happen later.

“Is it a strife over the position?”

Han Chang Jin is a soldier, so he could understand most of what the colonel was saying. Not just superficially, but intrinsically. In the current circumstances, changing the route is impossible.

The mission goal is annihilation. If they use the weapons on the ark, they need to be prepared to go all the way. The parasites would stupidly fall for it a few times.

Then, they would see blood and go digging around to understand their enemy's path of attack. They will be unable to do anything if the ark is discovered.

“How constricted.”

Park Jin Hyuk had been leaning against a wall listening when he started hitting the back of his head on the wall.

It was holding them back that the ark would be anchored on the waterfront. If they were floating on the ocean, they could fly bombs at Tonga and send it off completely.

“If the 2 lieutenants die, is that power handed down to you, Colonel?”

“It's not as simple as it sounds.”

The lieutenant is just one of dozens of field grade officers who receive captain agency whenever a captain is absent.

Authority is limited. On top of that, there is a lot that they do not know regarding the ark's functions so the process of succession is extremely complicated.



“It’d be possible to pass over the 3rd Lieutenant, but that’s not the case with the 7th Lieutenant.”

The other option is to fight but reduce the use of weapons on the ark, focusing on gathering achievement points. They do not want to even think about what could come next, but it is an all out war.

“Tell the force members what we discussed here and let’s go meet with the Lieutenant. And what do you know? He might have calmed down a bit.”

It did not seem he would have, but they could not help but have expectations.

# Chapter 102

---

Cha Jun Sung was far from the type of person who was able to convince others. Thus, he left the Lieutenant to Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin. The result was a failure.

Even in a crazy state, he could calculate the pros and cons. He blocked all questions on the ark's route in advance.

The 7th Lieutenant didn't show any signs of improving either. What they knew was that it was a mental illness. They couldn't cure him with medical equipment as it was not a disease or injury.

They worked for 3 weeks to find a solution, but they were just walking in circles.

In that time, they sent a few unmanned surveillance vehicles. They wanted to see how the city looked. It floated from a high position to send the terrain to the ark.

It was devastated because it was underdeveloped and neglected. The number of infected hosts was low as well. They also could not see the infected tree. It must have been hiding somewhere.

The force members worried every day of parasite attacks but fortunately, the ark was peaceful during that time.

As time passed, the time to choose between gathering achievement points and war came closer. They could not sit there

and do nothing indefinitely.

After anchoring in Tonga, 1 month went by. Is it said that there was no such thing as chance in the world? It happened suddenly, without prior notice.

\*\*\*

A bizarre looking mutant was barely visible in the sea.

From the shadow set by the sunlight alone, its flat shape seemed similar to that of a stingray but its size was greater than multiple large whales.

It was known as invincible in the ocean, a level 7 ocean mutant – Vergon.

“Let’s go faster. If we want to warm up before meeting it, we’ll barely make it.”

Kung!

Pang!

The Vergon increased its speed. That was what the owner wanted. The water sprayed as the sound barrier was broken and there was a shockwave – a sonic boom.

If someone had seen this, they would not have realized what had just gone by. The speed itself exceeded the range of living beings.

The more interesting thing was the man who didn't stray from the center of the Vergon. The friction in the atmosphere from the speed of sound could bend iron.

The man looked as though he was just getting some fresh air and gazed at the island that showed faintly. It was Tonga, a place he had never heard of.

“It is at a cost, but to think of doing a human a favor.”

One day, a human who looked exactly like his father appeared.

The human spoke to the man. If the man listened to his request, the human would teach him the location of where a very strong mutant lived.

The man's body part changed and spat out a thick notepad. The human said that all he needed to do was deliver this to another human.

The mutant was told that the human he needed to deliver the notepad to was on the island.

Everything said was unfounded but he had gotten involved because of his father who he sincerely admired. His father accepted the human.

His father had not even shown him his attack power, but showed consensus with the human. He was jealous of this new image of his father but he had not shown it.

“If we fought, could I win?”

The man thought for a moment and then shook his head. Though it may hurt his pride, he couldn't fool himself. He might be able to wound him, but he would not be able to win.

He was a human who was not a human. Could he be described as a mutant wearing the mask of a human?

‘Go and come back.’

He remembered what his father said to him when he was leaving. He did not lose the feeling that he wanted there to be something more behind the indifferent face.

“I guess I'll know once I meet the owner of the notepad..... We've arrived.”

The man's eyes widened. It was an eerie feeling. It was so red that it looked like rubies were put in. Looking closely, he had a pair of red horns on his forehead.

Vergon slowed down. It left its body to the waves and touched on

shore.

The man got down from the Vergon's back. It had taken a few days to get here from the southern end of Asia. He had been bored seeing only blue for all of that time.

“Hang out nearby.”

Kung!

The Vergon dived deep into the ocean. It was not common in the sea. It didn't have any natural enemies in the sea, so there was no need to worry.

“Mother of parasites. Parasite King? Because it's a parasite?”

The man headed straight for the city. The human said that the Parasite King's habitat was New Zealand, but it came to Tonga occasionally.

It came to eat the infection tree's fruits once every few months.

From the man's standpoint, the fruits were not important. There were 2 things he needs to do. Fight with the Parasite King and deliver the notepad.

Kiik!

As he passed the waterfront and came closer to the city, the man could sense the uncomfortable sounds made by what he guessed were cross breeds of parasites.

“Come out, Parasite King.”

A murderous lust blew out from the man's body and he simultaneously disappeared. He intended to bother the servants until the owner of the house came out.

\*\*\*

The Parasite King, configured of a clear liquid, was eating the infection when it reacted to the murderous lust he could feel from nearby.

“What a bother.”

Gate crashers were increasing. Not too long ago, a stationary ship started moving and this time, someone was making a mess nearby.

It left the ship alone because it did not show much movement. But this situation was different. Something of a similar class had invaded its area.

This was an island. It was not a place where a mutant can come unless it had come here on purpose. They would need to meet.

Kiik.

The infection tree is smaller than most trees, and it was trembling with the sense of the murderous lust. It was scared because it instinctively knew that it was not a match for it.

The size was such that when excluding the fruits, it couldn't be distinguished from normal trees with the naked eye. It would not be detected by the UAVs.

“It's okay.”

The Parasite King pated the infection tree and picked off another fruit. Hundreds of parasites were swarming inside the pulp.

Unlike a mixed breed, it was very useful. It could be left for a while to eat.

Kung!

The gate crusher roared. It was thrilling. It was a snicker, full of confidence.

Parasite King spewed energy. It was a governing king. It would not go to look for the intruder itself. It was a given that the one with something to say would come.

The opponent tracked the atmosphere. It was coming closer.



Why had it come all the way to Tonga? It was resentful but also curious.

\*\*\*

The red eyes looked over the Parasite King. It was observing before fighting.

“Are you the king of parasites?”

“Who are you?”

“You have learned the human language... as is fitting for the king of parasites who lives off of others.”

“Who are you?”

“I’m Asia’s Red Eye.”

The man glared with his blood red eyes. The concentration thickens.

Parasite King felt a strong sense of core from the man. It was pure. There was a desire to fight without any ambition.

“Did you come this far to Tonga just to fight with me?”

“30 points.”

“30 points?”

“Fighting with you is to fulfill my desire, but I need to block you to reduce harm for him and to deliver the notepad.”

Parasite King couldn't understand what Red Eye was saying. He was not explaining anything and only discussing things vaguely, so it was a definite that he would not understand.

“I won't kill you. I just need to confirm that I'm stronger than you.”

“You're arrogant.”

Only Red Eye's father could dominate him. He had taken over all mutants. That is how he proved his bloodline.

There was no need to talk more. The Parasite King and Red Eye clashed violently. At the same time, Cha Jun Sung's group was also watching the fight from afar.

# Chapter 103

---

-[Variable generated, satellite program operated. Estimated 3 hours until confirmation.]

It is not Hercules' hard whirring. It is a notice from the 68 Lifers' PDAs.

Bang bang!

Cha Jun Sung's hearing rings. It was not just him but also for the force members in the area. They all looked to one place.

There is a smoky dust rising from what is guessed to be Tonga's downtown area. There is no smoke or flames. It does not seem to be an explosion from gunpowder.

They are far from the city, so they cannot see it even with binoculars.

They would be able to know if they send a UAV from the ark, but the force members did not get involved thoughtlessly. The helpers moved before them.

They cannot have a conversation, but they went into censorship to see if what is happening in the city will or will not have an influence on the mission.

They said something about the satellites and told them to wait 3 hours, so they were planning on doing so.

“Do you think they could be other Lifers?”

“Of course not. Missions can overlap, but entry is suicide.”

Park Jin Hyuk is standing next to him. Cha Jun Sung responds in the negative. A level C mission is of a difficulty that level D Lifers cannot complete.

Unless the limitation to the number of people who can enter is loosened and thousands of people enter, they will have to have gone through at least the 3rd and 4th stages of body modifications in order to proceed with only 100 people.

‘It doesn’t make sense.’

Cha Jun Sung is not arrogant. He does not think that the rest of the world has become stagnant or culled just because he opened up level C missions first.

Even here, there are 66 other Lifers who have opened level C. Looking at the entire world, that number would increase exponentially.

However, there isn’t a group where all 100 people can have that power. This is the same for a world federation that has just been formed and is trying to spread its wings.

‘Even if we say that they are Lifers..... We can’t exclude gunpowder.’

Humans are creatures full of curiosity. This is the same for Cha Jun Sung. If he had 2 lies, he would have gone to watch what was going on.

-[Variable confirmation complete. Fight between high level mutants. Video transmission through PDA.]

Woong!

The hologram turned on and what was happening in the middle of the city appeared. They can see 2 mutants among ruins that keep crashing into each other.

One is transparent without certain form and the other has a pair of horns, red eyes, and can change both of its arms into any shape it wants.

They clear anything that comes in the way of their fighting, even if that is a building. They moved around as they fought, and even parasites were affected by them.

Cha Jun Sung gulped and watched. The city is becoming devastated.

He is not sure, but it looks like the combat radius will surpass kilometers. Every time there is a deafening sound, a shock that goes over everything comes in under their skin.

They could be level 7 or 8. There is no special mission even though monsters that are more dangerous than a level C mission have appeared. Is it because they are far?

-[It is a battle between the Parasite King and Red Eye of the 36 nightmares. Pending rating variance. Restrict Lifers' mission progress until it is resolved.]

“What – what? If it’s Red Eye, it’s the son of warlock Aduroque!”

“The translucent jelly is Parasite King?”

“Why have monsters like that come out all of a sudden? This is joke, right?”

The force members kept asking questions, but they still have doubts. They will be left with the curiosity until the helpers resolve it for them.

They cannot figure out the intent, so they did not reject the restricted mission progression. Even if it had not been restricted, they did not have any desire to get involved.

\*\*\*

-[Those 2 are battling in Tonga... What's going on?]

Odin is taken aback. There is the slightest possibility with Parasite King. He is the absolute ruler of tropical islands including Tonga.

They cannot track each mutants' location, so it is not strange when there is a variable. Mission levels are not static, but fluid.

Red Eye however, is a level 8 mutant who should be in Asia. His being here is not just strange but impossible.

The more absurd thing is that the 2 are fighting. It makes sense for Parasite King because its territory has been trespassed on, but Red Eye is being excessive.

He has nothing to gain from this, so it does not make sense that he is putting his body into it.

-[Special cyborg – no. It'd be better to release the condition with achievement points.]

Honestly, a cyborg is just a nominal presence to a level 7 or 8 mutant. Up to level 6 is a machine's limit. Going over that is a wall that they cannot get past.

It is an attack that even destroys buildings. Anything that comes

within diameter is mercilessly ruined.

Zing!

68 Lifers' helpers read the information transmitted by satellite and found out the purpose for Red Eye's emergence, but it did not matter.

The Lifers needed to have made a decision on the mission within a controlled range. But it has become foggy with the level 8 mutants' battle.

-[It's slowly coming to an end. It doesn't seem like they're trying to kill each other, so let's just watch.]

They cannot adjust the mission level as they please. It is starting to cool off. There does not seem to be danger, so they can watch the lapse.

\*\*\*

Bang!

Red Eye goes flying at short attacks like a whip. They finally stopped moving after destroying a couple buildings. Several hours have passed since they have been fighting.

Red Eye brushes his chest off. There are vivid scars. For it to



leave scars on his body, it is as humans say, a strong mutant.

“You’ll be stronger than that whore in South America, Evil Queen’s youngest daughter.”

He hates Evil Queen. When his father stabilized Asia and became the disaster, she came to demand his seed.

When he refused, she seduced him. It is crazy.

Thus, she received the seed of the South American bone monster and gave birth to four level 8s. She had opened her legs to create a force.

The youngest daughter is the youngest of the 4, but she has no manners because she is like her mother. Anyway, Parasite King is slightly stronger than her.

“Evil Queen?”

“You don’t know? I guess it makes sense that you don’t know since you’re buried in your islands.”

Red Eye is not wrong. Parasite King is satisfied with this life. It does not know about mutant affairs and does not care to know.

“I changed my mind. It’s a waste to leave you in a place like this. Come with me.”

“I don’t want to.”

“I’ll recognize you as an equal being and give you territory. I came because of that human, but I gave to gain something too.”

Movement in Europe these days is a bit suspicious. They show signs of wanting to unite with Africa and if that happens, it is hard even for his father to handle it.

He needs to recruit useful allies. That is why Evil Queen has united with the bone monster. Asia is in the lowest ranks in terms of power.

Father is indifferent to force and taking territory. He just somehow became the power in the area because there was nothing to oppose him.

“I’m not interested.”

“This world is the law of the jungle! If you refuse, I’m going to kill you now.”

Since he changed his mind, Parasite King is a potential enemy if it does not become an ally.

Woo woo woo!

Red Eye's body became half his size larger, and he pressured Parasite King.

The eyes that look out at the world are red and the pair of horns hold up the sky. In contrast, the brown body squirms.

Red Eye resembles the devil. It is like a mutant that has achieved the highest level of evolution. There is a clear difference in his appearance from mutants of lower levels. He is complete.

Kyah!

Parasite King spits out infestors. 'There is a difference in intensity, but it is a mutant of the same class as Red Eye'.

Red Eye changed both of his arms into sharp knives, and hacked at Parasite King. It has created hundreds of millions of infestors.

Parasite King may seem immortal, but there is nothing it can do if every single infestor is dead. Red Eye could feel that every time the number of infestors decreased, Parasite King's strength was also reduced.

It is not as easy as it sounds. Even if Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk used battle shoots and worked together, they would not even be able to graze Parasite King.

This is something that is possible only when they can go beyond their opponent's abilities.

“You split the main body into pieces. Each of those infestors is you.”

If even 1 infestor lives, the Parasite King can stay alive. In terms of vitality, it is above Red Eye like a cockroach.

The battle seemed to be on even footing in the beginning but as they kept fighting, the win leaned toward Red Eye. Mutants are also living creatures, so they have the ability to learn.

He had fought the warlock whenever he had time, in order to hone his skills.

He also has abundant experience fighting with level class mutants. That is why Parasite King, who has lived contentedly, cannot win.

Parasite King's body becomes smaller. Red Eye thought that the pattern is fastidious. It is to the point where if Parasite King had a bit more experience, he would not be able to win.

Too!

“You're going to eat my body?”

A green infestor the size of a fist is cut in half. That small guy is a level 5. After that, there were repeated efforts to infect Red Eye.

If Parasite King encroaches on Red Eye, he will become a mutant comparable to a level 9. There is a way to bringing out the potential power in a living being.

“It’s the end.”

For a moment, Red Eye’s muscles inflated. A chance to attack has appeared. There was a wind pressure and in the blink of an eye, he swept by Parasite King.

The shockwave separated the air and made anything within a meters radius into powder.

At the time, a few yellow infestors dug at Red Eye’s skin.

“I’ll crush you.”

He flexed his muscles and an incredible pressure popped the infestors.

Red Eye consumed the dead infestors to make up for the energy he lost in battle. He does not need to eat them through his mouth. He is a mutant, not a human.

“Do you still need more reason to come with me? What if I say that I’ll give you the body of a strong mutant?”

Red Eye makes a deal. The same level is hard, but he can give Parasite King a body that is stronger than the one it has now. How will it come out? Will it reject the offer?

“What if I refuse?”

“I’m sure I told you earlier. I’ll kill you.”

Parasite King called the scattered infestors back. They were not even, so it called all of the infestors living on the island and absorbed them.

It is seriously wounded. The remaining strength it has is not even 20% of its normal strength. Red Eye is also wounded, but it is in a fairly healthy state. If Red Eye acts, Parasite King will die.

There is no living creature that wants to die unless it has given up on life.

“I’ll accept.”

“I’ll give you all of the Philippines in territory. I’ll move the mutants living there to a different place. I’ll give you time, so lead your subordinates and move there.”

“Forget it.”

Infestors are parasitic. If they have targets, they can get stronger.

It is better to leave them where they are instead of moving them.

“You spare your words.”

Parasite King is reserved. Infestors can be sympathetic, but they cannot communicate. They have become like this from living alone for so long.

Like people, mutants have various personalities. Not all of them are sneaky and cruel. These will not cause trouble. Red Eye has gained a great ally.

“Is that a problem?”

“No problem. It was a compliment. Since I’ve warmed up, shall I go look for him? There’s somewhere I need to go. Wait here for a moment.”

Red Eye’s body disappeared. His destination is the west coast of the shore that the ark is anchored on. It will not take a long time. It will only take a few minutes for him to get there.

# Chapter 104

---

-[Risk warning! Red Eye, tracking disabled! Special mission activation! Helper intervention! Achievement point restriction has been lifted and Lifers can return to reality!]

-[30 seconds until the 20 special cyborgs to buy time are summoned!]

They can hear alerts from the PDAs that it is dangerous. Like before, there is the notice that it will take 30 seconds for the cyborg to arrive and that they should quickly go back.

The ark's hatch is open, so the inside is wide open. If this kind of situation had not occurred, they were thinking of waging a war.

They had been hit from out of the blue while setting up firearms like fire bombs.

“Enemy confirmed!”

Hercules detected the approaching enemy and quickly changed into a booster. That action however, created a ridiculous result.

Red Eye extended his arm and brandished it. Hercules was hit and went flying 50m into a boulder. It was destroyed in one hit.

“So it's not a living creature.”



Cyborgs do not exist in this world. He can feel something hard in his hand. This is approximately the defensive of level 4. It is trivial, but something he is unfamiliar with.

“Who am I supposed to give the notepad to out of all of these humans?”

Red Eye looks at the trembling force members. It looks like there are 60 to 70 people. He slowly tried to remember what the human had said to him.

‘If you look over each person, you’ll know who to give it to.’

Will the person have a unique characteristic? He cannot give up here anyway, so he followed the instructions exactly. His eyes wavered when he saw Cha Jun Sung.

His senses are different from those of humans, so he can take a picture of a scene and look it over. He does not need to look over something multiple times to find his target.

Woong!

All of the time is used up and the special cyborgs come out of the summons gate to surround Red Eye. In this time, the force members are going back to reality.

“There’s no time to waste.”

Within seconds, the 20 cyborgs are flung off in all directions. They are of a higher level than Hercules, so they do not lose their ability to function.

That is enough. The human had said that if they have time, they will disappear.

“You!”

Red Eye uses the wings on his back and flies at Cha Jun Sung. He tried to resist, but Red Eye wrapped him tightly with his fingers and quickly disappeared.

The force members left inside could not figure out what had happened.

Ring!

As soon as Cha Jun Sung disappeared, the description for a special mission came up. It is a playback.

-[Level A Mission: Red Eye’s cavalry] [Goal: Attainment]

-[Description: Red Eye is the highest class of the 36 nightmares. He has been injured in battle with Parasite King. Find the purpose of his deal, kill him, and bring the axis down.]

-[Reward: 150 million points. Lucky box.]

-[Level B Mission: Fallen king] [Goal: Attainment]

-[Description: Parasite King lost to Red Eye and has been wounded. It took the deal in order to save its life and will soon be moving. It is one of the 36 nightmares, and this is your chance to kill it.]

-[Reward: 30 million points. Lucky box.]

2 missions were produced and there are nesting special missions. The force members identified the substance of level A and B. They are horrible difficulties.

It is 180 million points in catching 2 mutants that are not in their best conditions.

How many points would it have been if it had been their homeground and they had been healthy? As the mission description says, this is their chance to kill them but the force members do not have the ability to do so.

“Jun Sung!”

“No!”

Kyoko holds Park Jin Hyuk back. Cha Jun Sung had been dragged away by a level 8. She understands that he wants to chase after them, but they do not even know where they have gone. They disappeared in the blink of an eye.

If they go in without preparation and are discovered by the parasites, they will not be able to make it out alive.

“Let go!”

Park Jin Hyuk is in a craze. Hercules has fallen and does not move at all.

-[It is okay.]

“Zephy?”

-[It does not seem like Red Eye is trying to kill Cha Jun Sung.]

Helpers can see what is happening in real time through the PDA. It looks like Red Eye wants to talk. They will be able to see in detail soon.

“How can I trust you?”

-[There is no way to prove it.]

By that time, most of the force members had gone back. They had been trapped for 1 month. They thought that if they missed the opportunity, they would die or be trapped forever.

When Park Jin Hyuk was about to say something, cadres including Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin walked toward him. They had stayed in place of sending the force back.

Too many things had happened to the force at one time. Unprecedented things irrelevant to the mission had jumped out at them and there was not a single thing that they could understand.

Now, there are not even 10 Lifers left inside. Lim Si Hyun went back to where the Lieutenant Colonel is, saying that he would explain to the survivors what is going on.

They feel bad for leaving the survivors behind, but they are not people from this world.

\*\*\*

Red Eye changed the structure of his back to that of a bat and headed straight for a distant cliff. He held Cha Jun Sung in his left hand.

Cha Jun Sung felt the chilly wind and looked down. It is dizzying.

If he falls while next to the cliff, he can stop while falling but if Red Eye throws him far like a pebble, he will die.

Even with body modifications, humans do not become birds so they cannot fly.

Red Eye sets down on the peak. They are high enough that the large ark seems small, but it had taken 2 or 3 breaths to come up.

Cha Jun Sung was flung away and he rotated in the air to find balance. Red Eye watched this carefully.

‘Unbelievable.’

They do not simply look similar. They have different natures, but his father, the human, and this man – the 3 of them are carbon copies.

What could be the connection between these 3? Red Eye does not know the details of the situation either. Father and that human only told him to relay the notepad.

While he was locked in his thoughts, Cha Jun Sung pointed the Wolf Kill at him. Facing a level 8 nightmare. It really is a nightmare.

At this, Red Eye came back to his senses. All he has to do is do what he was asked to do.

“A stick? Is it a toy?”

“It’s a weapon to slash your throat with. Why have you brought me to a place like this?”

Red Eye looks at the Wolf Kill. He became curious before he could get to the point. Looking carefully, it is similar to what that human has.

He remembered the blow that had cut his arm off.

“Hit me.”

“What?”

“I’m telling you to hit me with this stick of a weapon that you have such confidence in.”

Red Eye motions across his neck with his finger. Cha Jun Sung watched.

Arrogance is poison. If by some chance he is able to kill Red Eye, he will be gain an overwhelming amount of points. The reward points alone are 150 million.

It is worth a try when he includes the basic points that come from level 8.

His thinking was short. Cha Jun Sung turned the vibrating

weapon on and flew. He is a stone's throw away. He will cut in one try. If he lacks the strength, he will hit multiple times.

The Wolf Kill had small vibrations and cut Red Eye's neck.

A hard repulsive force goes through Cha Jun Sung's hand as though hitting a bat against a wall. He lets go of the Wolf Kill. It feels like his hand is going to fall off.

"It's garbage."

It does not even leave a scratch. They only look the same and Cha Jun Sung does not have even 1% of the power. They have only wasted time. He will have to just do his job.

Red Eye turned off his main body and vigilant state, and went back to humanoid form. His muscles and skin took on the form of clothing and changed into a pleasant state.

High level mutants were like that in the virtual version, and they are the same in reality.

"Let your guard down. If I was going to kill you in the first place, I wouldn't have done something so bothersome. It would have been easy to kill everyone on the spot."

Cha Jun Sung thought that this is right. Red Eye is level 8. 20 special cyborgs had not been able to do anything to him.



“I’ll be direct. Are you Cha Jun Sung? From a different world?”

“How – how did you know?”

“Level C mission Infection Tree. That’s the name of the mission here, right? I knew you would be coming. If you hadn’t come, most of those people would have died.”

Red Eye, a mutant, knows what Life Mission is. Cha Jun Sung was curious as to why he was brought here. What secret did he have to tell him?

“I’ll only tell you what I know.”

Red Eye opened his mouth. Anchoring the ark at the infected city was a decided procedure and it was said that Cha Jun Sung and the force members would eventually go into a mission.

The variable however, is that Parasite King was in Tonga. The normal scenario of this battle is that only a few Lifers survive.

Therefore, it means that Red Eye already knew that Cha Jun Sung would be coming here to Tonga. A mutant had prevented a Lifer’s tragedy?

Red Eye took the notepad from his body and threw it to Cha Jun Sung.

“I don’t know the details either. I just got a request from someone.”

“This.....?”

“What you want to know is written in there, though I’m sure it’s not everything.”

Cha Jun Sung opened to the first page of the notepad while watching Red Eye. It is quite clean, but it is visibly old.

The weird thing is that the handwriting is strangely familiar.

He flipped it without much thought. But he could not do so with the content. How could this be. What does this all mean? Is what Red Eye is saying true?

“I’m sure you have a lot of questions. If you want to know that, you’ll have to hone your skills and go to father. He knows much more than I do.”

Red Eye’s father. If they follow Life Mission’s story, does that mean that Aduroque, the warlock of the 6 disasters is behind this?

The world is becoming tangled in a complicated manner. Where is this place and where is the earth? What about the mutants? The helpers? This notepad? There is only what he does not know.

“What on earth are you guys?”

“That’s what I want to ask. Lifer? What right do you have to hunt us? I’m sure you’ll come to me one day. I’ll be waiting.”

Mere humans are coming at him with their teeth bared. He will annihilate them as they come.

‘Level A.....’

At the moment, it is a difficulty that they cannot approach. How many years need to go by?

If they want to get to level A missions, they need to get through B and C. The obstacles in each level are a way to advance. There are 2 left. The future looks bleak.

“I’ll give you a gift, from me. Think of it as an honor, you lowly human.”

“A gift?”

“Parasite King absorbed all of the infestors living in Tonga in order to heal its wounds. At this time, there won’t be any left.”

Red Eye left those words and spread his wings to go to the city center. Since there are not many left, Cha Jun Sung can do as he

pleases whether he takes care of them or runs away.

Cha Jun Sung put the notepad in his space compression bag. He will have to go back and look at it.

“..... Let’s go down.”

A cliff was waiting for Cha Jun Sung.

# Chapter 105

---

It happened once a good amount of time passed after Cha Jun Sung returned to reality.

Over 1 month, Parasite King gathered all parasite kin in New Zealand together, and migrated to Asia and Red Eye. Migrating was not difficult.

There are thousands of abandoned boats on a perished island. None of them are in use, but it was easy to operate them because they were not damaged.

Warlock gladly welcomed the new members to his family, but Parasite King felt like it had been stripped of its soul the second it laid eyes on him.

Even with the knowledge it gained while absorbing humans, it could not think of the words with which to express Warlock's presence. Warlock is a true supernatural being.

If Warlock is like that before awakening, he will be a monster capable of overturning the heavens once awake. It is difficult to believe that there are 5 other mutants like him.

On top of that, Parasite King heard that there are dozens of mutants on its own level on 6 continents. As Red Eye said, Parasite King must have been trapped on a small island.

Red Eye gave the Philippines to Parasite King as promised. He has the authority to do that much. Warlock does not have interest in land.

The Philippines will be noisy until the parasites completely settle in, but it is the law of the jungle. It is a given that the weak are taken over and eaten.

That is that and since he has taken care of the favor, Red Eye must tell Warlock what happened.

\*\*\*

“Is that so.”

“He was so weak that I couldn’t tell why you and that human are so worried about him. A weak human – he couldn’t even match up to the guards in our territory.”

Warlock laughed bitterly as he listened to his son’s report full of thorns.

A weak human. If he had not been infected with the virus and had not succeeded in evolving, he would have been an existence worthy of that same expression.

“Did he look like me?”

“Yes. It’s just that he looked more like the human form of you than you as a mutant.”

Red Eye looked at the human leaning against the wall. They are similar, but the human resembles the man more in nature.

The difference in species. No matter the rhetoric, there is a difference in the essence between species.

“You can go now.”

“Yes.”

Red Eye bowed and went outside. He could not understand his father whenever he came here. It is a small house.

He is left wondering because his father will not tell him why he sticks to this house.

“Is it done?”

“Yeah.”

A human wearing a strange machine armor spoke,

“I still can’t believe you.”

“Is the proof I showed you not enough? I think I showed you plenty.”

“I can believe that you, him, and I are the same. I can’t believe this all happened because of that and that we were all acting under someone else’s hands.”

“Is it pride?”

“I’ll just say that it is. But you, how is that you came here? If it is as you say, doesn’t your existence distort the balance?”

To Warlock, the human in front of him is an alien existence. He just believes that they are the same from the strength and evidence that he showed him.

“As someone who has gone almost to the end of Life Mission, I can only curse.”

“For example?”

“Shall I say it goes around and around? It’s even questionable whether there is an end. Living for hundreds of years, the only thing I gained is strength.”

Everyone left his side. He does not have any colleagues or friends.

Starting with level B, it really is a living hell. Of course levels A



and B would be easy in his current state, but everything is relative.

“Are you saying that you’ll change his future?”

“My future has already been decided to be in the gutters. I can’t reverse it. I’m sure he won’t change either, but I’d like to give him a good environment.”

If he could, he would like to make Cha Jun Sung give up Life Mission. But it has been a long time since Lifers have become slaves. Him in that time and him in that place.

He cannot quit it. It is a drug. If they just fight mutants, they can get what they want. He is someone from a distinctly different world, so he needs to keep his distance.

“So what is it you want to tell him by giving him that paper?”

“To protect.”

“Protect?”

“If he can’t quit, to protect himself and his friends instead of regretting it later like I did. That’s what I want to tell him.”

“It would have been easier to tell him yourself.”

That is true. If he had told him himself instead of sending Red Eye, his message would have been delivered clearly. They would also have been able to form a consensus.

“I can’t do that. If I get too involved, it’s not good for either of us.”

“I can’t understand.”

“Why? I’m you and you’re me. You really don’t know why I’m doing this?”

Warlock interprets the man’s words. If it had been him, what would he have done?

“Do you want him to do it himself?”

“Similar.”

“Alright.”

“Anyway, this house. It’s been a while.”

“Don’t you have one too?”

What good is it if he has one? He cannot go back. He had gone against his helper and countered time and space. He cannot stay

anywhere because time has been tangled into a mess.

There are a lot of unfamiliar words to Warlock. But he kept note of each one in his head. Even if they are in pieces, they might come into use someday.

“Since you’ve gotten the notepad to him, what’s the next plan?”

“I had several colleagues. If Red Eye had not gone to infection tree this time around, Koharu and Kyoko would have died.”

He cannot express in words the loss he felt at the time. It was really horrible.

“I met Lifers I worked well with after that, but they died in levels B and A as well. Jun Hyuk, the first person I met and who made it to the end -”

Cha Jun Sung’s eyes become sad.

“Level S mission..... He died in the Evil Queen raid. In my place.”

“The whore of South America.”

“Hah! I didn’t know you would use such a word. We’re the same but the environments we grew up in are different, so you have a heavier personality.”

“It’s just offensive.”

“I thought you would win because you’re the opposite. But you’re stronger than you were when you fought in the game. So this time, I’m going to fight more carefully.”

Warlock narrowed his eyes. He found the hidden meaning in the man’s words.

“You’re thinking of killing her.”

“Yeah. I’m going to kill her before she goes looking for a Cha Jun Sung living in another world.”

“She has 4 children next to her. Work with me instead.”

“I don’t want to.”

“Why not?”

“It’s been a long time since I came to be by myself so I wouldn’t need to live anymore. If I work with you, the chance of my surviving only increases. I need to be in an extreme situation to become more earnest.”

“Crazy.”

“It’s spitting in my face.”

Cha Jun Sung straightens his back from the wall. It is time to go. A battle shoot overbooster moves over him completely like a muscle.

“You won’t see me again.”

This is Asia. It will be a long journey to South America.

“I’d like it if you died if you can. If that happens, I’ll become much more comfortable.”

“I’ll try.”

Cha Jun Sung sweeps the wall and gets on the road. It is Warlock’s house, but it is also his own house. This is a feeling that he wants to cherish for as long as he can.

“He’s gone.”

Cha Jun Sung disappeared from Warlock’s senses. He came and went like the wind, but Warlock did not have the human feeling of sorrow.

“It’s annoying that I’m playing into someone’s hands.”

A terrifying energy shakes the area. It could become an endless race like a watermill as Cha Jun Sung said.

“I’m sure it’ll be revealed one day if we wait and see.”

The Cha Jun Sung of this world speaks in a similar manner to Cha Jun Sung of another world.

# Chapter 106

---

There is an environmentally friendly park connected to the luxury housing complex that Cha Jun Sung lives in, and it receives fees from outsiders who want to enter.

Unlike open parks, it is stylish and there is a grand dignity to it. There are even security guards installed in each area.

With its safety and amenities for visitors, it is commonly used for residents to exercise or chat in, or for couples as a date spot.

Cha Jun Sung sat comfortably on a bench he purchased as an official.

Benches are divided into public and non-public. Non-public benches can only be used by the residents who purchased them for a certain amount of time along with their families.

They are created in the shape of booths, so they block outside interference if needed. There are also products useful in everyday life like computers and cellphones.

There will not be any reason to, but people could even sleep inside if they wanted to.

“Looks nice.”

Cha Jun Sung looks past the glass.

He does not see very many residents. The majority are couples, and then there are single men and women in their twenties. It is not the case with all, but a few have the same intentions.

Their goal is to become entangled with a rich man or woman in this rich neighborhood.

Even now, pretty and empty-headed women are glancing over at Cha Jun Sung's booth. Men are looking over with envy.

It does not matter whether he borrowed or bought it. His sitting there itself means that he is a resident. He is not the type to show off, but this is not a bad feeling.

You only live once. You are meant to enjoy it as much as you can before you go. Isn't it nice?

Cha Jun Sung came out to the park because of the notepad he has in his hand.

He could have read it at home, but after suffering like a dog and using a lifetime's worth of luck on the Dead Ark, he wanted to get fresh air.

It is the longest he has ever stayed in a mission.



40 days. They had not been going through a mission for 40 days but had been stuck in a gloomy situation for 40 days, which made it harder. There had been the chance that they would never return to reality again.

They cannot even prepare because they do not know when and where a special mission will be initiated. Park Jin Hyuk and Koharu's group said that they would not even look at a level D mission for the time being.

They said that they barely got through, so they would play in level E missions until their minds and bodies were calmed. Cha Jun Sung also decided to rest for a bit and enjoy everyday life.

-[2,155,475]

The points Cha Jun Sung has accumulated. He repaired Hercules for a few days and put him forward to complete Terrain of Infection Trees after many twists and turns.

Hercules had only been hit once by Red Eye, but its face had been crushed. The cervical alloys connecting its neck and back broke like straw.

The parts he had brought along had not been enough for repairs, so he had to use parts that were on the ark. If he had not done that, the cost to repair would have been tremendous.

When the threat of Red Eye and Parasite King disappeared, the

level went down to C. It did not surprise him because it is information he saw on Lifer World.

The favor that Red Eye had thrown at him as a gift brought them 180 million points.

He had been doubtful but no matter how much they looked, there were no mutants. They only found the level 6 infection tree after searching all of Tonga.

The funny thing is that it was weaker than expected. It is level 6, but is not even as strong as a level 5. As it turned out, it is an aftereffect of producing infected fruits.

The infection tree needs to make up for the nutrients it lost in producing infection fruits with infestors. It has become a loner because Parasite King absorbed all of the infestors.

Since there are no infestors to gain strength from, it cannot do anything.

Cha Jun Sung's group may not know, but Parasite King tried to take the infection tree to a new location. Infected fruits are not common delicacies to come by.

However, Red Eye had come back to tell it to leave the infection tree. He did not show it, but it was his own type of consideration.

Cha Jun Sung turned the cover of the notepad. He opens to the

first page that he had looked at earlier.

-[If you can feel that I'm doing you a favor, can you take the PDA off before reading this?]

Cha Jun Sung read this and left his PDA at home before coming out. It is a warning that the content could be scanned exactly if he reads this while wearing it.

Odin said that he wanted to read it and asked for permission, but Cha Jun Sung did not let him. He would read it first and then make the decision.

[I'm sure you're wondering who I am? Where I'm from. How I know these things. Forget me. This notepad is the end of our destiny.]

He understood it as the writer saying that he must be satisfied with the notepad and not to want anything more.

Red Eye said that he would be able to have his questions answered by meeting with Warlock, but it does not seem like Warlock is the one that wrote this.

The notepad excluded any idle talk and was organized into chapters. Cha Jun Sung's interest increases. What is it that he wants to tell him?

-[Attack.]

-[Colleagues.]

-[Information.]

He opened to Attack. The mission names, descriptions, and attack strategy are written for missions from level C to A. But the strategies are not that detailed.

Simple hints? He was unsure of level A and B because he has not opened those yet, but there are level C missions that he saw on his PDA.

It could be disobliging, but Cha Jun Sung thought that this much is adequate. He might have been disappointed if every single thing had been explained.

One cannot advance by just leaning on others. There is no growth without hardship and adversity. But that does not mean that he wants to face a crisis of death.

“I’ll have to do the overall on my own. If I dig into the hints well enough, there will be less risk.”

He will accept an appropriate amount of help. He cannot pack lives in multiples as if they are clothing. He must keep this in mind. It is okay to rely on strategy a little.

Cha Jun Sung was buried in the notepad for hours. If Attack gave hints, Colleagues separated into targets of recruitment and

avoidance.

There were unexpected people mixed into both sides, but recruitment has more gravity of importance and avoidance has well-known figures.

-[Some aren't in the avoidance group just because they are bad people. That is the case with the majority, but there are people who unintentionally harm the party.]

-[Once Mechanic City opens, you'll run into him often even if you don't want to. I hope you won't create a bond. There is no benefit in conversing with him.]

-[Even though I say this, it is inevitable that you will meet. Then I'll say it again. Kill him on the spot. Don't keep your humanity. Don't you need to eradicate the pests?]

There are also routes to contact recruitment targets. There is a motley of methods. It says that these people will not betray their colleagues and protect them.

Cha Jun Sung read this part with concentration. It is better to have more allies. Even better if they are allies that he can trust. They are more valuable than points.

“This is weird. I'm sure it's been matched to me since it was given to me, but it feels like I wrote it.”

He said it, but he did not take it seriously. Who on earth would think that their future selves in another world sent something to them?

Cha Jun Sung did not imagine that kind of thought in the first place.

Information had the type of things that Lifers would miss. There were more than what Cha Jun Sung knows like the activation of special missions and conditions of helper intervention.

The 3 chapters filled in the gaps of what Cha Jun Sung knows. This is a big deal. He could understand why the helper was excluded.

Helpers are Life Mission operators. This notepad, which breaks the rules, is a bug. It is obvious that the helper would try to fix this bug.

That world is also reality, so he does not know how they will fix it but that is not his problem. Placing any type of restriction is a penalty in itself.

-[Don't even try a level C mission if you don't have a battlesuit. You'll die.]

He was thinking that anyway. He cannot face it while placing all of his trust in his body modifications. He was certain now. Making a blind attempt is a suicide mission.

-[There's something that Lifers are mistaken about, but buses, parties, and forces can only help you advance to level C. Anyone can get up to there.]

-[Starting with level C advancement, there's a thing called level of contribution. Without this, it isn't considered mission completion even if someone goes along with others.]

It means that Life Mission will not give the opportunity to people who are unnecessary. It is a good thing.

Cha Jun Sung is not gloating that those people are not able to advance. It is a worse hell the higher they go, so it is better to settle in a place that is to their standards.

All around the world, hundreds of Lifers die every day. Indiscriminate advancement increases the harm. How many more people will die going forward?

-[Once over 10,000 people reach level C, Mechanic City is opened.]

-[A few months after that will be the 3rd selection of Lifers. I'm sure 100 million people will have died, though it's okay since the population of that era will be over 10 billion.]

He is more curious as to how someone knew all of this rather than who wrote it. Has this person come from the future or

something?

That could be it. Life Mission itself is a system that does not make sense.

Every way of thinking becomes different by the approach they take to it. Denial is denial and acceptance is acceptance. The important thing is where the affirmation is.

“I’m sure there will be a tremendous amount of information after Mechanic City, contribution, and 3rd Lifer selection, but I’ll leave it for fun later.”

He had tried to peruse it, but he did not even get through half of it. He barely paid attention to the parts regarding levels A and B, and looked carefully at the information on level C.”

Cha Jun Sung skimmed through and reached the last page. He wanted to see if he could find a reason why someone would personally write this out for him.

-[Think of the notepad as an item. I lost everything because of Life Mission. You might know what that means one day.]

-[I hope this becomes a good luck charm against the unhappiness that will come to you. I’m done with what I have to say. I just hope that you don’t become like me.]

There is little on the private history of the writer. It is obvious



that he does not want to reveal his identity. Cha Jun Sung respected that.

“What do I start with?”

Cha Jun Sung put the notepad down and decided on an order. He must purchase a battlesuit. He does not care about the accumulation of points because he just needs to wander around in level D missions.

If he wants to make an attempt at a level C mission, he needs colleagues. Now, he is against joining large guilds for whatever reasons.

“I’ll decide on the first party member to sign on and the level C mission.”

# Chapter 107

---

If they take in a lot of members at the same time, they could end up not being able to handle it.

Due to this, he repeatedly considered who to decide on but choosing the level C mission was relatively easy. It is something he had been resolved to get done.

The Closed Area, where he had felt the fear that he could die during the tutorial!

Caicus is at the top of level 5 and there are 600,000 reward points. The hints also summarize what he needs and what he needs to be careful of.

Apparently, 4 or 5 Lifers with battlesuits were plenty to take it on.

“Empress of Light.”

Of the 6 female rankers, she is the strongest and in 3rd place of all of the 36 rankers. Her other nickname:

“Crazy Woman.”

Crazy Woman, Empress of Light.

She never lets go once she gets a hold of something until death – no – even after death. The notorious Crazy Woman is the first party member who Cha Jun Sung is going to enlist.

It is written that she tries to go through a 200,000 level C mission by herself and is put in danger. The date that is written is in a few months.

It says that if he appears then and helps her, he will be able to gain her goodwill. She only knew about Cha Jun Sung through rumors because she acted mostly in Europe.

It tells him to go into the mission however he wants to, whether it is by going into a blocked mission or going through a nearby mission. However he decides to do it, his first person to recruit is Empress of Light.

\*\*\*

Woong.

Lifers appeared in a wide open summons gate. 2 men, 2 women, and 1 cyborg. It is Cha Jun Sung and his party.

Cha Jun Sung did not look around as he normally did and left the safe area without hesitation. The party members did not show any wariness either.

It seems like they did not even think that there could be a

surprise attack from hidden mutants. From their behavior alone, they had no nerve.

“Level D is dull. Would Kyoko also be able to complete it with just weapons?”

Park Jin Hyuk spoke with his arms crossed. There is no tension to be found in him.

It is not a normal level D, but a 20,000 point advance mission like with the Dead Ark. He is so calm he is about to yawn.

“I think it’s a successful conclusion. Level D and E won’t come unless absolutely necessary.”

The amount of points obtained starting from level C is unimaginable. The lowest reward points is 100,000 and they can gain up to anywhere from 2 million to 2.5 million.

Though there is a difference between levels D and E, there is not a huge deviation in points. Completing a level C in one try guarantees an enormous amount of points.

They had crossed a boundary where they could no longer beat the quality in quantity.

The Terrain of Infection Trees that Cha Jun Sung had happened to complete had 1.8 million reward points. If it had been done under normal circumstances, it would have been worth 9 million.

It is a suicide mission if the Lifer's abilities do not match up but if they do, it is more effective than going through dozens of lower level missions.

From the point of completing Terrain of Infection Trees, a whole season whizzed by.

Cha Jun Sung and the surviving Lifers' abilities advanced as much as well. Not too long ago, the World Federation was targeting 500,000 points.

The members are incredible. There are 15 out of the 36 rankers. Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin are included there as well. They both possess battlesuits.

Achievement is not counted in reward points until level D but from C, achievement points are distributed with mission completion as well. Terrain of Infection Trees had a great effect.

The offer came to Cha Jun Sung too, but he had refused it. The large guilds of each country are trying to make attempts at level C missions but they were getting fully ready.

However, they had not been able to move the preparation into practice due to the absence of the battlesuit.

Not even large guilds can acquire battlesuits easily when they require 10 million points and 2 million achievement points. It is on

a different level from the items they have seen until now.

Cha Jun Sung turned down the proposals because due to the notepad, he does not have to rely on large groups. If he makes up his mind, he can try a 500,000 point mission too.

It is true. Cha Jun Sung and all of his party members have battlesuits.

Park Jin Hyuk purchased it first out of the 4 of them. It is a definite result because he only gathers points without having to invest in Hercules like Cha Jun Sung does.

Park Jin Hyuk bought a battlesuit and repeatedly went into level D advance missions with Cha Jun Sung. He only watched in case of emergency situations, and pushed all of the points to Cha Jun Sung.

The party's power became excessively strong. Level D missions are not pleasing for Park Jin Hyuk any more. Like the World Federation, he wanted to try out a level C.

‘If you want to meet Empress of Light, it’ll be good for you to leave the area of this mission.’

Cha Jun Sung went into a level D for no reason in order to meet Empress of Light. D-day is in 4 days. He needs to find her in that time.

He did not tell the party members about the notepad. It is not because he does not trust them. It is just easier to keep the secret if he is the only person who knows about it.

Zing!

-[battlesuit interlocking complete. Connecting helper, connection complete. Starting field scan.]

When the helmet wrapped around Cha Jun Sung's face, his vision changed computationally.

The battlesuit connected to the helper's artificial intelligence and relayed to him the information of everything Cha Jun Sung could see.

The distance from objects were marked numerically and his physical ability magnifies by multiples as it has received assistance from the machine. The world looked easy to him.

There is a small hologram of Cha Jun Sung rotating in the corner so that he can check on his own state at any time.

This parascientific creation that is arranged scrupulously like muscles is protecting Cha Jun Sung's body like iron. A bullet cannot even leave a scratch.

Even if he is hit with a bomb of low firepower, it will be blocked by lowering impulse or increasing external strength. This is what

the battlesuit is.

-[Completed field scan of up to 200m radius. Transferring map.]

Cha Jun Sung checks the map. There are red dots marked everywhere. Mutants. The goal of this mission is to find Empress of Light.

-[Zephyrus, Artemis, and Aphrodite are transferring map information.]

“Combine them and show me.”

It became much bigger when the 4 were combined. If the notepad is right, they need to climb the wall and get out of the city. That is where she is.

The front of this city is surrounded by a wall that is 10m high. It was supposed to block mutants, but it had ended up trapping the citizens as well.

“Shall we get going?”

“Yes.”

Cha Jun Sung steps off the ground. It leaves a clear mark on the concrete ground and his body is pushed forward. He flies out dozens of meters with every jump.



He could not control the battlesuit at first and had to go through trial and error.

Forget fighting, he was having difficulty controlling his strength. It has been a few weeks since he has been able to control the battlesuit freely.

“I’m Superman!”

“Are you a kid?”

Park Jin Hyuk follows Cha Jun Sung in a Superman pose. Kyoko scolded him for being immature and Koharu was quiet.

Is it because they were making too much noise? Ugly mutants start showing up from everywhere. It would have been better if they had remained hidden, but they had just shortened their lives.

# Chapter 108

---

Cha Jun Sung hit the shins of a Tairoque coming at him from the side.

The legs made of knotted muscles breaks in one blow. It could not believe what it was seeing as its fierce eyes looked surprised. Tairoques are level 3.

It has the intense strength and durable body like a Krollion, but it is appropriately twice as strong because it is of a higher level. But Cha Jun Sung had destroyed it like a bug.

Bang!

The booster went into action from the battlesuit's elbow and creates a hole on the Tairoque's face. It had added strength to his direct assault.

He did not even take out the Wolf Kill. He could feel the fun of beating it with his bare hands. The strong level 3 fell to the ground. It is too weak.

Koharu took her twin daggers and sweeps through hundreds of level 2s. Every time she passed one, its head rolled off its neck.

She pursues a clean battle. Whether she slices them up or cuts their heads off, it is the same that they die. She saves her strength and only aims for the vitals.

There is a sharp sound and something comes flying behind Koharu. It is a disgusting tongue, wet with sticky mucous.

Koharu turns and swings the dagger. The tongue is cut off and spews blood. People do not have eyes on the back of their heads, but battlesuits do.

A full defense sensor monitors the danger of a constant radius and shows this to the wearer on a real-time screen.

Unless they are inattentive, level 1 through 3 are massacred.

Kung!

“It’s loud!”

“It’s here.”

Par Jin Hyuk looks to where the sound is coming from. The Tairoque’s evolved form, Tairos, comes at them while toppling over any building in its way.

It will be extremely angry because they have killed its subordinates and made its home into a mess. There must be a wife or child among these too.

It is incredibly strong as a true body-oriented mutant should be.

On its way, it pulled an iron street lamp. It is going to use it in substitution for a weapon.

“Hold out... for a little.”

-[60% of battle core deployed.]

-[Mutant scan! Height 4.95m, estimated weight 1.5t, judging by the shaking of its muscles, killing it with a blow is difficult and must use the Wolf Kill!]

“If I have to use the Wolf Kill against a mere level 4, what do I use against a level 5?”

He said that and it does not matter whether he uses it or not, but it is a matter of pride. He is sure that he needs to get a level 4 with his bare hands in order to be able to take on a level 5.

Cha Jun Sung approaches the Tairos. It swung the street lamp around so he could not come near. A massive sound tickles his ears.

-[Distance from Tairos 7.6m, it is the distance to avoid being hit with the street lamp.]

Bang!

Stone powder sprays from a building hit with the street lamp. It

would have been tricky to take it on if he had only had body modifications. It is a power that could kill him if he is hit.

-[Repeated swinging, calculating route. Now! Dig through!]

The routes to attack Tairos were marked in blue on the hologram. They are a little different, but most of them wield to the same place.

Odin's wielding showed a small gap and went a signal. Now is the time.

Cha Jun Sung ran toward the gap. He has not configured the overbooster yet so there was a frustrating feeling, but he does have the battlesuit.

-[Impulse 4.5t! The battlesuit's left shoulder is weakly broken.]

“Ack! Damn it!”

He had gone in, but it seems he had not matched to the signal well. Cha Jun Sung was hit by the street lamp, flew dozens of feet, and became embedded deep in a building.

“Wow! It's a homerun!”

“Jun Sung!”

Before the street lamp hit the battlesuit, a mechanical grain in nanometric units strengthened the external elasticity and reduced the shock he received as much as possible.

“This asshole!”

Cha Jun Sung jumped out of the building and ran at the Tairos without looking back. The Tairos thought him stupid and swung the street lamp around again.

“I’ll smash you to pieces.”

The street lamp flying down collided with Cha Jun Sung’s kick. He thought that he would be pushed back by weight and location, so he used the booster for high speed too.

The street lamp as thick as his thigh is bent at a 90 degree angle, but Cha Jun Sung is still fine. It does its 10 million points worth.

Cha Jun Sung leapt. He jumped nearly 8m and leaned his body horizontally to strike from on top of the Tairos’ head.

There is the sound of its skull cracking. Its mouth is shut and a few teeth the size of a fist come out with blood.

The Tairos’ brain was shaken and it stumbled as it lost its balance, and fell to its knees. It suddenly became eye level with Cha Jun Sung.

“It’s not over. This time, I’ll take your eyes not your teeth.”

It does not understand the human language. Even if it could, it could not respond because it is looking at another world.

Cha Jun Sung hit the Tairos’ temple with a high kick. The temporal bone could not withstand the shock, and its eyeballs burst. This is a deadly hit.

The giant collapses. As the bones broke, it wounded the brain as well. It is as good as dead since it cannot function. And it will really die.

Cha Jun Sung’s hand went into the burst eye, and ripped the brain.

-[You have earned 20,000 points and 12,000 achievement points.]

He had killed it with his bare hands as he had decided he would. They must have been generous with the achievement points because it had been a one-on-one battle. 60% is the limit for achievement points. They do not give more than this.

The lower level mutants run away when the level 4 dies. They fully recognize that these people are stronger than them. They may be dumb, but they know fear.

‘We need to get over the wall, but how do I explain it? Should I just suggest it?’

The wall that Cha Jun Sung needs to get over is the east wall. They had decided on a direction and come this way, but he could not think of a reason to give them.

“This is no fun. Do you want to try going over the wall? Should we try out a level C special mission?”

It is a standard tactic. It is a city where the front is blocked. There is no excuse to climb it.

“Let’s go.”

“Huh?”

“I said let’s go. As long as we have the battlesuits, it’s easy to run away. Let’s try it out!”

“Forget you.”

Cha Jun Sung ignored Park Jin Hyuk’s opinion. He is always like that. Cha Jun Sung looked at Koharu and Kyoko. Their thoughts are more important.

“I think it’s okay.”



“I did want to try out a level C, so it’s a good thing.”

He had received permission.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung goes over the wall. The height is not really a problem. As long as nothing is blocking them and it is just high, they can even get over hundreds of meters.

There are many ways to do it, whether they climb up or use their strength to break it down.

Because it is dark, it is dreary outside the wall. Strictly speaking, it is the same inside and outside the wall. It is a world where mutants are everywhere.

It is a harsh environment for a weak human to walk around in without protection.

“Odin, location.”

-[932. 35. Setting direction coordination. Setting complete.]

If they go around randomly, they will get lost or be placed in a dangerous situation. It is helpful in many ways to set a direction in advance.

The basic battlesuit raises a Lifer's attack power to level 5 or 6.

This is just attack power. The additional features are invaluable. In the virtual, nothing had been more important than the battlesuit.

“Let's not wander off anywhere else, and get on the road. I'm sure something will come out on the way.”

-[A mutant will come out.]

“Are you criticizing me? Why? You should just tell me to die. Keep your mouth shut like you used to.”

Once they open level C missions and purchase battlesuits, helpers' artificial intelligence is injected and they can speak with Lifers.

Whenever he can, Odin insists on reading the notepad that Cha Jun Sung acquired during a mission. He will not quit even though several months have passed.

Cha Jun Sung's booster shoots out fireworks. He crosses his arms and leaves his body to the power that pushes him. He went straight out as though he were on rollerblades.

While on the move, he repaired the left shoulder that the Tairos had damaged. He cannot see them, but micro robots are stuck on everywhere.

“We should go too.”

“Okay.”

The road is a straight line. The mission area is Russia, the largest country in the world, so the size of the road is incomparable to the narrow ones of Korea.

The surroundings pass by rapidly. The speed is 100km/h. They did not move themselves, but relied on the booster's fastest speed.

Assuming that there are no obstacles and it is just a straight line, their bodies could overheat and approach the speed of sound. They are becoming living bullets.

Once Cha Jun Sung completed the overmode that he had used in the virtual version, it broke through the sound of speed no matter what whether it was straight or on a curve.

If he attacks while leaving an afterimage with that incredible speed, a level 7 would not be able to respond properly and it would take a level 8 to counter it.

Of course, those kinds of parts are not in the level C store. They would not be in the level B store either. He cannot remodel it even if he sells it using the effect of his body modifications.

If the average person uses even the basic shape, it brings excessive pressure on the windpipe. Everything has a corresponding cost.

Koharu watched Cha Jun Sung going out at the head. He is reliable and cool. He is attractive as the captain of their party and as a man.

She and Kyoko did not say that they would go over the wall without reason. Under that decision is their trust in Cha Jun Sung's judgement.

Cha Jun Sung does act rather harshly at times, but there is always a reason for his actions. They are actions to advance step by step.

They believe that he asked to go over the wall because he has his own assurance of the matter. If they are his party members, they have to have at least that much faith in him.

'If it's the 4 of us, we'll be able to get a level 6. The time to face it has come.'

The official reason for them to trust Cha Jun Sung is the personal reason in their confidence 'To beat a level 6. It's time to face it.'

Excluding non-combat personnel Kyoko, everyone has the ability to take on a level 5 one-on-one. If the 3 of them combine their strength? Then they can take on a level 6.

If they cannot fight it, they can run away. If they run away while wearing the battlesuit, there is no guarantee that even a level 7 can catch them. They will leave it because it is a bother.

Lifers constantly go between life and death during missions. But there is that certain point where they can say 'That moment is most dangerous.'

Most people will say it is the advance missions. They are not wrong, but it is ambiguous to say that they are right. Then when is it the most dangerous?

It is when they quit what they are used to and make an attempt at something new.

Take a look. Lifers gave up on their normal lives and attempted level E.

They tried out level D as soon as they got used to it, and then level C as soon as they got used to that. From now on, this kind of phenomenon will come about repeatedly.

The way Koharu sees it, it has been a long time since their party has passed the ability to take on level D. It makes sense because they could each complete it alone.

It is a wonder that they have not yet attempted level C, but they mean to do their best since they have decided to go in no matter

how anomalous it is.

Cha Jun Sung was going without hesitation in the front when he stopped the booster all of a sudden. The party members following behind him had no choice but to stop as well.

“We’ll have to keep our guards up.”

“What is it?”

A large and dark figure is blocking the middle of the road. There is 1. They sped up for some time and the mission changed twice.

Special missions are applied when the difficulty becomes harder than when they first entered. It has not been applied until now because the changes have not been more difficult.

If a mission is changed, it is updated to a new version so it is possible to have an infinite mission as long as they do not return. However, Lifers do not use it often.

They can gather a lot of points, but the level of danger is high because they need to go around to a lot of places. If they make a mistake, they can be put in a situation that is impossible to deal with.

As the mission was updated, it triggered a special mission. This means that the mutant in front of them cannot be placed on the border of level D.

-[Mission update, level C special mission '8 Scythe Hunter' has been activated.]

-[Level C mission: 8 Scythe Hunter] [Goal: Annihilation]

-[Description: The Hunter of darkness who has 8 scythes lives in West Russia, Volgograd. It enjoys slaughter and is wandering around alone again today, imagining the blood it will get on its scythe.] [Reward: 100,000 points. Lucky box.]

It is an unexpected special mission. Rather than feeling strained, Cha Jun Sung welcomed it. Level Cs go from 100,000 to 2 million points. 8 Scythe Hunter is 100,000.

It will be over once they kill one level 5 without having to go through a difficult process.

He had said that he could fight a level 5 but had never done it before, so this is his chance to practice without interference from others.

“It’s a 8 Scythe Black Fox.”

Its overall movement is slow but the speed it swings its 8 scythes with is murderous. It is a mutant with an attack focused on defense.

It hides during the daytime and only leaves its home at night when it can take advantage of its protective coloration. Even if it is not hungry, it kills for fun.

It must be at least 8m. To the height of its head alone, it is half a size larger than the Tairos.

It resembles a praying mantis so its body extends straight out to the back and the dozens of legs sustaining its body makes it seem larger.

“Jin Hyuk, you want to try fighting it?”

“Pass!”

Park Jin Hyuk waved his hand and refused. Because he is scared? Not a chance!

If he uses the battlesuit for a ranged combat, he could dry it out and kill it. Scythes might be a weapon in close encounters, but appearances are deceptive.

“Looking at how thick and sturdy its shell looks, it’ll be too much trouble to kill it with explosive bombs. It’d be better for you or Koharu to take it.”

He could win but the problem is that it could take a long time.



“I’ll try it.”

Park Jin Hyuk whistled. The person to take a step forward is Koharu.

When she was falling behind in body modifications, she had not been able to behave fittingly for her name, Amhu. She will prove her strength with a battle against a level 5.

The 8 Scythe Black Fox looked at Koharu and raises its scythes. Its arms are in different locations, so the directions of attack are also different. She needs to pay attention to 8 lines of defense at the same time.

“Artemis, scan it and analyze its actions in real-time.”

-[Mutant scan! Height 8.2m, estimated weight 8t. Analyzing state.]

battlesuits may be excellent, but it is not capable of doing everything. It cannot find weaknesses just by completing a scan.

It gains information during battle and analyzes that to find solutions.

battlesuit Artemis finished all of the preparations it could do itself. After this, Koharu needs to face it and figure it out for herself.

-[Battle core 80% deployed! Full defense sensor, booster, defense equipment at full capacity! Enemy systemic muscle contraction! 100% chance attack upon entering!]

It is a staggering level 5. Koharu turned all of the battlesuit's battle systems on. There is severe energy consumption, but she cannot fight if she saves on it.

Cha Jun Sung went behind the hunter. Even if it acts alone, he is watching in case another mutant appears. Park Jin Hyuk and Kyoko also left the combat radius.

“Give it your best.”

“Don't worry.”

Koharu looks at Cha Jun Sung and laughs. The party members cannot see her smile because of the helmet, but they can sense it.

The explosion from the booster that received 80% energy goes through the silence in the dark. At the same time, she disappeared.

# Chapter 109

---

Koharu whizzes by in a zig zag between the hunter's legs. Light red blood flows out from the places scratched by the twin daggers.

It is thin compared to the body, but the strength is considerable. Even with twin daggers, they leave scratches at best. It might cut off if she saws at them, but she does not have the time for that.

When the hunter strikes its scythe down, it creates a hole in the ground and scatters debris everywhere. Even then, the end did not go out.

The hunter takes its wings out of its back and flies up into the sky. It cannot fly for too long because of its weight but it is threatening in its use to switch location.

If it flies into the sky, Koharu below it becomes exposed. In terms of a game, it is like a pattern that she needs to read in order to catch it.

Koharu did not overdo it in attacking it and used the booster to retreat far enough so she could respond. It is her battle style.

If meeting her as an enemy, it is a frustrating style. Since she is careful in all of her actions, she does not get caught up in a fight of numbers or when provoked.

As the hunter lowered, it settled in a spot dozens of meters away.

Koharu ran at it as soon as it landed on the ground.

No matter how large it is, how thick its shell is, and how durable it is, it is not invincible. If it is hit over and over again to create wounds, any life form becomes exhausted.

The hunter however, also has a brain. Is it because it experienced the same attack multiple times? As soon as she came close, it swung the scythes around and walked backward.

It kept her from approaching it and created more distance when she was slowed down. It is an action that she cannot underestimate just because it is slow.

“They’re neck and neck.”

“It’s strangely boring.”

“I would have given it flesh for its bones, but Koharu has the type of personality where she doesn’t want to give anything when she takes. That’s why she was criticized a lot in the virtual version too.”

She does not have a refreshing big hit. She takes the enemy down with an accumulation of damage. It could be seen as a boring fight as Park Jin Hyuk said.

‘But the Empress of Light is different.’

He has never met her for himself, but he has seen her battle videos dozens of times.

Forget dog fights. She is not cowardly, but she mobilizes all methods in order to win. On top of that, she is incredible with a spear.

A spear's specialty is mid-range. If the opponent comes closer than that distance, she does not retreat and breaks their joints or rips them apart with her teeth.

Empress of Light carries out a battle that people who do not know her would be doubtful of, as if it were nothing. Cha Jun Sung had also been bewitched while watching her.

‘Two days north, a small town before arriving at Volgograd.’

Cha Jun Sung calculated the appropriate time. Empress of Light has entered several weeks before they did. She will be happily killing mutants right about now.

She prefers solo missions. The reason is that she is well acquainted. It takes a long time until completion, but there is a generous reward in exchange for the time.

There are pros and cons to going party and solo. They can receive less points in exchange for safety and swiftness, or they can gain a ton of points by risking the danger and being later.

The interesting thing is that there are people who show greater strength when they are alone. There is nothing for them to take care of so in a dangerous situation, they only need to look after themselves.

‘That’ll be its own type of mission. Going through a level C alone was too much. She’s outnumbered.’

Empress of Light is strong. By her specifications, she does not get pushed back by a level 5.

What she is pushed back by is numbers. She can sweep through the underlings but the burly ones are hard. In simple terms, she is lacking in endurance.

It is impossible for someone acting alone to increase their endurance.

1 person cannot become 2 people. As a mission’s difficulty becomes harder, the mutants also become stronger. It is a never-ending chronic problem.

Bang bang!

As the fight between Koharu and the hunter rises, they only focus on the opponent.

There is less of a burden in a single battle with 1 mutant, but not even Cha Jun Sung has the confidence to take on a progressive mission alone.

According to research, the 500,000 point mission that the World Federation took on had 100,000 to 120,000 level 1 through 3 mutants, 50 level 4s, and 2 level 5s.

Empress of Light has taken on 200,000, which is not even half of the 500,000, and even if they say that it would be 40% of the number, it is not a level that she can handle.

No wonder she has been forced into a corner and has been placed in danger. It is an error of judgment on her part.

The hunter's thinnest leg is cut off under Koharu's repeated attacks. The damage is beyond regeneration.

It has been cut off but cannot be seen as great damage to a level 5. Its blood is boiling and blood and flesh is about to protrude from the wound.

Koharu focuses her attacks intensively on the leg that is cut off. Since it is before the sturdy flesh has been formed, it went cut out easily like jelly.

Besides, there is something else she is going after. It is the body's balance.

When the hunter tried to turn its body to attack Koharu, it wobbled to the side where the balance was cut. It collapsed a small part.

It may not seem like it, but a person cannot walk properly if even a thumb or pinky toe is cut off. Everything has a role for use.

Mutants are the same. Just because a wound is weak does not mean that it does not have an effect on the body. All ends come from a start.

Koharu stepped on the back of the helper that lost its balance, and went up. She ran up and brought her twin daggers down on its big eyes.

Insects' eyes are compounded. Their sight is wide, so they can detect attacks from behind without trouble. The hunter did not miss that moment either.

The hunter's joint folds abnormally and it falls down. There is a deluge of scythes. If hit, one can be skewered from the head.

She takes steps. Left, right, front, back – Koharu dances. She is avoiding attacks that could grind whole cars by a sliver.

Koharu stabbed both the hunter's eyes and quickly jumped down.

“Koharu!”



“Koharu! It’s dangerous!”

Park Jin Hyuk and Kyoko scream. The hunter put up full defenses. It could switch direction if there is any place to take a step, but it is the air.

-[Reverse booster activated! Output rate 30%, distancing from enemy field of command.]

The booster attached on her arms and legs turned to the reverse and instantly flew Koharu up. An afterimage appeared, and the hunter ripped that afterimage.

There are 2 boosters on her back, 2 each on her elbows and ankles, for a total of 6.

It is possible to transform to the desired direction, so if the power output is fully activated, she can fly in the air but it is ineffective to use this continuously.

There would be nothing they could do if they need to create a dogfight for whatever reason, but they need to save their energy in case there is a ground battle like the one they are in now.

Koharu retreated and used all of her strength to throw the twin daggers.

The hunter brandishes its scythes. It missed one of the daggers because of a pain of its eye ripping, and the other dug back into the eye.

The vibrating function is on. The dagger in its eye kept shaking and widened the wound. They cannot imagine how painful it is.

It cannot regenerate until the dagger has been pulled out. There is no point in its trying.

“Ack!”

“What is that?”

The hunter lifts its scythe and digs out its own eyeball. Koharu was trying to pick up the dagger from the ground, and was surprised. She did not know that it would go to such lengths!

The hunter becomes angry and struck down at Koharu’s back. It can only see the woman who caused it great suffering. It is half out of its mind.

Cha Jun Sung interfered. The booster with output rate of 100% moved him above the hunter’s head within moments. It was almost like teleportation.

The Wolf Kill penetrated through the thick shell and bones to stab the brain. She had been surprised when she saw it digging out its own eye, but she did not let her guard down and moved out of

the way.

While it was stuck in the brain, Cha Jun Sung moved the Wolf Kill forward so it emerged, splitting the hunter's head. It still does not die and is only in a craze.

“Took you off guard, didn't it?”

“Yes.”

“I didn't know that it would dig its own eyes out either. It might have been able to act in response because it could watch the battle.”

Koharu went to the hunter, sprawled out and trembling in anger. Letting her guard down is one thing, and she needs to end it now. Of course it would die even if she left it alone.

-[You have earned 120,000 points and 40,000 achievement points. You have earned 100,000 reward points and 50,000 achievement points for completing the mission.]

220,000 and 90,000. Is this the class of level C? It is incredible considering she caught 1 mutant. Everything had been possible because they had the battlesuits.

The hunter is in the lower ranks of level 5. Koharu did not show it, but her pride was hurt. She struggled this much with a lower rank.

“You can win, right?”

“There is 17% left of the battlesuit’s energy level. 2 would be difficult.”

She can win if they fight again, but 2 of them is too much. She could do something about it if she puts her life on the line, but beyond that is impossible.

“We can fill in whatever we’re lacking slowly by upgrading. Don’t be discouraged.”

Cha Jun Sung would have finished it faster than she did. The Wolf Kill’s power could get through the hunter’s shell more effectively than her twin daggers could.

Koharu only has one disadvantage. She has trouble getting the upper hand against mutants with strong defense. She will need to change her weapons to something more powerful.

Koharu takes a square object out of her space compression bag. It is a disposable charger for her battlesuit. If she leaves it plugged in, it will supplement.

Pew pew!

“What are you doing?”

“Test.”

Park Jin Hyuk shoots the Head Hunter at the hunter's corpse. The explosive embeds in the skin and makes blood splatter out, but the wound is not deep. It is just a scratch.

Bang!

The bomb goes off and a part of the corpse becomes sunken in. A large piece of flesh falls off. Even still, Park Jin Hyuk's frown remains.

“Hm. I would have suffered if I fought this too. Look at its defense. It's like a turtle.”

The hunter puts all of its trust in its scythes and sturdy shell, and does not take defensive behavior. It starts by attacking and ends by attacking.

Cha Jun Sung scratched his cheek at Park Jin Hyuk's complaint. Even if he says that, he would have been fighting ferociously.

“It's a bit boring for a level C, so shall we go around and earn points?”

The destination is already decided. They can warm up until they meet Empress of Light. If they want to complete a 200,000 point

mission, they need to get fired up.

# Chapter 110

---

Cha Jun Sung's group looks over a small town from a high hill. It looks like a place where only dozens of people live. Something is roaring from within it.

Whenever it yells, it becomes quiet everywhere. Everything is scared of this parent object. It is a level 5. How does Cha Jun Sung know? Because the Empress of Light is there.

They would hear the sound of explosive bombs in this quiet. Judging by how they do not hear any, she must be resting.

She will take resting periods often since she is going through this mission solo. It is expected that the battlesuit's energy will fall quickly and her personal energy consumption will also be that much.

"I guess a special mission is going to ring the second we step foot in there."

Park Jin Hyuk looks at the town and stroked his arms. Anyone who looks at it can say that it is a level C. He estimated the reward points to be in the hundreds of thousands.

"One day."

"One day?"

“Huh? I was talking to myself.”

Cha Jun Sung had not realized that he was talking to himself and spoke aloud. The distance was to take 2 days but it had taken 4 because of the mutant. The time they have left is 1 day.

On the way here, they had gotten through 2 level D missions and 1 level C. They do gather a lot of points but they are all one-hits, so they cannot be considered jackpot.

Basic items in the level C store go for around 3 million points. If there is something they consider useful, it can go from 5 million to 10 million like the battlesuit.

Expenditure increases with income. What they need to buy after the battlesuit is level C weaponry. This takes up 7 to 8 million points.

Currently, Cha Jun Sung's group only has about 300,000 points. They have to go back to the beginning and gather points.

“Jun Sung, should we rest here today?”

“Let's do that.”

Since they have discovered the town, there is no reason why they need to follow the path. If they jump down from the cliff and go straight, they will arrive in a few hours.



Cha Jun Sung's group sat anywhere on the ground. As long as they have food, they can sleep anywhere. The battlesuits block all external elements.

Everyone charges their battlesuits. If they want to maintain 100%, they need to get in the habit of doing so. Even if they do not go into battle.

Energy is being consumed even while they are sitting still.

“Kyoko. Once we enter that town, you need to take care of your own body. Got it?”

“I got it!”

“I don't know how many points it'll be worth, but it won't be like Terrain of Infection Trees.”

He said '200,000 points' in his head. There will be 1 or 2 level 5s. With that amount of power, they can take care of it even without Empress of Light.

“Koharu and I.....”

Bang bang bang!

When Cha Jun Sung was about to continue speaking, they heard

a series of bombs going off under the hill. There is a weak flash of light.

“The town!”

“Is there a Lifer?”

Cha Jun Sung looked. If it is the sound of Empress of Light fighting, does that mean she is starting to fight now and that her life will be in danger after a day?

“What do you want to do?”

“We have to go! It’s the first time we’re entering another Lifer’s mission!”

He is right. This is the first of this type of instance. It is worthy of excitement for Park Jin Hyuk and the sisters. They think that they could experience something fun.

“If that’s what you guys think. But don’t get in contact before I do.”

“Yes!”

Park Jin Hyuk jumped from the cliff. Cha Jun Sung and the sisters threw their bodies right away. They can activate their boosters as they fall and decrease the speed.

“Shall we go meet the Crazy Woman?”

He is excited to see what kind of ranker she is.

\*\*\*

My name is Violet Florence. British and 28 years old! A beautiful young lady. You think I won't be?

Will you be able to look at me properly and say that?

There isn't a man that I haven't been able to successfully seduce. I could fill an entire subway with the men who have followed me around and there still wouldn't be enough space.

We didn't meet for long periods of time. They peed their pants when they found out who I am.

I'm like a leech? I'm empty-headed? Don't be so full of yourself! I majored in Administration at Oxford! Until last year, I handled my clan's ledgers.

I quit that now. Huh? Accounting is really boring. It feels like my eyeballs are going to fall out from looking at numbers all day.

Oh! I'd be grateful if you excuse my language. Our clan is on the rough side.

The clan also wanted me to quit that stuff so I could do something that would help me contribute more. I welcomed it with both arms wide open too because it is what I had wanted.

What do I like to do? Do you know about a game called Life Mission? This Violet is pretty famous – no – really famous as a ranker.

Among 36 rankers, in 1st place of the females. 3rd place even when looking at the entire ranking. This game was my only lifeblood. And then that happened.

One day, Life Mission suddenly became reality. There is no way to figure out the cause, so I'll skip explaining the process.

For the first few months, the clan, Lifers, and I all wandered. It doesn't make common sense or scientific sense.

Anyway, the situation gradually stabilized and I started revving the engine. I'm Empress of Light. My pride wouldn't allow me to fall behind others.

I mostly did solo missions but if I was lacking in power, I would enter missions with people from my clan. There's no reason to do it with people I don't know.

My brothers and uncles are not averse to killing mutants because they live in a world where they shoot guns often. And we work

well together.

I went forward little by little, completed the level D advance mission, and even went into level C. A lot of people died, but I think that there was nothing to do about that.

‘The gains are as much as blood is spilled’ is my clan’s motto.

I opened level C missions but didn’t dare try them out? So I did manual labor and succeeded in buying the battlesuit about 1 month ago.

My clan supports me with most of the basic gear, so it was easy to gather points.

Was there a bliss from experiencing a new world that I had only been able to see in virtual reality, in real life? I completed the level D advance mission in just 1 day.

And then I made a try at level C. The clan said that they would get a force together and that I should go in together, but I just went in saying that I could handle it on my own!

Because of that conceit, I faced the greatest danger in my life. I don’t regret it though. As a result, I was able to meet them.

\*\*\*

“Fuck!”

Violet curses. Her face is covered by the helmet, but her current psychological state is that of nervousness and anxiety.

She had not underestimated the mission. She had not even thought that she would be able to complete it easily. But this level of difficulty was beyond her expectations.

“Should I have entered with a force? No. I’m pretty sure we would have all died together.”

Violet is certain. Level C cannot be handled with quantity. It needs to be resolved with quality. Even if she had been in a force, the outcome would not have been different.

The clan’s talent is made up of people who are good enough to come into level C.

Immediately? No! They need time before they can do that. If they are pushed into a mission before they are ready, they will die before they can do anything.

Violet sets up a booby trap. It is a time when she can use anything.

A few weeks ago, she had entered thinking that she can quit the mission if she cannot complete it. Levels 1 through 4 do not pose problems. It is because of the level 5.

It is weak for a level 5, but it is very intellectual. It is almost at human standards. It commanded the mutants in the city.

Hitting and retreating is the strategy that Violet needs to use but here, it is the strategy that the mutants use. They distributed the power and cut down on the battlesuit's energy.

There is no way they know that, but it seems they are trying to drain the opponent of her strength. It is working. Anything that came at her died, but she only has a few chargers left.

Beep beep!

She finished setting everything like the Claymores up. Violet has been hidden away at the end of the sewer for a few days. The odds are against her on the ground.

It is not a situation where she can go around and find mutants to kill. She lasted as long as she could and waited for a chance to counterattack. It is a small relief that the attacks have diminished.

The battlesuit has finished charging. She knows because she has experienced it. If she leaves the battlesuit fully charged like this, she can last at least a day among even merciless attacks.

“I’m going to go crazy. The mission is blocked. At this rate, am I really going to die?”

The mission needs to be opened up if there is to be re-entry. If it is blocked, it means that the helpers think there is still a chance for Violet.

“Gaia, can’t you open up the mission for me? I can’t get through this alone.”

-[It is impossible. With Lifer Violet’s skills and items, you can last 3 more days. It may be possible to open up the mission then.]

You damned girl!

3 days? She would be able endure until then. After that? She needs to receive help whenever she can. She does not want to do it when her life is on the line.

Wiing!

Violet took the battlesuit off. The compactly configured lines folded and went into the alloys making up the shell’s defense.

The folded shape is strange but it looks like a backpack.

Of course, it is not the size of the average backpack. There is no way that could happen with the volume. It is just a way to describe it. It is almost twice the size of a person’s body.

“Only leave the sensor on.”



-[Sensor activated.]

Violet looked at the battlesuit and sighed. She has to go to such lengths to save energy. This is making the Empress of Light lose face.

# Chapter 111

---

“Refreshing.”

Violet leaned on the sewer wall and sat on the ground. Her sensual figure shows through the impact tights stuck to her body.

Her face is also a work of art. When exposed to light, her eyes are a dreamy purple.

Unless dyed or created with contact lenses, they are hard to find anywhere in the world. She has unique genes. That may be why she seems even more charming.

“I would run away if I could, but they have no intention of letting me go.”

She had tried to get out of the city, but the level 5 had not allowed it. It does not normally get involved, but balances it out when it seems like she has the advantage.

It seems to be playing around with her or experimenting with her rather than trying to kill her. She would just be angry if it is the former, but there is something she is guessing if it is the latter.

“Dominion.”

It is using Violet as a threat to exercise its power over its

subordinates. If this is right, it is an extremely troublesome opponent.

“Ugh, it’s so annoying! At any rate, whether it’s with people or mutants, the ones that scheme need to be ripped apart. So disgraceful.”

This city’s level 5 tends to resort to cheap tricks. The systemic way it controls its subordinates is the same. This type is difficult to deal with even among the ones that use cheap tricks.

-[Appearance of mutant 193m in front!]

“Oh no!”

Violet bolted from where she was sitting, pulled out the spear she had dug into the ground, and ran. She left the battlesuit alone. It would have sent a subordinate first.

The level 5 also knows that she has booby traps set up inside the sewer. It does not know how to work them, but sends down its subordinates to dismantle them.

It requires hard work to set up each trap. They are not meant to be used on level 1 or 2s. They are for at least level 3, with level 4 as the goal.

Kyak!

Malformed monsters with hunched backs bared their yellow teeth at Violet and ran at her. There are about 20 to 25 of them.

The spear's best attack is to just do it. Laden with a rotational force, it punctures holes in their bodies. She can fight level 4s even without the battlesuit.

Garbage like levels 1 and 2 are barely snacks to her.

The sewer is separated into several prongs and there are a lot of passages of entry.

It is just that she is in a corner. All she needs to do is block the ones that keep coming in. The disadvantage is that it is easy to block them, but it is a cul-de-sac?

“These assholes!”

Skells and other types of mutants keep pushing forward. Violet is getting pushed further back. There are enough of them to pack a huge sewer.

She estimates that there are more than 50,000 mutants living in this city.

If she had been on the slaughtering side, it would have been a sea of points but since she is being pushed back, it feels overwhelming.

No matter how many of them she kills, there is no end.

Bang!

Bang bang!

The booby trap goes off. She made it so they would not overlap but they are being used up so quickly that they could be mistaken as a chain of explosions.

That is proof of how Violet is being pushed back in this concentrated attack.

“Ack!”

Violet swings the spear and pulls her hair. She is so angry she could go crazy. If she could, she would rip them all to death.

Bang bang bang!

It had taken her hours to push 193m but the distance was short, so she quickly reached the wall. With that, her patience was gone.

“Fine! Since it’s turned out like this, I’m not running away! Let’s end it! Gaia!”

battlesuit Gaia changed into human form and opened up an

entry. Violet goes inside. It's all or nothing. She is going to turn it all over.

“Die!”

-[battlesuit 70% deployed! Booster output rate 50%, creating a path!]

Bang!

Violet made herself into a human missile. She held the spear forward, put her trust in the booster, and went forward. It was like looking at a bulky rhino rush through.

A few mutants died on the spear. If she turns her body once, dozens of bodies go flying. It is a terrifying battle strength.

She went forward while piling mountains of bodies. She avoided them because she knows she could die, but she the circuit spun. She is going to go outside and destroy the level 5.

Violet lifted her head. Moonlight seeps in through the open manhole. Mutants are using the ladders on the walls to come down.

All 6 of the battlesuit's boosters turned on and she shot up.

Bang!

She bumped the edge of the manhole on her way up but rather than falling, she smashed it. Violet looked around the area while dozens of meters up in the air.

-[Field scan! Mutant search! West, confirmation of mutant matching conditions!]

As soon as Gaia was done talking, Violet flew without even looking. She can look as she goes. It is cunning. She does not know when it might run away.

“You!”

It is stuck to a spire. Brown with a bubble covering its entire body. It is over 4m tall. It saw Violet and quickly created more distance.

It has sensed something weird. She would normally try to run away, but she is chasing it now. It needs to be careful because she is a powerful opponent.

Bang bang!

When the spear struck down, it fell under the power. Violet increased the booster's output of power. She does not care what happens as long as she can kill this level 5.

The chase is in a high place so the lower levels just watch and the mid levels that can climb walls chased her.

The mutants come swarming at the level 5's roar.

They look like a swarm of ants come to catch a giant prey. There must be over 10,000 of them.

No matter how weak they are, there is no chance of winning against such numbers.

“Come on!”

The battlesuit's sensor becomes saturated. There is no use for it to mark that any one thing is somewhere because the mutants are everywhere. Everywhere she looks, is an enemy.

“Ha ha ha!”

Violet belted out a hair-raising laugh and swept the area she decided on. It seems reckless, but she is Empress of Light who is called a crazy woman.

\*\*\*

“Wow!”



Park Jin Hyuk arrived first and made an interjection. Looking down from the building roof, the neighborhood below is 5 minutes from chaos.

Tens of thousands of mutants are running at something.

They are covering the floor and building. The only thing they cannot spread out over is the sky. Cha Jun Sung has never seen so many mutants in any mission he has been in either.

Skilled Lifers depreciate level 1 and 2 mutants as underlings.

But can they say that when they see this? The battlesuit's energy and stamina from body modification will run out before they can annihilate the mutants.

“Aha! Die!”

The spear's trajectory goes through the air and that siege spreads in waves.

“Who is that woman? She laughs while killing mutants. She must be crazy.”

“How would I know?”

Cha Jun Sung feigned ignorance when Park Jin Hyuk asked him. This is to be his first time seeing Violet as well. He cannot act like

he knows who she is.

‘She’s getting pushed back.’

Violet is being overwhelmed. They had come running as soon as they heard the explosion, but it had taken a few hours. It seems like the battle has gotten pretty far along in that time.

The amount of corpses around her is increasing. It is like they are piling up. But more came running at her, stepping over the dead ones.

“Empress of Light?”

Koharu watches Violet with her sharp eyes. She recognizes her. Her incisive spearmanship and anomalous attacks, even her flaming madness.

On the premise this is a woman, this can only be one person.

Cha Jun Sung pretended to be surprised enough. He has poor acting skills, but Koharu did not notice. He could not handle doing something he was not used to.

“Woah! I’ve heard about her. She’s the top female ranker.”

Koharu glared. Park Jin Hyuk flinched and pretended to do something else.

Whether with men or women, no one likes to be compared to others. Though indirectly, he had noted that Violet is stronger than Koharu.

“How dangerous. She’s a candle flame in front of wind.”

“We’ll have to help.”

They are looking for opportunities with levels 3 and 4 mutants.

If they launch a surprise in this chaos, they will be driven to defense at once. Park Jin Hyuk knows how to read a war situation as well. When he looks at it, it is dangerous.

“The mutants look like some kind of human army. They’re moving systematically.”

Cha Jun Sung was thinking the same thing. It may be dizzying, but it is in an orderly fashion.

Mutant is an umbrella term that humans have named them. They too are of different types and take prey or attack. They need to consider the possibility that there could be mutants that take command.

“Odin. Search for a mutant showing unique behavior. You guys too.”

It is more effective to have all 4 people do it rather than doing it by himself.

-[Northeast direction 120m, there is an unidentifiable signal coming from a mutant on the facade of a towering building. It seems to be of the systemic family.]

The helpers check the location. It comes up on the screen inside their helmets.

“Karakan.”

Cha Jun Sung saw the mutant and said its name. It is weak in battle, but it is a tricky one to deal with. Higher levels cannot withstand its control.

“It must have put in months of work to control such a large scale of mutants?”

There are several tens of thousands. Not even a level 6 would be able to get all of them under control in an instant. Since it is lacking in ability, it has worked with time and effort.

“Jin Hyuk. Check the mutants on the roof. Shoot and kill as many as you can.”

“Okay!”

Park Jin Hyuk stares at the battlefield. It is a horde. The entire city is a target. There is no issue for Kyoko, who is not a sniper, either. They will hit their targets even if their eyes are closed.

“Koharu, kill the level 3 and 4s.”

“What are you going to do?”

“Me?”

Cha Jun Sung put the Wolf Kill over his shoulder. People should by all means do what they are best at. If roles become warped, it would be better not to do anything.

“Wreak havoc. Hercules, block anything coming at Jin Hyuk from the center.”

“Mission confirmed!”

Cha Jun Sung flies up. The impact from his departure cracks the roof. Koharu looked at the remaining 2 people and dove in among the mutants.

“Kyoko, do you know how to snipe?”

“No.”

“Just shoot.”

Park Jin Hyuk took the sniper rifle he used in the beginning out of his space compression bag. The power is okay. This is enough to take out this swarm.

# Chapter 112

---

Kung!

“Shut the fuck up!”

Violet poured curses and jabs of her spear out on the mutants drooling all around her. They will not stop coming at her. They call for death.

‘Oh, I was out of my mind.’

She snapped out of it. Her hot temper had created another mess. She needs to tone her temper down if she wants to get married, but she becomes a madwoman with the blink of an eye.

She calmed down and she identifies the overwhelmingly adverse situation. Killing is another issue, but she is about to be swept away by the wave. She needs to come up with a plan.

-[battlesuit’s remaining energy..... Less than 39%! Charging is urgent.]

Because it is the basic model, the energy runs out quickly. The battlesuit she completed in the virtual version could take a full day of this type of warfare.

It is the difference between a great sports car and a run down car

that is about to become scrap metal.

Violet adjusted the booster. She will need to get out of here first.

She cannot go on the ground because it is occupied by mutants, so she will have to make a path in the sky. With 39% energy, she will be able to fly for about 10 minutes.

“Let go!”

Several tails fly up and wrap around Violet’s ankles. They are like whips. She cannot fly because a couple of mutants have a hold on her.

Bang!

She eventually lost balance from the booster’s output, and plummeted to the ground. The mutants did not miss this chance to crush her.

She can see mutants ripping the battlesuit apart through the screen in her helmet. She can strengthen the outer shell and hold out for now, but it is like getting drenched in a drizzle.

“I can’t die like this!”

It is what everyone says right before they die. Those words came out of Violet’s mouth as well. She needs to live. She lives to live...



but by what means?

-[4 battlesuit signals detected 90m in the rear! Reinforcements are here!]

Unless the signal is blocked, they can transfer locations of battlesuits nearby. Gaia had read Cha Jun Sung's signal.

There is a shockwave right in front of Violet. It is a concussive shell that Lifers like to use. The mutants hit with this thrash.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung fell out of the sky with his Wolf Kill over his shoulder. The surface trembles and dust from the ground flies. It was an extremely stylish entrance.

To Violet, he looked like prince charming of fairytales.

“Get your senses together.”

“Ah!”

Pew pew pew pew!

Park Jin Hyuk and Kyoko started shooting from the roof. Dozens of mutants die. They do not shoot randomly, but aimed for the

mutants around Cha Jun Sung first.

Kung!

The level 5 watches from the roof and screams. It can be interpreted to something like 'Go catch them'. A section of the higher levels went in their direction, but they had already been prepared.

Pew pew pew pew!

Hercules blocked the path up and fires with the vulcan cannons in both of its hands. Its armed state is impressive, so it resisted from a large distance.

Koharu killed the level 3 and 4s. The level 3s are easy, but the level 4s took some time. Even still, she undertook her mission well.

“I’ll open up the path to the Karakan, so wrap that up.”

“Oh right! That asshole!”

“..... Excuse me?”

Violet covered her mouth with her hand. She had cursed without realizing it. Cha Jun Sung thought that she would become a party member who is hard to control.

She makes a slip even when they are meeting for the first time. If they get on friendly terms, the future is obvious.

Cha Jun Sung ran first. He brandishes the Wolf Kill with not just his arms but his entire body. He rotated it like a windmill and cut up everything that came at him.

If a mutant somehow avoided the Wolf Kill, he beat it with his hands and feet. Violet was enchanted with this image. He is rough and concise.

“Who is he?”

There is a high possibility that he is a ranker since he is using a battlesuit, but there is no Lifer who matches up. When Cha Jun Sung changed his sword, his fighting style had also changed.

If he had been sharp like a samurai wandering the world before, he is now like a general commanding a battlefield. Of course she does not recognize him.

“What are you doing!”

“I’m going!”

Violet had been staring blankly when she went into the open path at Cha Jun Sung’s yell. The Karakan is hiding somewhere fairly far from the battlefield.

It is the type to stay behind the scenes. It must be surprised. This unexpected variable had changed the tide of the battle.

Violet watches Cha Jun Sung and his party members as they work everywhere.

Their skills are one thing, but the party has a great balance. 2 people snipe while a cyborg protects them. There are assassins who target their enemies' shortcomings.

The blader who seems to be the leader is specialized in close encounter fighting and runs around as if the world is small. For a party of just 4 to be like this. It really is impressive.

From the way they act, they do not look to be part of a federation or large guild.

‘We can deal with questions later.’

There is a lot that she wants to ask, but they need to handle the battlefield first.

Though they will have to get rid of individuals regardless, killing the Karakan will bring down the command.

They can make an aggregate under one leader become more of a rabble.

Violet rushes at the Karakan. Cha Jun Sung took care of the higher levels that were trying to protect their leader. If any of them got through him, they were sniped.

“I told you I would kill you!”

Kyak!

The Karakan also realized that it has nowhere to retreat to and stopped running away.

It is a level 5 but its fighting ability is closer to a mid level 4. Running away can only be done when the situation allows for it. If there is no other option, it cannot keep retreating.

\*\*\*

Violet's javelin went through the Karakan's head and stuck in the building. The mutant's organs cannot function and the moment its head is hit, it dies.

The mutants' mental control is lifted. They are confused and look at each other. Then they gradually regain their natures.

The higher levels attack the lower levels and eat them. The lower levels run for their lives. It became a different kind of chaos than it was a few seconds before.

“Let’s kill the higher levels first. At this rate, half our points are going to go away.”

“Ah! Yes!”

Cha Jun Sung went around looking for the level 3 and 4s. Violet did the same. Each of the party members already had their own targets.

Once the Karakan was dead, everything went smoothly.

They cannot kill tens of thousands of mutants in a short amount of time. It will take a couple days. They first took care of the ones that wanted to attack them.

After about 6 hours, they were done with the level 4s that they could see and nearly done with the level 3s. They decided to go after the lower levels after realigning.

-[Everyone come down.]

The situation was stabilized, so Cha Jun Sung called Park Jin Hyuk and Kyoko down too. Koharu was already on the ground, so she joined them without being called.

“Is anyone hurt?”

“We’re not.”

“How about you?”

Kyoko took out her medical devices and looked back and forth between Cha Jun Sung and Koharu.

When they said that they are fine, she asked Violet as well.

“I’m alright as well. I thought you were a sniper, but you’re a medic?”

“Yes. The sniper is him.”

“Ahem!”

Kyoko motioned to Park Jin Hyuk. He straightened his shoulders and pretended to be cool. All he has done is to shoot at anything and hit it.

“How did you get here? It wouldn’t be through an open mission.”

Violet is curious. Though she was in danger, the mission had not opened because she was engaged in it. This party had found her while they were inside.

“Our party’s starting point is a city a couple days’ distance from

here.”

“A free mission?”

“Yes.”

It is standard procedure to do normal missions through the PDA and helpers.

Free missions are when they go through an area where it can be a hit or a miss. She had only heard of it and had never thought that there would be a party to do it.

How good are they that they do this without hesitation?

Honestly, this is the first time Cha Jun Sung is doing a free mission as well. After playing Life Mission for a long time, he can feel when some place has a high difficulty.

That was the case with Volgograd, which is close to this place. As Russia’s big city, the population is over 1 million. It could even be a level C advance or level B.

Would a high level mutant live in the middle of the road? Calculating these types of issues, he traveled this distance to rescue Violet.

If it had been too dangerous, he would have waited until the level



C mission she was in had opened up. Though she is a candidate for their party, their lives are priority.

Violet pulled her helmet back. Being surprised is one thing and being grateful is another. She had been able to avoid a dangerous situation because of Cha Jun Sung's group.

"I'll formally introduce myself. I'm Violet Florence, from Britain."

Her mysterious purple eyes showed once the helmet was down.

Koharu and Kyoko are attractive as well, but Violet's unique characteristic is evident unlike the sisters who have normal black hair and eyes. She has a rarity.

Cha Jun Sung was stunned for a second and came back to his senses. Park Jin Hyuk was also staring blankly, mesmerized. He has fallen into her sea of seduction.

Woong!

They all took their helmets off as well. It is courtesy to accept her introduction.

'Hm?'

Violet secretly hoped that Cha Jun Sung's appearance would be

over average.

His impression had been good until now. His entrance and first impression were the best. As long as he does not slip up with appearance, she could even become interested in him.

She is completely satisfied with the results. He is not extremely handsome, but he is soft and sharp. He also looks to be at least 6 feet tall. He passed.

“I’m Cha Jun Sung from Korea.”

“Park Jin Hyuk.”

“I’m Kyoko from Japan.”

Violet looked at Koharu. If they are going in order, it is her turn.

“I’m Kyoko’s sister, Koharu. Excuse me, but I have something to ask you.”

“I’ll answer everything.”

“Uh..... That spear and your battling style.”

“Excuse me?”

“The 36 rankers. Are you Empress of Light, who was active in Europe in the virtual version?”

Violet’s eyes become narrow. Koharu is asking as if she knows who she is, so she has put her guards up. How did she know?

Have they come from the Venter family? Or royalty? Are they with the World Federation?

‘No, they can’t be.’

External factors are not applicable in Life Mission. Even if they knew the name of the mission she entered, meeting would have been impossible unless it was by chance.

“I’m Amhu from South America. You don’t have to put your guard up like that. To run into you like this. This world is a small place. Well, since this is also Earth.”

“Huh?”

Violet blinked. She had heard about Koharu. She is one of the 6 female rankers. Is she the true leader of this party?

“Jun Sung, you tell her too.”

“Me?”

He is embarrassed to say his game name at this age, but he will say it a hundred times if it will help.

“So you really are Empress of Light. I’m Overload of South America.”

“Huh?”

# Chapter 113

---

Violet's big eyes became round. She is speechless and can only point at the two of them.

Overload, 1st place ranking. The only Lifer who succeeded in a level 9 raid.

“The one who beat Brayburke?”

“Who is that?”

“You don't know his real name? The strongest ranker you fought!”

The strongest ranker? All of the rankers he fought had been strong, but there had been 2 that were particularly difficult. 2nd place ranking Weapon Master and 4th place Blood King.

The former was ability and the latter because of his proficiency in PKs and his gear.

But if he has to pick one...

“Weapon Master?”

“Yeah!”

He had made a guess because it did not seem like she was talking about Blood King, and it seems he was right.

“Weapon Master Brayburke Venter. He’s the firstborn of British Duke Venter’s family.”

“Are there any normal people among the rankers? Koharu and other people. There are models and actors, now royalty.”

“There’s one here.”

Cha Jun Sung is a completely average person. There is something to what Park Jin Hyuk said though. Violet is also far from being average.

According to the notepad, she is the daughter of a famous mafia family in England.

“You changed your weapon.”

“It feels good in your hands.”

“Just from appearance, you look more like Asia’s Chamma Sword rather than Overload.”

“I guess I do.”

“Did you know he’s in the World Federation. They have 14 or 15 rankers.”

He knows. He heard from Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin. When he looked over the list of people who joined, they were all people who were recognized for good in the virtual.

The people who like freedom like those here are going solo and the sinister ones are going around together. Circumstances are the same in reality and the virtual.

“Violet, are you personally acquainted with Weapon Master?”

“We ran into each other a lot because our area of activity and nationalities are the same. He is in the World Federation with the royalty, and offered me a deal to join.”

They are moderately acquainted, but Violet finds Brayburke burdensome.

Their two families are yin and yang, so they cannot be compatible. One side is the top royal family in England and the other side is the top mafia clan in England.

Brayburke told her that if she joins the federation, the royalty and Venter family would help her go through the missions safely.

But with the emergence of a business, Life Mission, she gave up illegal work and rejected the offer as she did not have a reason to accept.

‘Everyone is running to the top from each of their own positions. I have to work harder.’

“Is this a solo mission?”

Koharu asked. If Violet had entered with a party or force, it would be normal for her to be sad. There is nothing like that. Cha Jun Sung only watched.

“I thought I could do it.”

“A level C 200,000 point solo mission..... There’s a limit to the battlesuit too.”

“I’m not going to do it again.”

She is being totally honest. From now on, she will not be taken over by conceit and will make sure to get a party or force together to enter missions. She had really been hit hard.

“Let’s move. We’ll realign and put our strength together to complete the mission.”

Even if they became safe for a moment, they are in the middle of



a city teeming with mutants. The battlesuits have fallen to half of their energy as well. Violet's is below 5%.

“Let's go somewhere high.”

“Over there!”

Cha Jun Sung's group and Violet went to the top of the highest building in this city. High places are the best to watch while resting.

\*\*\*

-[Congratulations. You have cleared a land dominated by a level C mission.]

The completion notice comes up and they receive reward points. Cha Jun Sung accepted Violet as a temporary party member. He did not extend a formal invitation.

He must first let her get a feel for what their party is like. They are not as big as a large guild, but they are not outdone in comparison.

Cha Jun Sung's plan worked. This party configured with just 4 people sweeps through the highest level missions. They are not complicated and they match well together.

Lifers who go around alone are bound to dislike groups.

Is uncomfortable the right word for it? It is the same for Cha Jun Sung's group and for Violet. She is a bit used to being in groups because she receives support from her clan.

‘If I’m included, it’s 5 people in 1 group?’

There are 3 rankers. Park Jin Hyuk, that big kid, is also good enough to be a ranker. His sniping skills reminds her of one of the 36 rankers, Light Shooter.

The medic in a battlesuit and 5 million point cyborg under Overload's possession support the party at appropriate times.

‘I don’t know anything about these people. It’s too early to join their party.’

They are appealing, but it is not a decision to rush. It would be okay to do so if it were a one-time party, but she needs to be careful with deciding on a fixed one.

‘Is it insufficient?’

Only Cha Jun Sung knows that she is a candidate for the party. Everyone else is reading between the lines. She is waiting for the bite.

“Mr. Cha Jun Sung.”

“Yes.”

“Can you give me your contact information? I’d like to repay you for saving my life.”

Repayment was Violet’s joining the party, but Cha Jun Sung did not make it obvious and told her how to get in contact with him. The party members were not suspicious either.

“Mr. Cha Jun Sung, you said that your helper’s name is Odin? Mine is Gaia.”

“I’ll keep that in mind.”

“I’ve been in this mission for too long. I’ll be going back first.”

It is a matter of gaining someone’s approval. Cha Jun Sung did not show impatience. Since they have exchanged helper names and contact information, there will be another opportunity.

Woong!

Violet goes back. She ended with the party members on simple courtesies.

“We should go back too.”

“We have to do the game we didn’t get to do!”

Park Jin Hyuk is excited by the thought of the game and dances. They are going to start refraining from levels D and E. There is time before they make an attempt at level C.

‘Closed Area. We’ll have to recruit Violet by then, or get her help.’

600,000 points. The mutant they have to kill is top level 5, Caicus.

\*\*\*

There is no such thing as an update in the game. When Life Mission was its virtual version, there were timely updates.

As it became reality, the element of it being a game and the updates disappeared together.

Woong!

The first change happened through the helpers without the Lifers knowing. Before application, it is a step that the operators need to take.

-[Currently, there are over 10,000 people who have opened level C missions. Application conditions established.]

-[Only level C Lifers who have achieved the conditions are updating..... Update complete. Sending coordinate movement to Mechanic City. Dimensional gate off.]

The Lifers did not notice that something was going on with the PDAs. There was no difference when just looking at it.

As always, they looked through the store and then went into missions. From their point of view, the PDAs have not changed at all. Even when the application is complete.

Only a few people noticed the change. Only the Lifers who opened level C, whether it was with their abilities or tricks, felt the changes that happened to them.

-[Welcome, Lifers. You are now able to enter Mechanic City, where you will be able to rest and where the store headquarters will be.]

Even when they heard this notice, the people who opened level C were doubtful.

They were not sure this meant about the headquarters and Mechanic City. But it did not take them a long time to understand.

This is a revolution. Just like when Life Mission was revealed to

the world in the virtual and reality versions, it brought a strong gust of wind over the world.

# Chapter 114

---

“The hell.....”

-[To put it simply, Mechanic City is a large public briefing room.]

Cha Jun Sung was speechless with Odin’s explanation and the new world opening up in front of him.

He had thought that nothing more in Life Mission could surprise him, but this was just an illusion. As the level goes up, there are things coming out that are beyond common sense.

A large city with an area of 2000km. It is larger than Korea’s Jeju Island. It is like looking 100 years into the future, full of things that they do not know of now.

It is too big to say that it is a city. It is the size of a small country.

After meeting Empress of Light, he accepted the changes while going through the PDA as usual while resting.

The path to Mechanic City is not hard. If they say that they want to go, the assigned helpers set the coordinates and open the gates. Since it is not a mission, they can go back whenever they want.

-[Extensive system. The human brain capacity can understand this concept at once. We will explain it whenever necessary.]

“I don’t have to understand everything. It’s like a city in Life Mission.”

It is a game. The only difference is that it is not connected to brainwaves like in the virtual, but has come over to the true body in reality. That is all he needs to know.

He will learn the parts of the extensive system over time. At times, it is easier to learn with the body than with the mind.

Cha Jun Sung looked around and thought, ‘So this is Mechanic City.’ The notepad does not detail specific parts. It only gives an overview of the main points.

It does not lay everything out, but just things like ‘Mechanic City opens when the number of Lifers who have opened level C reaches over 10,000.’

His surprise had been great even though he had already known about it, no matter how indirectly. So the average person would be dismayed.

“Without getting complicated, only explain the basics that I need to know immediately.”

Even if he is going to get to know the basics by experiencing them, he cannot wander around this large city without knowing anything. He needs to at least know the basics.



-[Mechanic City is maintained by top level and special cyborgs, and the only living beings who can enter are only Lifers who have met the conditions.]

-[It is a city. There are residential buildings there, so Lifers can live there if they use up all of their points.]

It means that they could completely live in Life Mission. If they do not return to reality, they become people who do not exist there. It is similar to migration or immigration.

This is welcoming for people who want to live freely in Life Mission without entering missions through separate dimensions and going through a process.

-[All items from levels S through E are sold because it is the store headquarters, but entry is limited if the level is not met.]

The basic principles of level classification are the same. If the PDA is an internet shopping mall, Mechanic City is a department store. This alone gives it a different flavor.

“Are there any places that are restricted or off-limits to Lifers?”

-[As long as they do not try to go outside, there will be no sanctions.]

-[The levels will separate the restricted areas, so they are not specified. Do not worry because you will not be arrested or anything.]

Odin told him that Mechanic City is created as a dome. It is covered in an incredibly thick alloy, so they could not get out even if they wanted to.

Put nicely, it is a large city. Put in another way, it is an isolated area. There are no complaints. A 2000km area is perfect to become tired just by moving around.

[If any wares are damaged, Lifers must pay in corresponding points.]

It sounds like they are being told not to make a fuss, but that is not the only thing. It said that it would not become involved in any way in Lifers' PKs or disputes.

Lifers can do whatever they want as long as they do not cause damage to the city.

Cha Jun Sung left the outer area and went toward the city center. There is a skyscraper with dozens of floors. Even the architecture is all state-of-the-art.

The exterior is grand, but the quiet is reminiscent of a ghost town.

It opened today. There are 10,000 people entering. There will be

more going forward, but it is large enough for millions of people to live in. It is lacking compared to the area.

On top of that, the 10,000 people were summoned to different locations and not everyone had been summoned. They do not know the geography, so they cannot meet even if they want to.

-[Jun Sung, where are you? This place is huge. What is this? We're like families that were separated or something.]

Park Jin Hyuk's voice comes out of the PDA. Where is he? How would he know. It is difficult to even choose a direction immediately. They are going wherever their steps lead them.

-[Cha Jun Sung, your location is zone A area 3. Exchanging locations with helper Zephyrus. Park Jin Hyuk is zone W area 2. The distance is 94km.]

Odin exchanged locations with Zephyrus. They are 94km apart. It would take days to meet by walking. If they get lost, there will be no end.

-[Since we're all separated, we should meet where Jun Sung is.]

-[Okay!]

-[Good!]

Kyoko made the suggestion. It is right for them to go to the leader. The locations have been identified due to the helpers. They just have to choose a place to meet and get to the area.

\*\*\*

Moving is easy. There is mundane transportation as there is in reality. There are taxis, subways, and buses. As it is a quiet town, of course there are no Lifers.

There was no traffic because there were no people, so they were able to meet that much faster.

“I saw 2 people on my way here.”

“Really?”

“Yes. We only talked for a moment and they said something about Spain, but they said they were a cadre of a large guild. They looked really confused too since they aren’t used to all of this yet.”

Park Jin Hyuk saw Lifers while he was walking around. They are all in the same situation so they did not ask each other anything and simply exchanged courtesies.

Cha Jun Sung, Kyoko, and Koharu in contrast, did not see any Lifers. Whatever they are doing and where they are hiding, they cannot be seen anywhere.

They do not have the thought that they need to meet others. It is just an observation.

When they were standing on the roadside, several heavily armed cyborgs passed them. They did not pay attention as though inanimate.

“Look how they’re armed. They’re holding all sorts of things. It’s war setting.”

Park Jin Hyuk looked at the passing cyborgs and whistled. Like he said, the cyborgs’ arms are great enough to bring out admiration.

They seem to be the best. Their basic battling efficiency must be at least level 5. With that setting, they are estimated to be high level 5 or mid level 6.

“They need to do that much to prevent any Lifers’ unexpected behavior.”

“Is that right?”

“Imagine there’s someone making a fuss with a battlesuit on. They’ll need to beat them if they need to in order to calm them down. It’s a safety device to protect this city.”

-[You have guessed similarly. As there are more Lifers, there will be more cyborgs. Everything will be in proportion.]

Odin added on to Cha Jun Sung's explanation. It is on speaker mode for the entire party to hear so that Park Jin Hyuk and the others could understand as well.

As the number of people entering increases, there will be weird people mixed in. If there is 1 crazy person in every 10,000, there will be 100 in 1 million people.

This is not the ultimate goal, but policing is one of the reasons for placing battle cyborgs. If they let their guards down, the city will fall into chaos.

“Well this is so sudden that I don't know what we're supposed to do first.”

“Since we're here, let's look around the city and find a place for us to stay. Once there's an inflow of Lifers, there will be rapid changes to this place.”

It is empty and boring now, but say hundreds of people come gathering in. They will see the bizarre scenes they saw in the virtual version again.

They will be coming in and out constantly, and they cannot rule out the chance that they might stay long term. They need to select a good residence just in case that happens.

When there are more Lifers and an imbalanced supply and demand, Mechanic City would be occupied and they might have to stay in a cheap house.

“Let’s go there first.”

Cha Jun Sung pointed to the tremendous skyscraper. It is a mega tower, used as a place to meet. Its other significance is the store.

# Chapter 115

---

Park Jin Hyuk swallowed and walks around inside the mega tower as if it is his house. One floor has a tremendous amount of space and it is plastered in items.

The floors are separated so that some are level E and some are level D and C. They cannot go up to level B because the store has not been opened yet.

And this is just the tip of the iceberg. There are hundreds of stores of this scale in Mechanic City, and each store has items that they sell.

If they want to buy the items that they want, they will need to go around to find them.

The more surprising thing is something that even shocks Cha Jun Sung. This will be the same with other Lifers.

“We can sell items we buy in Mechanic City to Lifers?”

-[That is right. As a privilege for level C Lifers, the PDA store is a solitary means but Mechanic City stores are enduring.]

-[They need to be items that you purchase because you have a purpose for it. Whether you purchased in store or from other Lifers.]



If they are careful, they can save on points. If they only buy what they need and then sell when it is time to replace, it will be a lot of help.

The helpers have already taken action in the case of abuse. They have made it so that they cannot go beyond a certain amount of points when selling items that they purchased.

They could benefit if they want to, but they cannot profiteer. If that condition is released, the purpose of Mechanic City disappears.

It is annoying for groups and a good thing for individuals like Cha Jun Sung.

“Wow! It’s really comfortable to see everything together after going through lists.”

It seemed mundane when they saw through their PDAs, but they now realized that there had been a lot of uncomfortable aspects to it.

They have nothing to buy, but there is fun in looking around. Honestly speaking, it is not that there is nothing they want to buy. There are, but they do not have enough points.

-[Time Limit: 8 million points, 1.6 million achievement.]

-[Explanation: Two hearts method. Since 2 energy cores are

attached, the vibration strength will be multiplied. It boasts incredible cutting power, but you need to keep in mind that there is that much risk.]

It is the weapon that Cha Jun Sung favored when he was mid-level. The names are the same in the virtual and in reality.

Though it is included in the usual meaning and vibrating category, two heart activates 2 energy cores simultaneously and output is increased.

Overload – it is the perfect weapon for Cha Jun Sung.

Each of the party members stand in front of the weapon of their dreams and look on affectionately. This drought of points does not end no matter how much they gather.

‘Is there a way to use the city to gain points? I feel like there is.’

There is. Though it may take some time, there is a way. However, Odin did not tell him what it is. Lifers need to figure this part out for themselves.

10,000 gained entry into Mechanic City, but no one noticed it. It is because there is not a single Lifer who has a job related to it.

They do not have time to think about how to make money when they are busy trying to get used to the city.

But it is not that difficult. Access is easier than expected as well. The only difference is who is first, and Lifers will figure it out soon.

Once that method is revealed, there will be strife. As they advance to more favorable positions, they will have more influence in Mechanic City.

After looking around the store for several hours, Cha Jun Sung went to look for an apartment. If they want to stay in Mechanic City, they will need a place to stay.

He is not going to go back to reality for the time being. He needs to experience the happenings of this place in order to get used to it.

The party members also respected his decision and enjoyed it as though they had come on vacation. Everything they saw was novel and exciting.

“I thought it’d be extremely expensive, but it’s cheap to rent if we just lower our standards.”

Park Jin Hyuk looked through a stack of papers covered in complicated numbers.

It is the pricing of dwellings by zone and area. There is not a separate realtor, but the way to trade is not very different from their methods at home.

When they find the buildings that are up for purchase, there is a cyborg in charge of managing it. As long as they have the points, they can become the owners on the spot.

The basics are trading, charters, and rentals, and the points they need to pay are widely split by the location and size.

The zones are A through Z and there are 30 areas in each zone. There is no difference between zones, but the prices are more expensive as the area number is lower.

For example, zone W area 2 where Park Jin Hyuk was summoned is slightly better than zone A area 3 where Cha Jun Sung was summoned.

The area that Park Jin Hyuk is talking about is above area 25 – a neighborhood on the outskirts if compared with Seoul.

As areas 25 through 30 are cheap, they are lacking in amenities for Lifers.

They need to come out a far distance if they want to buy something without using the PDA. It needs to be at least area 20 for it to be a neighborhood that can be lived in.

Since they have figured out the usefulness of Mechanic City, they cannot decide on an apartment without thought. There are too many things that they need to consider before making a decision.

“We can’t ignore geographic factors. It’ll come into play a lot later.”

“I know that too. I’m just saying that we should start out easily because we don’t have enough points to overdo it and there aren’t very many competitors.”

They can get one room for a couple thousand points in cheap places on trading standards.

Since the prices get higher as the area goes lower, a small apartment or house in zone A area 3, where they are now, will cost tens of thousands of points.

Large ones will go from 500,000 to 1 million, and buildings reach over 2 million to 3 million. The mega tower with stores or buildings with dozens of floors are in the tens of millions.

As the price is higher, there are more benefits. There are so many that they cannot be listed.

“Odin, that building. Is it the place I’m thinking of in Life Mission?”

-[You are right. This is maintained on a system that is 100% in synchronization with the virtual version.]

The building that Cha Jun Sung is looking at is not that much smaller than the mega tower. It can be used as residence, but it is not a store.

Training Room.

It does not mean a gym or health center. It is a place for training where Lifers can virtually battle all types of mutants.

It plays as important a role as stores do to Lifers. It is something he had wished to see, but it was a new feeling to see it in reality.

“Let’s go there and then decide. Let’s each try it out while we’re there. Jin Hyuk, I’m pretty sure you haven’t seen this since it hasn’t been long since you joined Life Mission.”

The training room system only takes above level 5. This means that there is no information on levels 1 through 4. Park Jin Hyuk was in Life Mission for a shorter period of time.

He would not have been able to gain entry in the short period of 1 year.

Koharu and Kyoko frequented it, so they only showed interest and did not get surprised. Cha Jun Sung and the party members walked over slowly.

Zing!

When they got to the entrance, the door opened automatically. A cyborg was waiting at the counter. There is no greeting to welcome the guests.

The cyborg explained concisely. There are many ways to get season passes, but Cha Jun Sung's group only got a one-day pass.

They received cards that would allow them to deal with levels 5 and 6 for a day. The price is 20,000 points – expensive for a one-day pass, but it is worth trying out.

Cha Jun Sung's group went into a large space that the cyborg led them to.

Physical examinations would soon be starting. They will need to create characters if they want to go into virtual battle and in order to do that, they need to quantify Lifers' physical abilities.

Everyone except Park Jin Hyuk was used to it. Bizarre machines measured their muscular strength, health, and speed, and had all of their gear inspected as well.

The examination ended after about 1 hour. It did not take too long.

They left the examination room and went to the rooms written on each of their cards. They can fight as a party, but they decided to experience it separately.

The training room in zone A area 3 is empty as Cha Jun Sung's group is the only people there. In a few months, it will be packed with Lifers.

If people use tricks like riding buses, they can get to level C. They just cannot get over to level B through the level C advance mission because they will be held back by contribution.

The room provided a pleasant space for people to stay in. It is like a luxury apartment. He can see a wide space that leads into the room on the right.

It is blocked with a glass door and there is a card reader.

Woong!

-[Card scan, one-day pass confirmed. Entry into training room allowed.]

It is a dark atmosphere. It is normally like this. It is easier to concentrate in a dark space than in a bright area. It has been created so that Lifers can concentrate.

There is a cushioned chair in the middle of the room with a helmet. It is the gear that makes the virtual battle possible.

Beep beep!



Cha Jun Sung put the helmet on, sat on the chair, and saw a large hologram pull up in front of him. There is a selection of many level 5 and 6 mutants and maps.

“Search, Caicus.”

A list of hundreds of mutants is only dizzying.

One day is not a generous amount of time. It is obvious that he will lose to a level 6, and it is better to choose a particular type of level 5 instead of looking through all of them.

-[Searching Caicus..... Search complete. Please select details.]

Just as people have different physical conditions, there is a difference between mutants of the same species. It is telling him to choose between whether he will fight with a weak one or a strong one.

The Caicus is 9 to 10 meters tall and has 100 times the muscular strength of humans. There are many other surprising aspects about it, but this is the basic form.

If he chooses one with the highest specifications, it will be like a top level 5.

“Start with a weak one.”

He will start out easy. Cha Jun Sung honestly did not think that he could win if facing it off one-on-one. They will be similar or he will be disadvantaged.

Winning? It is important. If he wants to complete the mission, he will need to kill the strongest mutant that appears in that mission.

But that is the case when going through a mission in real life. Right now, it is more important to focus on understanding the Caicus than it is to win.

He fought it countless times in the virtual, but he cannot become arrogant. If this happens, everything he creates in the future will collapse.

“Let’s have fun for one day, today.”

He will put his entire body into it since there is no danger of dying.

# Chapter 116

---

Bang!

A pole pulled out fully hits the center of Cha Jun Sung's battlesuit.

Since there is a lot of strength nested in it, the impact itself is that of several tons. The outer armor strengthened, but the chest and stomach parts were destroyed.

Bang bang bang!

Cha Jun Sung flew back 100 meter and went through a couple buildings.

-[Battlesuit 78% damaged. Urgent care not possible because damage rate is too high! Fracture in left wrist, fracture in sternum and 3 right ribs, danger of organ rupture.]

This did not happen with one hit. The damages accumulated as they battled, and the battlesuit's energy fell.

“Ugh..... It's strong.”

Cha Jun Sung forced his trembling hand and stood up.

There is no pain because it is a virtual battle, but the system

places constraints so that the parts with problems cannot function properly. He is a wreck right now.

He tried to balance himself by putting his right hand on the wall.

The battlesuit on his left arm is bent into a deformed shape. Imagine what it looks like inside. If this were real, his skin would have ripped and been coming out.

A 13m tall monster walks toward Cha Jun Sung. He is inside a building, but the system tells them whether or not an enemy is alive.

If this were reality, it would have realized instinctively. This virtual battle does not end until one side dies. Looking at the situation, it seems like Cha Jun Sung will die.

It was wounded during battle and there is blood flowing from all over its body. A part of its thigh has been dug out deeply and a white bone shows.

It still looks to be in much condition than Cha Jun Sung is in all aspects.

Bang bang!

The monster used its arms that are as though they are made of thousands of iron bars to sweep away the building that Cha Jun Sung was in.

The Caicus and Cha Jun Sung met eyes with the Caicus looking on in arrogance at its opponent and Cha Jun Sung in anger.

Its yellow teeth come out through its teeth. Of similar level mutants, it is a level 5 Caicus until its genes go through variation.

It is a head and a half taller than the average. It is also that much larger and its muscles are thicker. Its physical ability has only strengthened by 50%, but it has Cha Jun Sung at its mercy.

He fought for a few hours with a weak Caicus of about 9m. A mid level? He barely won against it. He raised the level of difficulty little by little.

As expected, he was at a disadvantage against a Caicus at average level. It is too much to take on alone, but he would be able to handle 2 of them if he works with Koharu or Park Jin Hyuk.

Cha Jun Sung took his helmet off in frustration and spit out blood. It is virtual, but it is as detailed as though it were reality. Every single detail was given attention.

There is no clear reason for his fighting with a top level. He has 5 hours before his time in the training room is over and he just wanted to try it out on a whim.

As a result, he is being beaten up. He did not take it lying down though. Overload's pride would not allow for that.

Bang!

He squeezed the remaining energy in the battle core and advanced to the front of the Caicus' face. All it takes is 1 second to go a distance of 13m.

The Caicus took a step back and tried to grab at him. It was attacked by this type of trick multiple times and was wounded. But Cha Jun Sung was expecting that as well.

Bang!

The booster burst for a moment and pushed his body forward. The big hand grabs at the air. Cha Jun Sung is already on the Caicus' right side.

“This is a body hit with all of my soul in it.”

All 6 of the boosters on his body were activated and he became a fist, striking the Caicus' unprotected face.

The impact was large and the Caicus falls over. It is the perfect opportunity to leave a mortal wound. He would have taken this chance if he had his Wolf Kill, but that had already been destroyed.

Bang!

“Damn.....”

When the Caicus fell over, it swiped at Cha Jun Sung as though swatting a fly. He was embedded in the concrete ground with the tremendous hit.

-[Damage rate of battlesuit 97%, virtual blackout, body fractures, organ ruptures, fatal injuries beyond regeneration. You worked hard.]

This notification is not from Odin. It is an artificial intelligence appointed by the training system. Odin is in the real battlesuit.

“I lost.”

Kung!

The Caicus gets up and roars. It beats its chest with both arms like a gorilla. It is a kind of victory performance for beating a strong opponent.

It lifts a large foot. It is big enough to cover Cha Jun Sung. It is going stomp him to death. It is virtual, but he still feels annoyed that he has been put in such a situation.

“I’ll be back.”

Cha Jun Sung is flattened. The battlesuit is completely destroyed,

and his blood and guts come flinging out. He was logged out of the training.

\*\*\*

It will be the case anywhere in the empty Mechanic City, but there is no end to the quiet in zone D area 29.

No Lifers were to be seen and only a couple cyborgs wandered around.

Finding a needle in a haystack is used when something is really unlikely. That is the probability of Lifers running into each other in Mechanic City.

Zones separated by the alphabet and 30 areas of subdivisions.

The helpers said that each letter is for a population of million people like a large city. Even if they are separated into areas, the fact that it is of an enormous scale does not change.

It is weird to run into other Lifers and normal not to. However, probabilities are just a simple numbers game unless it is 0%.

A blue dagger slashes the throat of a Lifer. It is a vibrating weapon. Since the metal armor has been deactivated, the impact tights' defense is not enough to block it.



The carotid is cut and blood pours out. The Lifer clutches at his throat.

He cannot breathe and his body grows heavier. He still did not die.

It is an effect of his body modification. As it strengthens everything else about him, it also increases his vitality. He can be treated if he puts medicine on it or is treated in the briefing room.

That is why he did not let go of his life line even though he was dying. How could he let go when he is in such a great world? It is unfair and makes him angry.

The vibrating dagger goes into the Lifer's head. The brain, one of the most important organs, is penetrated. He cannot live. As proof, his pupils become cloudy.

-[You have earned 110,000 points and 1000 achievement points.]

“Wow! 110,000? This is jackpot. This punk must have been preparing for the 4th stage of body modifications.”

He had been lucky. It means that the Lifer had 1.1 million points. He would have been a Lifer who could go up to level C if he just gathered a little more.

“He he! This yellow monkey gave me 70,000 too.”

“Oh? That’s jackpot. So it was 180,000 combined?”

The first PK upon entering Mechanic City had been 180,000 points.

The murderers lick their lips. It is rare to find a Lifer in this place. The 2 people killed just now had really been found by chance.

There had been 1 person at first. He was going to attack but decided to wait because the Lifer might call out for a friend. Since another person came out when he waited, they decided to share.

There are a lot of points because they have opened level C. They want to catch as many of them as they can, but there are none to be seen. It is a pity, but they’ll leave it here.

“Huh?”

“What?”

“Hey, that’s a Lifer over there, right? A woman? Wow! Good! She’s beautiful.”

One of the murderers detected a beautiful woman walking on a street hundreds of meters away. It is thanks to his 4th stage of body modifications.

“Are there more?”

“I don’t think so. Should we wait?”

“No! Don’t wait it out and let’s just attack. That kind of girl is going to have a lot of relationships with men.”

He has never seen a pretty woman who does not do her face’s worth. The murderers decided not to wait. The guild members are all far away.

They somehow killed well this time, but it would take some time for everyone to gather. If they are outnumbered, they could reap damages instead of killing the opponent.

# Chapter 117

---

“What is this? Tsk!”

Violet walked around the exhaustively large Mechanic City and complained. She came because it was opened, but there is nothing to do.

She is smart. She realized the usefulness of this place when she was listening to the explanation from her helper, Gaia.

“What is this man doing that he isn’t picking up? He doesn’t seem to be ignoring me from his reaction, but should I have taken note of everyone else’s helper names as well?”

While Violet was roaming the city, Cha Jun Sung was wrestling the Caicus in the training room.

Whenever Violet has Gaia request contact with Odin, they only get the message ‘He is not in a state to pick up at the moment. Please try again later.’

Violet only knows Cha Jun Sung’s helper name. If she had asked for Park Jin Hyuk’s as well, she would not be so frustrated.

-[Miss, where are you? The family elites are scattered.]

-[I’m in zone D area 29, but I’m crossing into area 28 if I walk a

little more.]

-[Hm..... That's 76km away from where I am. We all exchanged locations. If you let us know where you are as well, we will go find you.]

The man who contacted her is one of the cadres from her family. He watched her grow up, so there is a lot of trust.

She looked around, found a fairly prominent building, and relayed its name with her coordinates. He said that with a generous amount of time, he would arrive in 1 or 2 hours.

Violet plopped down on the stairs at the entrance to the building. It is full of an artificial smell. There is not even a single ant.

This is in reference to real ants. There are a lot of things like trees, but no life. This is excessive cleanliness. There is bound to be aversiveness if something is too perfect.

“What little rat is watching me? Ugh, all things with dicks are the same.”

Violet curses. She is not so crude that she would curse upon a first meeting, but she cannot help it if someone is watching her in hiding.

Though she tries to think about it positively, she cannot find good intent.

“The pretty chick has a pretty mouth too.”

“Ke ke.”

“Ugh.... I’m too fed up with this to even get angry. I’m sure you won’t listen to me anyway, but I’ll give you a chance. Just get lost. Then, I’ll let you live.”

2 Lifers creep out from the corner of the building Violet is sitting in front of. They are murderers. She scratched the floor with the spear in her hand.

She only scratched the surface slightly, but the stone is chipped and powder flies. It is a demonstration of force. The murderers realized that she is as powerful as she speaks.

To enter Mechanic City, one has to go through buses or be really skilled. They must have met the latter, though they do not know that she is the Empress of Light.

‘Is she for real?’

‘She doesn’t show surprise. And she’s relaxed. Her skill must be real. But there are 2 of us. If we have equivalent specifications, numbers can’t be underestimated.’

He is not wrong. If their specifications are the same, numbers

will be the determining factor. They could not even guess that Violet has a battlesuit.

It is a given. There are not even 40 people all over the world with battlesuits.

Though not exact, there is a lot of credible information if they go looking for it in Lifer World. When combined, they can paint a picture.

From what they know, there are only 4 women who have battlesuits. The rest are all men, and they are all eminent rankers.

There could be more, but they did not think that it would be right in front of their eyes.

Visually, metal armors do not look very different from battlesuits unless examined carefully. Of course, it is noticeable if someone has a really good eye.

“You seem to be pretty skilled, but you think you can handle 2 of us?”

When fighting with a female Lifer, they need to see her as a Lifer and not a woman. If she is proficient in using weapons and has gone through body modifications, she cannot be seen as a woman.

“Fuck! You’ll die? I could take 200 guys like you – no – is 200 too much? I could take 20, you dimwits.”

Violet quickly corrected herself after she said 200. If there are 200 people who have gone through 4th stage of body modifications, she cannot win even with a battlesuit.

“Crazy bitch! Will you be able to say that even after I have you flattened out under me?”

“What? Crazy bitch?”

Violet bolted up, using her spear as a cane. She likes the name Empress of Light, but does not like it when people call her Crazy Bitch.

She would fight even a similar level ranker said it, but this nobody is saying it.

“I won’t kill you guys. Instead, I’ll cut your balls off.”

The spear creates wind pressure. It is a bother, but she had been bored and she now has a toy to play with. She will play with them until the family elites arrive.

“He he! Don’t worry. We don’t intend to kill you right away either.”

“What a load of bullshit!”



Woong!

Violet wore her battlesuit. She was already wearing it, but she had deactivated the outer shell for comfort and had decreased the volume as much as possible.

It had been more difficult to determine because she had put her helmet away.

“What!”

“Battlesuit!”

“Shut up. You’re being noisy.”

Violet put her spear forward and attacked. It is time to cut their balls off.

\*\*\*

“Who are these guys?”

“I was alone when they said that they would flatten me under them, so I cut their balls off.”

Bolton of the Florence clan, who aids Violet, covers their lower bodies from view with his hand. The 98 Lifers behind him did the

same.

The murderers' metal armors are deactivated, crying with the whites of their eyes showing. They realize their situations even though they have gone out of their minds.

“This tattoo?”

“I saw it too. They're members of a PK guild from North America. I tried to get information from them, but they're such underlings that they don't know anything.”

There is a red devil tattooed on the back of the murderers' hands, indicating that they are members of the Blood Kingdom guild in North America.

They are mostly active in North America, but they will go anywhere where there are Lifers. There are traces of them in England as well.

They are evil people who do not discriminate with their PKs in mission and reality. They have gotten to the point where the Queen put Weapon Master Brayburke into action.

There is frequent friction with the Florence clan as well. They can guess who the leader of Blood Kingdom is. There is suspicion, but no evidence.

Brayburke told them that Dark Side and Hell Sword contacted

each other. Bad habits die hard and like minds go around together in reality as well.

Bolton gave a nod. It is a command to get rid of the murderers who take part in disgusting actions. A few Lifers stepped forward and dragged them away.

They did not come forward randomly. The Lifers who were worthy of gaining points came out. If they kill the murderers, they will earn at least 100,000 points.

“It’s quiet. It looks like a modern city of the future, but there is no humanity.”

“Right?”

It is what all of the Lifers are thinking. The members need to embrace this novelty before they can get used to it.

“Gaia. Is there still no word from him?”

-[There is a dialog signal. If you would like to connect, you may do it now.]

“Wow! Finally!”

Violet smiled brightly and was so happy she could jump up and down. Bolton knows the basics of what is going on because he

heard from her. She is going to meet the person who saved her life.

“Hurry up and connect us!”

-[Sending Odin a request to connect..... Request complete. You are being connected with Cha Jun Sung.]

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung lost in a virtual battle against a top level 5 Caicus. It is a dreamlike virtual battle, but there is one thing that he realized for certain.

He decided that the level C store would not be able to handle level 6, much less the top of level 5. For the sake of safety, 2 people need to combine their strength to take on a mid-level 5 as well.

Even if he purchases weapons and sets supporting gear, he could risk his life to get through the advance mission but the problem is what comes after that.

He does not dwell on his defeat. If he is lacking somewhere, he can gather it. If he loses confidence because he lost in the virtual version, it will be hard for him to concentrate in Life Mission.

Cha Jun Sung came out of the training room and decided on a residence in zone A area 25 after much thought. It was a trade for 10,000 points.

The building is clean but it is not to his liking. It is geographically uncomfortable.

He wants to get a place near the training room and mega tower, but that costs too much. There is a slow influx of Lifers, so it is overflowing in commercial spaces.

It will be good to watch the situation and gather points before moving.

His party members left finding the residence to him and were completely encompassed by the training room. Park Jin Hyuk in particular said that it was like doing a raid in the game.

“But Odin, can we sell this house again later? This is technically an item that I bought in Mechanic City.”

-[..... You can sell it.]

Odin’s voice is strangely slow. It is like when people are hesitating to say something and have no choice but to say it in the end.

“Oh! For how much? Items in the store are blocked well so there can’t be any profiteering.”

-[..... There isn’t.]

“What are you talking about? Say it properly. Why are you acting weird?”

[There is no limit.]

“Huh?”

[Store products are infinite because they can be created in factories as long as we have the materials, but there is a limited number of buildings in Mechanic City.]

Cha Jun Sung thought hard. He never learned real estate, but higher education is emphasized in Korea and he is a college graduate.

“They’re limited? The price is decided on when first buying from a cyborg, but that disappears when going over to Lifers?”

-[Yes.]

Scarcity. Imagine millions of Lifers enter Mechanic City. They will surely try to find a residence, won’t they?

There is a lot of demand, but if there is a supply cap? There will be auctions and price wars.

Even in reality, there are people with useless pieces of land who suddenly become rich. There is no reason why this cannot happen in Mechanic City.

“That’s a scam. If it’s going to be like this, you should have blocked real estate like you did with the items.”

It is an advantageous system for Lifers who have entered groups.

If large scale personnel hoard them and then sell to other Lifers at an expensive price, the profiteering system the helpers blocked becomes pointless.

“I don’t think you guys would have done this without thought. Why is it like this?”

-[It is to increase efficiency.]

“Efficiency?”

[What are you going to do if there is something you want to buy but don’t have enough points for?]

What would he do? He would have to go through missions and gather points.

Cha Jun Sung understood right away. It means that if he wants something that is scarce and finite, he needs to catch a lot of mutants.

If he just advances and gathers the points, he can purchase an item in the store at any time. Odin is emphasizing the difference in

value.

There are a lot of people in the game who invest millions of dollars to acquire a look set that changes appearance with all types of options.

Helpers used the human psychology that they want to look better than they actually are.

That is why there is no restriction on real estate as there is on items. They are to choose the one of the two that is more satisfying to them.

“Large guilds will take over.”

-[Whether it is with items or real estate, there is no way to prevent the flow of it. If you feel iffy about it, you can make a group too.]

Make a group? He is averse to it. He cannot manage it. People have a temperament for that as well. He needs to have the talent for it and Cha Jun Sung is hopeless on that end.

There is a point to what Odin is saying as well. Everything gets stronger as they gather and as there are more. Even on Earth where money reigns over points, groups are at an advantage.

Even if Mechanic City did not function with relation to the current system, groups have more influence than individuals do in



this place.

Anyone with a complaint forms groups. If not, they stay silent like Cha Jun Sung does. There is a gap between the powerful and those who are not in any world.

“I’ll just ask one thing. Are there any restrictions? Can you dominate Mechanic City as long as you have the points and achievement points? That can’t be it, can it?”

-[There is a limit to how much real estate a Lifer can own by class.] [The zone does not matter, but it is different based on the area and the scale of the constructed building.]

Cha Jun Sung massaged his forehead. He understands what Odin is saying. It is just that trying to accept it makes his head hurt.

Beep beep!

The PDA blinks. It is something that happens when the request for a call comes in. There is no reason for it to be the party members. It must be Gaia.

-[Shall we pick up this time?]

“Yeah.”

When Cha Jun Sung ended the training and came out, Odin told

him that Gaia had requested contact. He did not call back however.

He is testing her out. The person who wants it more will call. Cha Jun Sung is actually in a rush, but it looks like Violet is clinging more because he saved her life.

-[Look here! How is it impossible to get in contact with you for half a day? Are you ignoring me on purpose?]

As soon as the PDA was connected, Violet attacked Cha Jun Sung. She has a hot temper. It is a relief that she did not curse at him.

-[I'm sorry. I was in the training room until now and must not have seen it.]

It is not a lie. It is 90% truth. Excluding the one time he ignored her call when he came outside, he really had not been in a situation to pick up.

-[Mechanic City has that? The training room in Life Mission?]

-[Fascinating, isn't it?]

This place is as if the large city of Life Mission has been moved here. Cha Jun Sung thought that it is fascinating. It is because they thought the same.

-[That's good. I was uneasy about facing some, but you asked me

to join your party, right? I'll join on some conditions.]

-[What are they?]

-[If you win me, the Empress of Light, I'll lend the party my spear.]

Cha Jun Sung was silent. Empress of Light, 3rd place ranking. In Life Mission, 1st through 10th places of the 36 rankers are the truly skilled people and the rest are just fillers.

Even within the top 10, the classification is split again into 1st through 5th and 6th through 10th.

In the virtual, he pushed Weapon Master and Blood King back with upgrades like bizarre items, skills, and the 10th stage of body modifications.

All he has now is a basic battlesuit and a bag of vibrating weapons. He cannot guarantee that he can beat her or other weak rankers.

He was not sure what Violet was saying, but he is averse because she is saying that she wants to fight. Weapons are for destruction.

-[Very well. If you tell me your location, I will go look for you with our party members.]

-[I'm in zone D area 29. First, come to zone D. There isn't a training room in this area. I think I'll need to move to a top area.]

Cha Jun Sung entered zone D in his PDA. The distance is automatically calculated. It is pretty far. He will be able to get there quickly because the road is empty.

# Chapter 118

---

After calling Cha Jun Sung, Violet and her clan cadres went to zone D area 5. Training rooms are in the top areas 1 through 5.

It is weird for 100 people to be moving together, but number of Lifers they come across could be counted on their fingers. Everyone is busy, so they do not acknowledge each other.

-[Targets are moving to zone D area 5. Current location is area 6.]

-[Did you say that it's 1 force, 100 people?]

-[Yes!] [The woman wearing a battlesuit killed 2 guild members with a spear?]

A Lifer follows Violet while communicating with his supervisor. He saw his colleagues have their balls cut off with his own eyes.

He was hidden in a far away place, so he was out of the battlesuit's range.

-[That's right.]

-[So we meet Empress of Light here. Does this mean that all 36 rankers will meet in Mechanic City? How fun. Is it a reappearance of those days?]

The person speaking to a murderer of Blood Kingdom is Hell Sword.

He, Dark Side, and Makung, newly recruited by Falvi Blood from China, are residing in the city with hundreds of guild members.

They had been wondering why they had lost connection with 2 of the guild members, but it was figured out. They had been hunting Empress of Light, but had themselves been hunted down. It is an inevident outcome.

-[Goal, entry to area 5.]

-[We'll be there soon. Be careful you don't get caught, and quickly report anything that's off.]

Hell Sword intends to take care of Empress of Light. They need to get rid of any rankers who do not join them early on.

If he had been alone, he would have planned while taking the risks into account. But there are 3 rankers here including himself, and she is only one.

No matter how strong Empress of Light is, she cannot take on 3 rankers.

The murderer hid himself even more upon Hell Sword's command. He only focuses on the role assigned to him. All he needs to do is watch the opponent's actions.

\*\*\*

Violet waits for Cha Jun Sung in front of the training room. She sent him her coordinates. The clan's cadres gather somewhere and rest.

If Blood Kingdom is active in Mechanic City, acting alone is dangerous unless at ranker level. To be precise, rankers are in danger as well.

It is the same here and there – groups are at more of an advantage than individuals are. It seems like something, but the need to go along with it.

“Wow! All of the houses in such a large city are all empty.”

“Why?”

“Isn't the family focusing on Life Mission these days? I thought about how it would be if the clan established a chapter here.”

With more incoming personnel, it will become a city made for Lifers.

As more people gather, the commercial will develop and there will be money. This is where points come out. It is possible to hold deals with items purchased in Mechanic City.

If they could see into the future..... It is beneficial to gain area.

“I was thinking the same thing, but you said it first. Suggest it during the clan meeting. There’s nothing to lose, so they will allow it. I’ll push for you if they oppose it.”

“I’ll trust you, Miss Violet, and speak up a bit to the elders.”

Violet is one of the heirs to the Florence clan. A woman cannot become the head, but her talents are so remarkable that she breaks tradition.

There is no heir in the clan with more influence than Violet has. The 98 cadres who entered Mechanic City were basically raised by her and Bolton.

It is possible if the two of them put their power together. If they come to know that there is no limit to the real estate here, they will go at it without restriction.

Superiors and subordinates will be divided by force according to occupancy.

There are only a few Lifers who know this information, including Cha Jun Sung. It is information that is easy to come by, but the helpers do not tell them first.



-[Light purple eyes..... The beautiful Empress of Light's trademark.]

While Violet and Bolton were in discussion, Hell Sword's group narrowed the encirclement. Violet and Benson did not notice because they were moving secretly.

The cyborgs knew this but did not say anything. As long as they do not create problems for the city, they do not interfere in Lifers' fights.

“What is that?”

“What?”

“That faint light reflecting from the glass. What's in that direction?”

A Lifer in the clan looks at the building with outer walls of glass. He felt like he could see a faint shape projecting from the glass and moving.

His colleagues focus on the glass. As the shape became clearer, they could tell that it is Lifers just like them. But there is something strange.

It does not look like they are moving from inside. It looks like they are stuck to the walls. Mirrors act in reverse from reality for a shape like that to come out.

“Holy shit!”

“Damn it!”

The Lifers created a circle. It is to watch the surroundings while protecting Violet and Bolton. They both felt that something was off as well.

Violet prepares for battle from the center of the circle. The clan's cadres are trustworthy, but there is no better shield than the battlesuit in this situation.

Hundreds of murderers show themselves from their hiding places. It seems they have been targeted because of the guys they killed earlier.

“Blood Kingdom – this trash dare crawl out in front of me?”

Wiing!

The weapon's vibrating function is turned on and creates a strong vibration. There are a lot of them, but they can win if they stand at the front and their subordinates support them from behind.

“I'll make you regret it.”

-[70% of battle core deployed. Booster output rate 70%. Scanning the field.]

Bang!

Violet's body goes up into the air. Her flying body with the long spear pointed out in front of her is reminiscent of a sharpshooter's arrow.

"It's been a while, Empress of Light."

"What?"

Violet turned her spear at the sound she heard from the side. Vibrating weapons collide and the silence in Mechanic City broke.

The power of the first violent collision is similar. Neither pushed forward or were pushed back.

"Are you..... Red Paint?"

"You recognized me right away?"

"You're the only person who would dye proper gear red, you idiot!"

Bang!

Violet pretended to recollect her spear, and jabbed at Hell Sword's side with the handle. Hell Sword strengthened the battlesuit's wrist and blocked it.

“Ke ke! You still underestimate others.”

“Shut up!”

Bang bang bang bang!

It is a dogfight. The Lifers only watched the two of them fight, and did not willingly get involved. But this flow does not seem like it will last. Because...

“You really are lively.”

Bang bang!

The bowstring that seems to be tied up in wire becomes taut. The Lifer aiming a bow at Violet from the building roof is Makung of the 36 rankers.

He is the only ranker who deals with bows. He is an expert in ranged combat and is also proficient in sniping. That does not mean he is weak in close range combat though.

Ping!

The arrow surpasses the speed of sound. The arrow arrives before the sound does.

Violet broke away. The battlesuit's search caught a danger signal. But Hell Sword did not leave her alone.

He approached Violet who was trying to avoid it and hit her head with the back of his sword. Her body plummeted to the ground from the impact.

Violet activates the booster right before colliding, and settles herself on the road. There is another one. The one shooting arrows.

“Makung is here too? You're the only one to use such weird arrows.”

Makung smiles. His arrows do not look like normal arrows. They are semi-automatic sniper rifles that are masked in all types of gear to look like arrows.

“Are you here to get revenge?”

“We were just going to send the kids but the guild member watching you sent us a description of you. And what do you know? It's Empress of Light. So the three of us came.”

“..... Three?”

Violet felt something wrap around her neck and moved her body backwards. A giant scythe swept by where her neck had been.

“Long time no see.”

“Dark Side! Oh, these crazies!”

Dark Side, ranking 8th. He has the second most evil reputation for PKs after Blood King. It is a horrible situation for Violet since even he is here.

‘Can’t he come quickly?’

She was hoping for Cha Jun Sung to come.

# Chapter 119

---

Clang!

An explosion? No. It is the thin sound of metals colliding.

With an eye for it, there is no way not to recognize it. A fight among Lifers. With this kind of ringing, it must be between people with battlesuits.

As soon as Cha Jun Sung heard the sound, he raised the car used for transportation. He had already entered area 5 and he was close to where the sounds are coming from.

There is a saying that one can die from being hit with a rock from out of sight. If he is swept into the battle by forcing himself in, he must hit from inside. If he wants to handle it, he needs to move with ease.

“It seems like they’re making a big mess. Oy! Look at the air shake.”

Bang bang bang!

Park Jin Hyuk stirs the air with his hand. They are not tangible, but there are weak waves lingering in front of their eyes. They are fighting vigorously.

‘Area 5, battlesuit. It can’t be Ms. Violet, can it?’

There is a possibility. Then the opponent? She is rude but is not the type to provoke a fight randomly off of the street. She is guarded where she needs to be.

“Kyak!”

Bang!

It is a woman’s scream. Cha Jun Sung changed his battlesuit into combat mode and kicked off the ground. A crack formed in the concrete and he shot forward like a bullet.

-[You have damaged an asset in Mechanic City. Will you detract 150 points? If you do not, you could receive a penalty.]

-[I’ll leave an automatic deduction system on. That is much more comfortable.]

The former is a warning sent to Cha Jun Sung by Mechanic City and the latter is from Odin.

-[If you cause damage, you can cancel cyborgs before they start moving with points. The deductions also increase with the amount of damage caused.]

With current circumstances, Odin leaves out all of the



explanation and gets to the point. He is being straightforward in saying that he needs to pay as many points as the damage he causes.

However, Cha Jun Sung sees it as a big restriction. It is not as easy as it sounds.

All he had done was create a crack by kicking off from the ground, and it had cost him 150 points. If he crashes into a building and creates a hole, it must cost several thousands.

It is not just a couple hundred or a couple thousand. It is a gamble. It stacks up. If the fighting continues and he keeps accumulating penalties, it could easily get to several tens of thousands of points.

“They’re really using their heads. So this is how they’re going to absorb points?”

It is like this in games as well. To try and recover the overwhelming amount of gold that Cha Jun Sung had in a game he enjoyed in his youth, they had created legitimate contents.

It is the foul intention not to leave them alone to gather points as they wish to.

As people gather, there are bound to be arguments. Squabbles between Lifers do not end with throwing fists. They are knife fights with their lives on the line.

The more the battles are cutthroat, the more severe damages will be and that is how much more they can take in points from Lifers. It is an incredibly smart move.

Cha Jun Sung jumped over the 5 floor building blocking him in one try. The booster extended his holding time and helped him look over the battlefield.

Empress of Light is being pushed back by Lifers holding a large scythe and sword.

Cha Jun Sung changes his direction while in the air. A steel arrow narrowly passed by his chest.

It is so powerful that it penetrated through the floor so far that it disappeared from view.

It seems he discovered Cha Jun Sung because he is in a high place. He thought that she was fighting 2 to 1, but the Empress of Light is fighting against 3 people with battlesuits.

-[Calculating path of attack..... Calculation complete! Currently moving.]

Pew pew!

Odin tracks the road. The tracking does not work because the

location changes every time he moves. The battlesuit's tracking is for prevention before something happens.

-[Jin Hyuk, go get him.]

-[Ok.]

Bang!

Park Jin Hyuk changed his direction as he was following Cha Jun Sung. He looked for a good place to snipe while holding his Head Hunter and watching for attacks.

He did not stay in the same place either, and kept moving. The difference between him and the enemy is that he reduces the distance while moving.

If he cannot stop the advance, they will be allowed to go all the way to the front.

-[Koharu and Kyoko, go help the Lifers on Violet's side. You can differentiate between them, right?]

Lifers of Blood Kingdom and the Florence clan are mixed together. They seem to have similar skills, but there is an incredible difference numerically.

-[I'll leave the wounded to you.]

-[Sure!]

Koharu took out her twin daggers and went into the vicious melee. She stabs at shoulders and thighs, and slices the side and cuts muscles.

Rather than kill the opponents, Koharu focused on assisting allies who are in trouble everywhere. She also took lives when she got the chance to.

PK, there is no hesitation in attacking Lifers. She is experienced.

In the beginning of the reality version, she gained hostility while going through missions with men. The human nature that comes out in an isolated world is similar to that of a beast's.

She killed dozens of people before she met Cha Jun Sung in Slayer's Prison. She did not tell him, but Kyoko is not that innocent either.

In the reality version, the things that men and women see and experience are very different.

“Fuck! Where did she come from!”

Koharu approached the cursing murderer, slit his throat, and quietly disappeared. He spewed bubbles of blood and collapsed.

Kyoko used the battlesuit's ability to pull the injured out from the battlefield.

The Florence clan was weary of Koharu's group, which had appeared so suddenly, but let their guard down once they realized that they are facing the same opponents and are allies.

Furthermore, one of them is heading to Violet who is cornered on the defensive. It is an emergency situation where they do not know when they might fall. They hope that these people are their salvation.

\*\*\*

“What are those guys?”

“We'll concentrate and take care of Empress of Light first. There's a tail on Makung as well.”

Hell Sword frowns at Dark Side. Everything had been going as expected when gate crashers had gotten involved. They no longer have Makung's support sniping.

He is not responding to the radio either. He is putting all of his concentration on getting rid of the tail. It is as though he is engaging with an enemy he cannot take for granted.

‘There are 2 there, 1 with Makung, and.....’

“1 on top.”

Dark Side and Hell Sword looked up at the sky and retreated more quickly from Empress of Light than they had come at her. Someone is falling on them.

Bang!

Debris flies from the impact of falling. Cha Jun Sung used his concentration to hit away the fragments with his Wolf Kill. Each one is a bullet.

Ping ping ping ping!

Clang clang!

An anomalous attack. Dark Side brandished the scythe in large movements to clear big fragments while Hell Sword took care of the small pieces going for the center.

“I’ve lost 800 points.”

Cha Jun Sung is complaining. He will not be able to fight in the city because he is scared to. Whenever he does anything, it costs him several hundred points. Those ruthless operators.

“Are you okay?”

“Thank you. You said that you lost 800 points? I lost 350,000 points because of those assholes! I’m going to kill them, whatever it takes!”

The area is chaotic. It has been completely devastated. The attractive streets of Mechanic City had been reduced to junk.

Cha Jun Sung only caused a little damage on his way to Violet, but she has lost a tremendous amount of points because she was outright fighting.

“We’re the same. The points that the 3 of us lost will be over 1 million.”

“Shut your mouth!”

Violet glares. She does not care how many points assholes like them lose. They are disgusting murderers who brought the fight first.

Dozens of Lifers the clan brought up and with whom she had affection for, had already died. With her nature, it is impossible not to be angry.

Knock knock.

Cha Jun Sung pat Violet's shoulder and squinted at Dark Side and Hell Sword. He did not recognize Hell Sword.

"Dark Side."

"You know me? Who are you?"

But he did recognize Dark Side. There are not very many Lifers who have large scythes. The weapon itself is a subculture.

No matter how much this is a 2 to 1 battle, Violet has been driven to the defensive. When he thinks that they are rankers at the same level, the suspects are narrowed to one.

"Are you Chamma Sword?"

Hell Sword spoke while looking over the Wolf Kill in Cha Jun Sung's hand. Asian, a heavy sword. The matching character is China's Chamma Sword.

"Huh? You don't remember? 2 years ago, Northern Asian, Cerberus raid."

Dark Side's pupils expand. He is normally cool and collected, but he has shown his agitation.

"Level 8 Cerberus. So you're Overload."



“You’re starting to remember when you were trying to strike behind my back and fell to it instead, right?”

Cha Jun Sung turns his wrist. Following the movement of his wrist, the Wolf Kill rotates like a fan. Dark Side did not answer.

How could he forget? He had failed not from an outright confrontation, but while trying to go behind his back.

“Ranking in the virtual is meaningless. This is reality.”

“Aha?”

Dark Side rolled his foot. He decreases dozens of meters of distance within moments.

Clang clang clang!

The scythe and sword go at each other. They are similar types. The scythe is heavier than the Wolf Kill. Hell Sword watched and then paired off with Empress of Light. It is 2 to 2.

“Red dye! You like the color red, so you must like blood too?”

Violet shows her madness. She has become the crazy bitch. The lost lives of allies cannot be compensated with anything. It is an eye for an eye.

“Ranking in the virtual is meaningless, but I did beat you, didn’t I?”

“You’re arrogant.”

“Well, this is exciting since it’s the first time I’m properly fighting with a ranker.”

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung applies the booster to his attack, kicking hard. He is better at this than any other ranker.

Bang!

Dark Side held his scythe up and blocked the incoming hit. His foot went through the ground under the weight and booster’s output.

“Your use of the booster is still the same.”

“This is what I live off of. I have to use it well.”

Bang bang bang!

Violet and Hell Sword are going head to head next to them. It is disadvantageous in the long run. Her energy was consumed while

fighting 2 to 1.

Hell Sword would not let her regain her caliber. This is his only chance to kill her. She knows this well too, so she is pushing forward with all of her might.

-[Koharu, can you get out of there?]

-[I can't. If I leave, the balance we barely created is going to collapse.]

Koharu's end is busy too. A tiger has joined in a fight between wolves, but there are more than twice the number of enemies. It is all over as soon as the tiger looks away.

Kyoko is also fighting off enemies while looking after the injured. She does not have special combat skills, but she is rushing in with her trust in the battlesuit's defense.

“Who's on that side?”

“Are you worried about the people you sent? Say your farewells. Makung is on that side.”

There is worry in Cha Jun Sung's face. He heard that he had been an archer in real life and had applied that in the game, quickly rising in ranks.

He is not a top ranker, but he is a murderer who enjoys PKs so he is outstanding with ranged combat. He could be too much for Park Jin Hyuk to handle.

He still trusts him.

“That kid is a sniper I recognize. He didn’t do the virtual version for long but if he had started at the same time we did, he would have been neck and neck with Light Shooter.”

Tang tang!

Cha Jun Sung pushed Dark Side out and spun his body, resting the Wolf Kill in its scabbard. Then he leaned forward.

“Come at me like before.”

“You’re... drawing the sword.”

Drawing is the basic with swords. Pulling out itself is part of an attack. Dark Side could not accede to the provocation. His body had been cut in half 2 years ago by that technique.

He thought, ‘This is reality. It isn’t the virtual. It won’t happen like it did then’ but his feet stayed in the same place. If he goes in and makes a mistake, it will be a repetition of what happened then and he will die.

“If you don’t come..... I’m going.”

6 boosters flare up. It explodes before he pulls it out. The acceleration is doubled and there is an attack that breaks the sound barrier in close proximity.

Bang bang bang!

It was time for Cha Jun Sung to become a sharp sword. Suddenly, dozens of special cyborgs flew into the middle of the battlefield. What is happening?

An unexpected appearance. The battle came to a lull. They cannot handle the aftermath if they attack the cyborgs, so they retreated upon a tacit agreement.

-[Helper name, Crandell, Ajax, Tayron..... We are arresting 39 people including these for declining deduction of points. If you refuse to obey orders, we will execute force.]

Everyone was astounded. It is entirely unexpected. The cyborg did not distinguish between the factions and randomly did a roll call of the refractory Lifers.

They had consumed points while in battle. Since they have nothing left, they cannot deduct but they do need to fight. It has become like this because they had ignored it.

All of the Lifers who were called out were in shock and looked to

their respective captains. Dark Side, Hell Sword, and Violet had looks of disbelief as well.

Special cyborgs can fight against level 6s with just the basic arms. Even if everyone here fought together, they would not be able to take 5 of them on but there are 30 of them here.

They cannot do anything but submit to them.

‘So it’s that kind of system.’

They do not know what will happen to the Lifers who have been arrested. They are sure the Lifers will not be killed.

Bang!

The Lifers’ eyes follow the sound of the explosion up a building. There are masses of red flames and smoke.

It is the only place where the battle has not caved to the silence and is still going on. It is Park Jin Hyuk and Makung’s battlefield, distant from the main battlefield.

# Chapter 120

---

Ping!

Park Jin Hyuk flattened himself on the ground as if sliding. An arrow swept past him and went through a building behind him. Its strength is an eyesore.

An arrow that finds its target? It even penetrates concrete that is several dozens of centimeters thick from a couple hundred meters away. He has countless types of arrows.

They matched the situation they were needed for, exploding, freezing, rotating, becoming transparent, creating smoke, and more. Somehow, it is trickier than a gun.

Ping ping ping!

Park Jin Hyuk is also experienced in shooting on the move, but he is clearly being pushed back.

The performance of his enemy's machine bows is impressive. The only things that the Head Hunter has only that bow is power and range. The rest falls behind.

He could not tell when far away, but the bow's advantages come out more and more as they become closer. Beyond a nuisance, he is now annoyed.

If he is to catch him as Cha Jun Sung told him to, he needs to get close. This is where the problems arise. The Head Hunter is a complete far range sniper rifle.

He switched the scope for medium range, but that is only makeshift. It is not a weapon that can shot by eyeing in the first place.

“Since it’s become like this, I’ll just go into hand to hand combat. I’ll beat you to death.”

He will find a way to get in front of him to fight. If the Head Hunter and bow are to become equal, he needs to create a distance where they cannot do anything.

Makung hides behind a large sign and aims his bow. The framework is the shape of a bow, but it is a monster with machinery attached to it.

There is a laser scope attached to it to improve accuracy and range. It is possible to control the distance with a switch, and it can be reduced to close-range when brought down to the minimum.

Arrows are flown like normal bows where the bowstring is pulled.

Machine bows have triggers like guns since they are Hybrid Demons. If the trigger is pressed while the bowstring is pulled, the power is multiplied.



The bowstring can also be controlled freely, so there are a lot of uses for it. The Hybrid Demon is a C class weapon worth 2.5 million points.

Hybrid. A cross, mixed. It is a lethal weapon that preserves 100% of a bow's functions and mixes in some functions of a gun. It is 6 times the price of the Head Hunter, worth 400,000 points.

It is much better than a D class weapon, but it is mid-level among C class. Park Jin Hyuk could also buy a weapon worth millions of points if he wanted to.

He is just saving up for what he really wants because it is more than 9 million. In this state, it is better to get a really great weapon in one go.

But if he had known this were to happen, he would have just bought something else.

“What an obvious scheme.”

Park Jin Hyuk focused on narrowing the distance rather than on engagement. Makung realized what he is trying to do. He intends to go into combat since he is at a disadvantage when at mid-range.

He understands. The match is not ending through sniping. It is nothing more than attrition warfare.

If they had been common soldiers instead of sniping Lifers, they would have hidden themselves and not moved from their positions.

The fight between Lifers is different. Furthermore, it is stupid for people with battlesuits to hide in one place. They are super people who can avoid bullets.

Unless they come out with cover, they just waste time.

If they want to reach a conclusion, they need to go within a detection radius. Both of their radii are on the fringe of 100m. At this point, the moment either of them makes a mistake is the moment of death.

“Will he be able to come?”

He could create as much distance as Park Jin Hyuk comes forward, but he does not do it. It is out of pride. He has the confidence to block the enemy's advance just by checking on him.

Makung strokes the Hybrid Demon. Its convenience cannot be explained in words. Who said that a bow is not as good as a gun?

The surroundings are visible because vision is open even while looking in the scope. It is easy to carry and possible to take sniping and shooting stances in any situation.

With sniper rifles on the other hand, vision is blocked once the

eye is on the scope, and only the target is visible. It is good for focusing, but it is lacking in corresponding responses.

Unless it is a machine gun, the accuracy is off if attempted to be shot by eye like a bow. This is where the bow is advantageous in mid to close ranges.

Their current distance is 200 to 250 meters. It is the optimal distance for Makung.

Park Jin Hyuk looks toward the sign. Makung is aiming at the hiding place. If Park Jin Hyuk shows himself, he will shoot his arrow. Park Jin Hyuk needs to get moving, but it is not easy.

“Fine. Whether I cook or boil them, I’ll cover for the points somehow.”

It is too late to approach him in normal ways now. He handed over the initiative for the fighting spirit, so offense and defense have been decided. If he wants to change the flow, he needs momentum.

Bang bang!

Park Jin Hyuk takes a deep breath and runs. An arrow embeds the place he passes.

He changed his route. He leapt up with strength and broke through the building glass to go inside. Hundreds of points are

deducted. He has disappeared from the enemy's sight.

‘Over there.’

He goes through 3 buildings and covers 200 meters. The next is a skyscraper with a sign on it. A Lifer holding a bow is looking down.

“Does he have an excess of points?”

Makung is mumbling in surprise. He must have lost 100,000 points with what he is doing. It seems he has chosen an extreme method because his path was blocked.

Park Jin Hyuk runs along the wall of a skyscraper as though running on flat land. A crack forms with every step he takes and the glass breaks.

Ping ping ping!

Makung shoots arrows down. Park Jin Hyuk runs in a zig zag, strengthens the outer shell of the battlesuit, and blocks arrows with his Head Hunter.

‘Why are there so many arrows!’

He is barely reacting even with the battlesuit. It is concentration on concentration. The outer shell is going to be destroyed if he lets a single one through. He needs to avoid them as much as he can.

“I finally caught you!”

“You’re seriously mistaken.”

Caught? He let him catch him. He could create distance if he wants to. He did not because of his pride and something else.

There is no change in his attack power regardless of the distance.

If the opponent is strong, he will catch him and kill him even if the distance is widened. If the opponent is weak, he is just midday prey. Only those inferior focus on the little things.

As soon as Park Jin Hyuk settled on the roof, he went for Makung’s legs. There is wind pressure. It is going for the legs in words, but it is really a low kick meant to destroy his shins.

Makung lifted his leg and stepped over it. Then, he used Park Jin Hyuk’s rebound to rotate his body and give a strong high kick.

Bang!

“You’re pretty good.”

“Bullshit.”

Park Jin Hyuk clenches his jaw. He wants to destroy Makung's mouth. If he could use the booster as Cha Jun Sung does, Makung would not be able to say such things.

He tried to learn, but he cannot control it once the booster releases power. He falls when he tries to kick and flies forward when he tries to punch.

Tang tang tang!

He rampaged the front with the Head Hunter. It is such a close range that one would be hit if standing in the direction of the muzzle. Makung is moving conversely to the muzzle.

The movement of his body is incredibly fast as an archer should be. His step is as light as a feather.

Makung turns a ring on the bow and scratches Park Jin Hyuk's neck with the string. It is a weapon that can even cut through stone because it was smelted with special alloys.

Park Jin Hyuk went back half a step. The outer shell is cut and a faint line is engraved on his neck. It would have been dangerous if it had been just a few centimeters deeper.

“A knife!”

“It's better than a knife with its cutting force.”

Bang bang bang!

It is truly a splendid combat. Park Jin Hyuk never formally learned martial arts, but an instinct for fighting mutants is awakened in him.

He is not used to fighting Lifers, but he definitely has the basics down.

“Tricky.”

He always feels it, but it is laborious to fight someone with a battlesuit. There is no way to quickly overpower them if they know how to use even half of the functions.

Moderate attacks are detected by sensors. Because of that, they are able to avoid or block. There needs to be an accumulation of damages or one big hit.

Bang bang!

A smoke arrow explodes and smoke covers the roof. Park Jin Hyuk activated his senses. He does not need to be able to see with his eyes. They are super human.

There is a flood of attacks from several directions, but he took care of each one without falling to the surprise. After a few

minutes, the smoke melted away.

“Is it because you’re Overload’s party member even if you’re not a ranker?”

“Eavesdropping like a little rat.”

“At times like this, it’s called just listening.”

They can hear each formations conversations through the radio. They can identify the situation without having to ask. Overload is Empress of Light’s reinforcement.

‘He’s strong. Makung? There are 36 rankers like this including Jun Sung and Koharu?’

He thought that he would have the upper hand in a close encounter battle, but Makung brandishes the bow like a sword.

He put the Head Hunter forward whenever he could not avoid it, but a scar formed each time. If it does not recover adequately, he has a feeling it will be broken to pieces.

“Why are you fighting so vigorously? Is there a reason to overdo it? Even if you are reinforcing Empress of Light, you’re just getting involved in someone else’s affairs.”

There is not enough motivation. Unless oneself or the party that



one is in is in danger, it is a loss to risk their lives. At least, that is how Makung thinks.

“You don’t need to know that.”

“Is that so?”

If there needs to be a reason, shall he say that he does not like the flow or atmosphere of Makung and the murderers? He is understanding with his heart rather than his head.

“Let’s end it. I need to help them over there.”

“Says who..... Ack!”

The Hybrid Demon has a cylinder as thick as an arm attached to a special part by the trigger, that does not block vision.

There are 10 spokes, each a half size larger than a chopstick, inside the cylinder. They are not shot with bowstrings, but with a special device that controls the shots.

It is so hidden that unless one read the Hybrid Demon manual or owns it, they would not know that it is there. Such a thing went off right from under his nose.

It happened in a moment. Park Jin Hyuk could not avoid it. A spoke went through the battlesuit. It did not go through

completely because of the reinforcement of the outer shell, but half of it is embedded.

“Ah!”

It is not over. An electric current of tens of thousands of volts went off in the part that it dug into, and paralyzed his whole body. If he had been the average person, he would have been electrocuted.

Makung pulled the bowstring all the way to the end and shot with the highest power of penetration.

An arrow goes through his shoulder. Park Jin Hyuk is embedded on the wall by the pushing force. His feet are off of the ground and he is hanging like a doll.

“I’m a murderer with more than 500,000 kills in the virtual version as PKs. Even if this is reality, that know-how is all here.”

Makung taps his head with his finger. Life Mission is a virtual game that left the keyboard behind and used EEGs. He had done PKs as though his life depended on it.

When Cha Jun Sung was Overload, he did not enjoy PKs but also killed 100,000 through similar contents of PVP and while taking care of all types of bastards.

It is the same for Koharu. In that sense, this is where Park Jin

Hyuk lacks experience as someone who only did Life Mission for a short amount of time. He has the talent, but he is still developing.

Park Jin Hyuk lifted his hand to pull the arrow out. His arm will not reach above his chest. The electric current continued and prevented normal recovery for his body.

“It’ll keep up for 2 minutes. I won’t give you pain.”

“You.....!”

A laser aims at Park Jin Hyuk’s head. He intends to get him with a single shot.

“That’s... funny. You think you’re the only one with a wild card?”

Tang tang tang!

He tried to hit him with the Head Hunter, but the shot did not even get Makung’s foot. A bullet flings out from between the two of them. His arm does not go up.

“What a pity.”

“It’s a trick.”

Bang!

Park Jin Hyuk pretended to shoot a bullet and set off an explosive bomb that had been loaded. Makung is startled and retreats. That is when he set it off again.

Bang bang bang!

Park Jin Hyuk had shot it to under his foot. It cannot move with magnetism, so he is going to find assistance in fire power. It is dangerous, but he has no choice.

The wall he is hanging on collapses and he falls to the bottom of the building.

-[Battlesuit breakage rate 35.5%. Falling. Lifer's current state is of paralysis following electric shock. Transforming to automatic pilot mode, activate booster.]

The booster turned on right before crashing and reduced the speed. If he had collided as is, he would have died. He still cannot move his body.

“Is it a grenade? I could take a real hit if I underestimate him.”

Makung looks down. It seems he is still paralyzed. All he needs to do is fire one shot. But everything needs to be done when the opportunity is there.

Pew pew pew pew!

Guns are firing from somewhere. Makung quickly ran away. Looking carefully, something appeared next to Park Jin Hyuk and is attacking him.

Cha Jun Sung had sent Hercules.

“Cyborg?”

He had heard that Overload has a toy. Makung aims his bow. At best, it is a high level. It can be finished with a few shots.

-[Makung, we're retreating.]

-[What? I've got him. I'll kill him right away and go help you.]

-[No, it's just a retreat. The situation isn't feasible. We'll explain later.]

A radio came in from Dark Side. The murderers seem to be disorderly, but they follow the rules that they have set well. Rashness is unnecessary.

“You're lucky.”

Makung retreated. Hercules identified the enemy disappear, took Park Jin Hyuk, and went back to Cha Jun Sung. There was no order to pursue.

# Chapter 121

---

The battlefield is cleared. Getting to the conclusion first, 39 people were arrested off a roll call. The remaining people can find out where they were taken through their helpers.

They will be released if they pay the points on their behalf.

The police must not care about the Lifers' battle, because they disappeared after saying what they needed to. If they want to continue fighting, they could.

This is when Bolton interfered. He had gotten caught up in the moment and fought, but regained his senses when the battle had been intercepted. Violet was still in a craze.

‘Miss..... There is too much damage on the clan. If we can stop, we need to do it now. At this rate, we don't gain anything even if we win.’

Violet raised her voice, saying that she will kill them to get revenge. She is so angry that her eyes are bloodshot.

From a 3rd party perspective, Cha Jun Sung thinks that Bolton is right. Their power is similar. According to the flow now, the best it could be is a static struggle. There is no winner and loser.

On top of that, he did send Hercules but he is worried about Park Jin Hyuk.

Fortunately, Dark Side did not seem to want to fight anymore either. Why would he not? The situation was twisted and has come to this.

More than 10 million points must have been deducted from both sides. Cha Jun Sung alone lost 300,000 and Violet lost over 60,000.

It is said that people grow with mistakes and failures. All they did was create a mess, but they really learned something.

When Violet would not listen to Bolton, Cha Jun Sung got involved to convince her.

The atmosphere is already broken. Florence clan Lifers also looked like they wanted to stop. Continuing when it is difficult for them to handle it is grounds for losing chief status.

‘You guys..... I’ll rip you to pieces. I’m going to kill all of you one day.’

It is the warning that Violet left with Dark Side as he retreated. They did not even pay attention to her. They have heard such words thousands of times.

32 people died and 15 were arrested. Cha Jun Sung looked at the Lifers taking care of the corpses and thought, ‘Are lives so trivial?’



It is a big deal if a person dies in real life, but it is a simple matter in this place.

Once the battle is over, the busiest person is Kyoko. She ran around to treat the wounded.

There is a shortage of medics, so some of the injured went back to the briefing room.

As time passed, Violet stabilized as well. She exchanged simple courtesies with Cha Jun Sung with tears in her eyes and went back to reality.

It could be seen as rude, but it is totally understandable. She must be conflicted. Cha Jun Sung is not narrow-minded.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung turned his head at a heavy footstep. Park Jin Hyuk was returning in Hercules' arms with an arrow in his shoulder.

“Sorry. I lost.”

“You did well.”

Cha Jun Sung comforted him. He had done his best. It is an impressive feat that he fought one-on-one against Makung and came back alive.

“It hurts. Be gentle.”

“..... You shouldn’t get hurt if it hurts. Bear with it for a bit.”

Kyoko is treating Park Jin Hyuk. She cut his skin and took out the spoke. He cannot move his body because the effects of the electric shock are lingering.

“Next time.....”

Park Jin Hyuk looks at the arrow and clenches his fists. No one likes to lose. He pledged to win if they meet again.

Bolton walked toward Cha Jun Sung. Since Violet went back, he is going to express his gratefulness on behalf of the clan.

“You have helped us twice including last time..... Thank you.”

“It’s nothing.”

Cha Jun Sung waves his hand. They help where they can. Even if it had not been Violet, they are bound to fight if they are in the same place as the murderers.

“I hope you’ll understand Miss Violet’s behavior. Her feelings will be inexpressible.”

Is it guilt? It is true that the murderers started the fight, but it is because Violet killed people from their group.

She could not have imagined that killing those 2 murderers would result in the deaths of more people in her clan. How could they express how she is feeling right now?

His conversation with Bolton was short. Thank you for helping. Violet will be in touch soon. Everything was over after such formal talks.

\*\*\*

Violet called a few days after the battle. She had calmed down during that time and had returned to normal.

He could not tell if she was fine or if she was pretending to be, but it will probably be the latter. She sincerely apologized for returning like that.

Cha Jun Sung did not really need an apology but they need to resolve things clearly, so he willingly accepted her apology.

Violet used her own points to release the Lifers taken by the police. A couple tens of thousands had gone up in smoke, but she did not care.

Including the points lost during battle, it reached almost 1 million. The clan suggested distributing the points, but she rejected it.

She must handle it herself to be at peace of mind. That is that, and Cha Jun Sung has a couple things to ask her.

“You said that you won’t fight?”

“Yes.”

Violet cancelled the battle that she had put forth as a condition for joining the party.

She has received all types of favors, but is pulling out now? Honestly, Cha Jun Sung was iffy about fighting for real but he did want to try fighting in the virtual.

It would be fun. But it is true that he is at a loss because she is refusing.

It is a pity, but he decided to just go past it. They can try later when they become friendlier and there will be a lot of opportunities. It is not urgent right now.

“If I join your party, will you take care of my family as well?”

“Are you talking about a bus?”

“Similar.”

Take care of them? He could. But Cha Jun Sung is against entering a level C mission with them. Level C is where Lifers' abilities start to become fixed.

The contribution system is applied in level C advancement. If they fall short of this, they cannot go right over to level B. The time is coming for them to advance with their own strengths.

Everyone worked hard together but only some people go over to level B and the rest need to stay in level C?

It definitely will be helpful if he goes in with Florence clan Lifers. However, it is a difficult mission with active level 5 and 6 mutants.

There are as many sacrifices they need to make as there is help. In that case, it is better to let them grow in a place that is a better fit for them than to drag them in.

At times, small groups are at an advantage over big groups. If it is Cha Jun Sung's party and Violet, they could control themselves.

“Don’t take this the wrong way and hear me out. It does not help Lifers who are below level C to enter the mission. It is telling them to die.”

It is better to purchase a battlesuit in level D than to be carried along by others.

This is certainly the case for rankers, but the higher level groups under them are in the process of completing their points. It is proof that time is fair to everyone.

Within 1 month, the number of Lifers with battlesuits will increase exponentially. Average Lifers will gain the qualification to make an attempt at level C missions as well.

“Foster self-reliance?”

“Do you understand?”

“Roughly. If I join the party, what are you going to do after?”

Beep beep.

Cha Jun Sung chose a mission from the PDA and sent it to Violet.

He is sharing information. Violet accepted the information. The mission description comes up on her PDA. Why is he showing her this?

“If you accept, we could go right away.”

“Th-this?”

[C Mission: Closed Area] [Goal: Attainment] [Description: Dilapidated, a forgotten land, a place used to isolate the infected has become a habitat. The angry insulators resented the world that abandoned them, making them become monsters. Among them, truculent ones were born. Bring the truculent beings ruling Closed Area.] [Reward: 600,000 points. Lucky box.]

It is the Caicus mission. The mission is the same as it was for the tutorial. Other than the fact that the description has become more detailed, nothing is very different.

Truculent being. It is a one hit mission where they just have to take care of the Caicus. Escape missions are rare starting with level C. They are annihilation or attainment.

D and E are just warm ups and C is when the real missions start. It is the moment when bases are grasped. They are to focus on hunting.

They did not have to hunt in escape missions because all they needed to do was run away.

Cha Jun Sung intends to avoid annihilation from now on. There are more points with the number of mutants they catch, but those missions take a long time because they need to catch all of them.

He will focus on going through missions like this one where they just need to attain a specific goal for it to be over. It is fitting for a small group.

“600,000.....”

Violet fades off. She had been alone, but she almost died in a 200,000 point mission. 600,000 is 3 times that. If the clan finds out, they will oppose it because it is dangerous.

“I know about that mission. I know what the truculent being is too.”

“How do you know that?”

He does not need to cite the notepad. He had experienced the tutorial mission for himself. He witnessed the Caicus and he remembers the terrain and atmosphere.

“My tutorial was there. I received 5,000 points because I completed a special mission there. That became the foothold for my growth.”



The Caicus in Closed Area is a masculine adult that is 10m tall. It is strong but it is on the average side in size for its kind.

“Um.....”

Violet is in contemplation. This party has 2 rankers and an outstanding sniper. If she joins, there are 4 combat personnel.

Kyoko will not directly get involved in battle because she is a medic, but they could easily take on a Caicus with their strength.

A level 6 might be too much but she feels that they could even take on 2 top level 5s. That is on the premise that its underlings do not come out.

‘Twin giants.’

Cha Jun Sung repeated this. The keyword for Closed Area is twin giants. It means that there are 2 Caicuses and he had seen one of them.

Since they are not the top of their species, the party can hunt them with their strength. In case of an emergency, Kyoko and Hercules can fight too. They can do a lot if their strengths are combined.

“Level B. I’m going to advance in the shortest time possible and go over to level B.”

“Level B?”

Though indirectly, he has experienced a 1.8 million point mission. In comparison, he can estimate that it is roughly the difficulty of level C.

If he purchases weapons and support gear, he can develop faster than expected.

It is different by level, but the important thing is whether or not a Lifer can face the strongest mutant in a given mission.

All of the hardships and adversities they go through are in vain if they collapse in the end.

If they want to make an attempt at a level C advance mission at 2 million points, each person needs to own a battlesuit and must have gone through the preparations for a level 6.

‘Remodeling is urgently needed.’

He needs to remodel his battlesuit. In Cha Jun Sung’s case, he can lift the over booster. The problem is that he cannot remodel in a level C store.

It is 100% level B. He thought up to here as well. If he cannot do it with quality, he will push through with quantity. With normal

Lifers? Of course not; with rankers.

He will get a hand from Lim Si Hyun and Han Chang Jin and exchange with additional rankers.

He can run into them because Mechanic City is open. They need to know how to help each other if they all want to grow. Later on, they will have to join forces even if they do not want to.

Thinking generously, 15 rankers with battlesuits should be enough. If they cannot remodel either, they will know that they need to push through with numbers.

“You said that this mission is possible right away if I accept?”

“Excuse me? Yes. We need a bit of preparation, but we could go tomorrow latest.”

“Let’s go.”

“Great.”

Violet accepted. She does not hesitate. She had been waiting and was all prepared. All she has to do is move them into actions.

# Chapter 122

---

“Interesting. You attacked Empress of Light but Overload and Amhu showed up? Ha ha!”

Blood King laughs joyfully at Dark Side’s words. How had they already met when it has not been long since Mechanic City was opened?

At this rate, all 36 rankers will meet somehow. A thrill, different from what he feels in missions, goes throughout his body.

Blood King is certain that after a few months here, there will be opposing forces over the land in Mechanic City.

Since there are no restrictions on real estate trading, doesn’t it mean that people with more points are at an advantage? Someone could even surpass an area and own a zone.

It is unlikely, but people are mysterious and can make the impossible happen. If it is difficult, they can do it with unions.

“There’s something I want to do more than missions now.”

“Is it acquiring land?”

Dark Side finished his thought. Acquiring land? That is right but his hidden intentions were not that simple. The scale is large.

He can see a bloody war before them in order to get that land.

“Buy the zone and area we’re in now. Kill anyone who tries to settle in the vicinity. Add incoming guild members here too.”

There are 7 rankers who gathered under the purpose of Blood Kingdom and they need to find more, but they cannot get in contact. They are sure to meet while they are here.

“We will do it in our way.”

Everyone agrees with what Blood King says. They are not bad.

It is just that the way they go through Life Mission is different. Ultimately, their final goal is to advance all the way to level S by acting as their helpers’ puppets.

Bugs cry. It is a ringing that they have heard hundreds of times.

Cha Jun Sung and his party members react to this sound that they always heard when taking walks through parks or wherever there is lush grass.

“It’s different.”

“Since even normal and common things are different by what they are applied to.”

If they think about it, it is nothing. But it cannot be easy to hear such sounds of nature in a world that has been infected by the virus.

Cha Jun Sung is in a forest. It is not thick enough to think of it as being dense.

There are tall trees and grass here and there, but it was not hard to get a view and with that view, they can see Closed Area.

He remembers what Odin said during the tutorial. The building where Cha Jun Sung is and the landscape he could see from the building is just the tip of the iceberg.

Hundreds of buildings forms 1 area, and there are dozens more of those.

The front of Closed Area is surrounded in mountains. The environment is one thing but when considering their habits, they will have a hard time finding the party where they are now.

“The Caicus has a lot of eyes, so it’s sensitive to sight. So it likes stuffy rooms. It will usually dig in mountains or the ground to make a habitat.”

It is second nature. They sense living creatures’ breathing that they see with their eyes but it is just a standard for determining their prey, and the way that they think is not very different from

humans.

With dozens of eyes, it is easy to get tired. Because of this, they rest in a place without anything to worry about as long as they do not need to be out.

It must be this quiet because they are hidden somewhere.

Cha Jun Sung climbs a mountain. There is no path. Wherever he decides to walk is the path. He means to search the mountain first because it will be easier to move around in than the city.

Analyzing the party's power against Closed Area's difficulty, it is a level that they can handle. They will be able to complete the mission even if they come face-to-face.

Then, they cannot go around searching recklessly. No matter how easy it is from analysis, it is still a level C. They need to learn about the atmosphere to some extent.

“This is the first real time, but his methods are similar to yours.”

Violet was bored and spoke. She had no time to observe Cha Jun Sung before because though he had saved her life, she had joined when the dominated land was a mess.

Seeing him for the first time, he is the cautious type like Bolton.

Bolton is very careful. Whether it is due to his personality or because he places weight on life, he is always the same even if the force that she is in enters a level D mission.

He would proceed methodically and then release the force once he thought, 'This is enough.' The opposite from Violet.

She is cautious as well. It is just that she pushes forward if it is obvious that they have an advantage in power. She appropriately controls strength.

“Are you talking about Bolton?”

“You remembered his name?”

“It’s not hard to remember. All you have to do is pay attention a bit.”

Not everyone can work in the same way. Some people are like this and some people are like that. Each Lifer has his or her own method of attack.

Violet pointedly expressed the allies supporting her. It must be a compliment because it will not be a generalized insult.

“There’s nothing in particular.”

“Nothing gets caught on the scan either.”



“You’re not thinking of searching through the whole mountain, are you? That would easily take a few days.”

It would be a few days because of the battlesuits’ field scans. If they had come without them, it would take a couple months, though they would have done something by then.

They were not very productive with their sight after wandering for several hours. This side is trees and there are mountains over there. They do not see any mutants either.

“Stay here. I’ll try going up there.”

“We’ll be waiting.”

Cha Jun Sung activated the booster. In the direction he is looking is a tower so tall that they need to bend their heads all the way back to see it from a mountain.

There are limits to field scans. If he goes up and looks around, he will be able to get an approximate idea of Closed Area’s layout.

“The drivers are impressive. How do they come up this high?”

About 150 to 160 meters? Cha Jun Sung was fortunately able to use the battlesuit to fly up but if he had not had it, he would have had to come up using a ladder.

Elevator? There isn't one. The safety devices are insufficient too. Do they need to die? The building can be covered with just one finger. It is an optical illusion caused by distance.

The top of the tower. There is enough space for one or two people at most to sit. He recorded the panorama here as a hologram.

Pat pat pat!

“It's a mutant.”

Dark figures go in and out of the building. There are level 1 and 2. He did not care about them. He is not here to catch them and he has no plan to.

He used to catch them as he saw them for the sake of points, but he considers efficiency now. It is better to take care of the big one and try again after.

“Have they cleaned up the area? How is it that there's only prey here?”

The mutants Cha Jun Sung had fought until now had mostly been homogeneous.

From adultoids to imagos, they were the same species with different stages of development, allowing them to live in

coexistence.

If they are ambiguous, they need to struggle to survive under strong mutants.

But the Caicus is a top level mutant that live in family units, and their population is not that large considering other level 5s.

Unless there is a predator that they cannot handle, they specify the area as their territory and capture and eat the mutants that may pose danger to them first.

Removing competitors and hunting prey – they are granted these 2 of significance.

The Caicus boasts a body like steel and superhuman strength. It would be comfortable if they could control level 3 and 4s, but they are far from mind control.

Since they cannot control them, it puts them at ease to kill any potential threats.

If the area has been organized as expected, there is no reason for there to be other mutants for them to be aware of. They would all have died.

“If that’s the situation.....”

Cha Jun Sung goes back to his party members. Humans and mutants both do not like invasion of privacy. He cannot find them? He needs to make it so they come looking for him.

Just like the last time as that drunkard had done without realizing he would die.

“You’re here?”

“Yeah. I think they’ve cleaned up the area.”

“What’s that?”

Koharu explained on Cha Jun Sung’s behalf. She was bored too.

“It’s characteristic for mutants who like living exclusively in small numbers. Since they’re strong, they don’t leave risks in their area. I don’t know their standards, but a level 3 or 4 like the Caicus would have gotten rid of 100% of level 4s.”

Koharu summarized concisely and it is all information that Violet and Kyoko already know.

Park Jin Hyuk lacks this kind of knowledge. The time he has played Life Mission is very short. He was busy trying to figure out what everything is now.